Typee:
A Romance of the South Seas

by
Herman Melville
MORE than three years have elapsed since the occurrence of the events recorded in this volume. The interval, with the exception of the last few months, has been chiefly spent by the author tossing about on the wide ocean. Sailors are the only class of men who now-a-days see anything like stirring adventure; and many things which to fire-side people appear strange and romantic, to them seem as common-place as a jacket out at elbows. Yet, notwithstanding the familiarity of sailors with all sorts of curious adventure, the incidents recorded in the following pages have often served, when ‘spun as a *yarn*,’ not only to relieve the weariness of many a night-watch at sea, but to excite the warmest sympathies of the author’s shipmates. He has been, therefore, led to think that his story could scarcely fail to interest those who are less familiar than the sailor with a life of adventure.

In his account of the singular and interesting people among whom he was thrown, it will be observed that he chiefly treats of their more obvious peculiarities; and, in describing their customs, refrains in most cases from entering into explanations concerning their origin and purposes. As writers of travels among barbarous communities are generally very diffuse on these subjects, he deems it right to advert to what may be considered a culpable omission. No one can be more sensible than the author of his deficiencies in this and many other respects; but when the very peculiar circumstances in which he was placed are understood, he feels assured that all these omissions will be excused.

In very many published narratives no little degree of attention is bestowed upon dates; but as the author lost all knowledge of the days of the week, during the occurrence of the scenes herein related, he hopes that the reader will charitably pass over his shortcomings in this particular.

In the Polynesian words used in this volume,—except in those cases where the spelling has been previously determined by others,—that form of orthography has been employed, which might be supposed most easily to convey their sound to a stranger. In several works descriptive of the islands in the Pacific, many of the most beautiful combinations of vocal sounds have been altogether lost to the ear of the reader by an over-attention to the ordinary rules of spelling.

There are a few passages in the ensuing chapters which may be thought to bear rather hard upon a reverend order of men, the account of whose proceedings in different quarters of the globe—transmitted to us through their own hands—very generally, and often very deservedly, receives high commendation. Such passages will be found, however, to be based upon facts admitting of no contradiction, and which have come immediately under the writer’s cognizance. The conclusions deduced from these facts are unavoidable, and in stating them the author has been influenced by no feeling of animosity, either to the individuals themselves, or to that glorious cause which has not always been served by the proceedings of some of its advocates.

The great interest with which the important events lately occurring at the Sandwich, Marquesas, and Society Islands, have been regarded in America and England, and indeed throughout the world, will, he trusts, justify a few otherwise unwarrantable digressions.

There are some things related in the narrative which will be
INTRODUCTION TO THE EDITION OF 1892.

BY ARTHUR STEDMAN.

OF the trinity of American authors whose births made the year 1819 a notable one in our literary history,—Lowell, Whitman, and Melville,—it is interesting to observe that the two latter were both descended, on the fathers’ and mothers’ sides respectively, from have families of British New England and Dutch New York extraction. Whitman and Van Velsor, Melville and Gansevoort, were the several combinations which produced these men; and it is easy to trace in the life and character of each author the qualities derived from his joint ancestry. Here, however, the resemblance ceases, for Whitman’s forebears, while worthy country people of good descent, were not prominent in public or private life. Melville, on the other hand, was of distinctly patrician birth, his paternal and maternal grandfathers having been leading characters in the Revolutionary War; their descendants still maintaining a dignified social position.

Allan Melville, great-grandfather of Herman Melville, removed from Scotland to America in 1748, and established himself as a merchant in Boston. His son, Major Thomas Melville, was a leader in the famous ‘Boston Tea Party’ of 1773 and afterwards became an officer in the Continental Army. He is reported to have been a Conservative in all matters except his opposition to unjust taxation, and he wore the old-fashioned cocked hat and knee-breeches until his death, in 1832, thus becoming the original of Doctor Holmes’s poem, ‘The Last Leaf’. Major Melville’s son Allan, the father of Herman, was an importing merchant,—first in Boston, and later in New York. He was a man of much culture, and was an extensive traveller for his time. He married Maria Gansevoort, daughter of General Peter Gansevoort, best known as ‘the hero of Fort Stanwix.’ This fort was situated on the present site of Rome, N.Y.; and there Gansevoort, with a small body of men, held in check reinforcements on their way to join Burgoyne, until the disastrous ending of the latter’s campaign of 1777 was insured. The Gansevoorts, it should be said, were at that time and subsequently residents of Albany, N.Y.

Herman Melville was born in New York on August 1, 1819, and received his early education in that city. There he imbibed his first love of adventure, listening, as he says in ‘Redburn,’ while his father ‘of winter evenings, by the well-remembered sea-coal fire in old Greenwich Street, used to tell my brother and me of the monstrous waves at sea, mountain high, of the masts bending like twigs, and all about Havre and Liverpool.’ The death of his father in reduced circumstances necessitated the removal of his mother and the family of eight brothers and sisters to the village of Lansingburg, on the Hudson River. There Herman remained until 1835, when he attended the Albany Classical School for some months. Dr. Charles E. West, the well-known Brooklyn educator, was then in charge of the school, and remembers the lad’s deftness in English composition, and his struggles with mathematics.

The following year was passed at Pittsfield, Mass., where he engaged in work on his uncle’s farm, long known as the ‘Van Schaack place.’ This uncle was Thomas Melville, president of the Berkshire Agricultural Society, and a successful gentleman farmer.

Herman’s roving disposition, and a desire to support him-

**imi**be v.tr. 1 (also absol.) drink (esp. alcoholic liquor). 2 a absorb or assimilate (ideas etc.). b absorb (moisture etc.). 3 inhale (air etc.).
self independently of family assistance, soon led him to ship as cabin boy in a New York vessel bound for Liverpool. He made the voyage, visited London, and returned in the same ship. ‘Redburn: His First Voyage,’ published in 1849, is partly founded on the experiences of this trip, which was undertaken with the full consent of his relatives, and which seems to have satisfied his nautical ambition for a time. As told in the book, Melville met with more than the usual hardships of a sailor-boy’s first venture. It does not seem difficult in ‘Redburn’ to separate the author’s actual experiences from those invented by him, this being the case in some of his other writings.

A good part of the succeeding three years, from 1837 to 1840, was occupied with school-teaching. While so engaged at Greenbush, now East Albany, N.Y., he received the munificent salary of ‘six dollars a quarter and board.’ He taught for one term at Pittsfield, Mass., ‘boarding around’ with the families of his pupils, in true American fashion, and easily suppressing, on one memorable occasion, the efforts of his larger scholars to inaugurate a rebellion by physical force.

I fancy that it was the reading of Richard Henry Dana’s ‘Two Years Before the Mast’ which revived the spirit of adventure in Melville’s breast. That book was published in 1840, and was at once talked of everywhere. Melville must have read it at the time, mindful of his own experience as a sailor. At any rate, he once more signed a ship’s articles, and on January 1, 1841, sailed from New Bedford harbour in the whaler Acushnet, bound for the Pacific Ocean and the sperm fishery. He has left very little direct information as to the events of this eighteen months’ cruise, although his whaling romance, ‘Moby Dick; or, the Whale,’ probably gives many pictures of life on board the Acushnet. In the present volume he confines himself to a general account of the captain’s bad treatment of the crew, and of his non-fulfilment of agreements. Under these considerations, Melville decided to abandon the vessel on reaching the Marquesas Islands; and the narrative of ‘Typee’ begins at this point. However, he always recognised the immense influence the voyage had had upon his career, and in regard to its results has said in ‘Moby Dick,’—

‘If I shall ever deserve any real repute in that small but high hushed world which I might not be unreasonably ambitious of; if hereafter I shall do anything that on the whole a man might rather have done than to have left undone . . . .then here I prospectively ascribe all the honour and the glory to whaling; for a whale-ship was my Yale College and my Harvard.’

The record, then, of Melville’s escape from the Dolly, otherwise the Acushnet, the sojourn of his companion Toby and himself in the Typee Valley on the island of Nukuheva, Toby’s mysterious disappearance, and Melville’s own escape, is fully given in the succeeding pages; and rash indeed would he be who would enter into a descriptive contest with these inimitable pictures of aboriginal life in the ‘Happy Valley.’ So great an interest has always centred in the character of Toby, whose actual existence has been questioned, that I am glad to be able to declare him an authentic personage, by name Richard T. Greene. He was enabled to discover himself again to Mr. Melville through the publication of the present volume, and their acquaintance was renewed, lasting for quite a long period. I have seen his portrait,—a rare old daguerreotype,—and some of his letters to our author. One of his children was named for the latter, but Mr. Melville lost trace of him in recent years.

With the author’s rescue from what Dr. T. M. Coan has styled his ‘anxious paradise,’ ‘Typee’ ends, and its sequel, ‘Omoo,’ begins. Here, again, it seems wisest to leave the remaining adventures in the South Seas to the reader’s own discovery, simply sta-
ing that, after a sojourn at the Society Islands, Melville shipped for Honolulu. There he remained for four months, employed as a clerk. He joined the crew of the American frigate United States, which reached Boston, stopping on the way at one of the Peruvian ports, in October of 1844. Once more was a narrative of his experiences to be preserved in ‘White Jacket; or, the World in a Man-o’-War.’ Thus, of Melville’s four most important books, three, ‘Typee,’ ‘Omoo,’ and ‘White-Jacket,’ are directly autobiographical, and ‘Moby Dick’ is partially so; while the less important ‘Redburn’ is between the two classes in this respect. Melville’s other prose works, as will be shown, were, with some exceptions, unsuccessful efforts at creative romance.

Whether our author entered on his whaling adventures in the South Seas with a determination to make them available for literary purposes, may never be certainly known. There was no such elaborate announcement or advance preparation as in some later cases. I am inclined to believe that the literary prospect was an after-thought, and that this insured a freshness and enthusiasm of style not otherwise to be attained. Returning to his mother’s home at Lansingburg, Melville soon began the writing of ‘Typee,’ which was completed by the autumn of 1845. Shortly after this his older brother, Gansevoort Melville, sailed for England as secretary of legation to Ambassador McLane, and the manuscript was intrusted to Gansevoort for submission to John Murray. Its immediate acceptance and publication followed in 1846. ‘Typee’ was dedicated to Chief Justice Lemuel Shaw of Massachusetts, an old friendship between the author’s family and that of Justice Shaw having been renewed about this time. Mr. Melville became engaged to Miss Eliza-

The wanderings of our nautical Othello were thus brought to a conclusion. Mr. and Mrs. Melville resided in New York City until 1850, when they purchased a farmhouse at Pittsfield, their farm adjoining that formerly owned by Mr. Melville’s uncle, which had been inherited by the latter’s son. The new place was named ‘Arrow Head,’ from the numerous Indian antiquities found in the neighbourhood. The house was so situated as to command an uninterupted view of Greylock Mountain and the adjacent hills. Here Melville remained for thirteen years, occupied with his writing, and managing his farm. An article in Putnam’s Monthly entitled ‘I and My Chimney,’ another called ‘October Mountain,’ and the introduction to the ‘Piazza Tales,’ present faithful pictures of Arrow Head and its surroundings. In a letter to Nathaniel Hawthorne, given in ‘Nathaniel Hawthorne and His Wife,’ his daily life is set forth. The letter is dated June 1, 1851.

‘Since you have been here I have been building some shanties of houses (connected with the old one), and likewise some shanties of chapters and essays. I have been ploughing and sowing and raising and printing and praying, and now begin to come out upon a less bristling time, and to enjoy the calm prospect of things from a fair piazza at the north of the old farmhouse here. Not entirely yet, though, am I without something to be urgent with. The ‘Whale’ is only half through the press; for, wearied with the long delays of the printers, and disgusted with the heat and dust of the Babylonish brick-kiln of New York, I came back to the country to feel the grass, and end the book reclining on it, if I may.’

Mr. Hawthorne, who was then living in the red cottage at Lenox, had a week at Arrow Head with his daughter Una the previous spring. It is recorded that the friends ‘spent most of the time in the barn, bathing in the early spring sunshine, which streamed through the open doors, and talking philosophy.’ According to Mr. J. E. A. Smith’s volume on the Berkshire Hills, these gentlemen, both reserved in nature, though near neighbours and often in the
same company, were inclined to be shy of each other, partly, perhaps, through the knowledge that Melville had written a very appreciative review of ‘Mosses from an Old Manse’ for the New York Literary World, edited by their mutual friends, the Duyckincks. ‘But one day,’ writes Mr. Smith, ‘it chanced that when they were out on a picnic excursion, the two were compelled by a thundershower to take shelter in a narrow recess of the rocks of Monument Mountain. Two hours of this enforced intercourse settled the matter. They learned so much of each other’s character, . . . that the most intimate friendship for the future was inevitable.’ A passage in Hawthorne’s ‘Wonder Book’ is noteworthy as describing the number of literary neighbours in Berkshire:

‘For my part, I wish I had Pegasus here at this moment,’ said the student. ‘I would mount him forthwith, and gallop about the country within a circumference of a few miles, making literary calls on my brother authors. Dr. Dewey would be within ray reach, at the foot of the Taconic. In Stockbridge, yonder, is Mr. James [G. P. R. James], conspicuous to all the world on his mountain-pile of history and romance. Longfellow, I believe, is not yet at the Oxbow, else the winged horse would neigh at him. But here in Lenox I should find our most truthful novelist [Miss Sedgwick], who has made the scenery and life of Berkshire all her own. On the hither side of Pittsfield sits Herman Melville, shaping out the gigantic conception of his ‘White Whale,’ while the gigantic shadow of Greylock looms upon him from his study window. Another bound of my flying steed would bring me to the door of Holmes, whom I mention last, because Pegasus would certainly unseat me the next minute, and claim the poet as his rider.’

While at Pittsfield, Mr. Melville was induced to enter the lecture field. From 1857 to 1860 he filled many engagements in the lyceums, chiefly speaking of his adventures in the South Seas. He lectured in cities as widely apart as Montreal, Chicago, Baltimore, and San Francisco, sailing to the last-named place in 1860, by way of Cape Horn, on the Meteor, commanded, by his younger brother, Captain Thomas Melville, afterward governor of the ‘Sailor’s Snug Harbor’ at Staten Island, N.Y. Besides his voyage to San Francisco, he had, in 1849 and 1856, visited England, the Continent, and the Holy Land, partly to superintend the publication of English editions of his works, and partly for recreation.

A pronounced feature of Melville’s character was his unwillingness to speak of himself, his adventures, or his writings in conversation. He was, however, able to overcome this reluctance on the lecture platform. Our author’s tendency to philosophical discussion is strikingly set forth in a letter from Dr. Titus Munson Coan to the latter’s mother, written while a student at Williams College over thirty years ago, and fortunately preserved by her. Dr. Coan enjoyed the friendship and confidence of Mr. Melville during most of his residence in New York. The letter reads:—

‘I have made my first literary pilgrimage, a call upon Herman Melville, the renowned author of ‘Typee,’ etc. He lives in a spacious farmhouse about two miles from Pittsfield, a weary walk through the dust. But it as well repaid. I introduced myself as a Hawaiian-American, and soon found myself in full tide of talk, or rather of monologue. But he would not repeat the experiences of which I had been reading with rapture in his books. In vain I sought to hear of Typee and those paradise islands, but he preferred to pour forth his philosophy and his theories of life. The shade of Aristotle arose like a cold mist between myself and Fayaway. We have quite enough of deep philosophy at Williams College, and I confess I was disappointed in this trend of the talk. But what a talk it was! Melville is transformed from a Marquesan to a gypsy student, the gypsy element still remaining strong within him. And this contradiction gives him the air of one who has suffered from opposition, both literary and social. With his liberal views, he is apparently considered by the good people of Pittsfield as little better
than a cannibal or a ‘beach-comber.’ His attitude seemed to me something like that of Ishmael; but perhaps I judged hastily. I managed to draw him out very freely on everything but the Marquesas Islands, and when I left him he was in full tide of discourse on all things sacred and profane. But he seems to put away the objective side of his life, and to shut himself up in this cold north as a cloistered thinker.’

I have been told by Dr. Coan that his father, the Rev. Titus Coan, of the Hawaiian Islands, personally visited the Marquesas group, found the Typee Valley, and verified in all respects the statements made in ‘Typee.’ It is known that Mr. Melville from early manhood indulged deeply in philosophical studies, and his fondness for discussing such matters is pointed out by Hawthorne also, in the ‘English Note Books.’ This habit increased as he advanced in years, if possible.

The chief event of the residence in Pittsfield was the completion and publication of ‘Moby Dick; or, the Whale,’ in 1851. How many young men have been drawn to sea by this book is a question of interest. Meeting with Mr. Charles Henry Webb (‘John Paul’) the day after Mr. Melville’s death, I asked him if he were not familiar with that author’s writings. He replied that ‘Moby Dick’ was responsible for his three years of life before the mast when a lad, and added that while ‘gamming’ on board another vessel he had once fallen in with a member of the boat’s crew which rescued Melville from his friendly imprisonment among the Typees.

While at Pittsfield, besides his own family, Mr. Melville’s mother and sisters resided with him. As his four children grew up he found it necessary to obtain for them better facilities for study than the village school afforded; and so, several years after, the household was broken up, and he removed with his wife and children to the New York house that was afterwards his home. This house belonged to his brother Allan, and was exchanged for the estate at Pittsfield. In December, 1866, he was appointed by Mr. H. A. Smyth, a former travelling companion in Europe, a district officer in the New York Custom House. He held the position until 1886, preferring it to in-door clerical work, and then resigned, the duties becoming too arduous for his failing strength.

In addition to his philosophical studies, Mr. Melville was much interested in all matters relating to the fine arts, and devoted most of his leisure hours to the two subjects. A notable collection of etchings and engravings from the old masters was gradually made by him, those from Claude’s paintings being a specialty. After he retired from the Custom House, his tall, stalwart figure could be seen almost daily tramping through the Fort George district or Central Park, his roving inclination leading him to obtain as much out-door life as possible. His evenings were spent at home with his books, his pictures, and his family, and usually with them alone; for, in spite of the melodramatic declarations of various English gentlemen, Melville’s seclusion in his latter years, and in fact throughout his life, was a matter of personal choice. More and more, as he grew older, he avoided every action on his part, and on the part of his family, that might tend to keep his name and writings before the public. A few friends felt at liberty to visit the recluse, and were kindly welcomed, but he himself sought no one. His favorite companions were his grandchildren, with whom he delighted to pass his time, and his devoted wife, who was a constant assistant and adviser in his literary work, chiefly done at this period for his own amusement. To her he addressed his last little poem, the touching ‘Return of the Sire de Nesle.’ Various efforts were made by the New York literary colony to draw him from his retirement, but without success. It has been suggested that he might have accepted a magazine editorship, but this is doubtful, as he could not bear business details or routine work of any sort. His brother Allan was a New York lawyer, and until his death, in 1872, managed Melville’s affairs with ability, particularly the literary accounts.

During these later years he took great pleasure in a friendly
correspondence with Mr. W. Clark Russell. Mr. Russell had taken many occasions to mention Melville’s sea-tales, his interest in them, and his indebtedness to them. The latter felt impelled to write Mr. Russell in regard to one of his newly published novels, and received in answer the following letter: July 21, 1886.

MY DEAR Mr. MELVILLE, Your letter has given me a very great and singular pleasure. Your delightful books carry the imagination into a maritime period so remote that, often as you have been in my mind, I could never satisfy myself that you were still amongst the living. I am glad, indeed, to learn from Mr. Toft that you are still hale and hearty, and I do most heartily wish you many years yet of health and vigour.

Your books I have in the American edition. I have ‘Typee,’ ‘Omoo,’ ‘Redburn,’ and that noble piece ‘Moby Dick.’ These are all I have been able to obtain. There have been many editions of your works in this country, particularly the lovely South Sea sketches; but the editions are not equal to those of the American publishers. Your reputation here is very great. It is hard to meet a man whose opinion as a reader is worth leaving who does not speak of your works in such terms as he might hesitate to employ, with all his patriotism, toward many renowned English writers.

Dana is, indeed, great. There is nothing in literature more remarkable than the impression produced by Dana’s portraiture of the homely inner life of a little brig’s forecastle.

I beg that you will accept my thanks for the kindly spirit in which you have read my books. I wish it were in my power to cross the Atlantic, for you assuredly would be the first whom it would be my happiness to visit.

The condition of my right hand obliges me to dictate this to my son; but painful as it is to me to hold a pen, I cannot suffer this letter to reach the hands of a man of so admirable genius as Herman Melville without begging him to believe me to be, with my own hand, his most respectful and hearty admirer, W. Clark Russell.

It should be noted here that Melville’s increased reputation in England at the period of this letter was chiefly owing to a series of articles on his work written by Mr. Russell. I am sorry to say that few English papers made more than a passing reference to Melville’s death. The American press discussed his life and work in numerous and lengthy reviews. At the same time, there always has been a steady sale of his books in England, and some of them never have been out of print in that country since the publication of ‘Typee.’ One result of this friendship between the two authors was the dedication of new volumes to each other in highly complimentary terms—Mr. Melville’s ‘John Marr and Other Sailors,’ of which twenty-five copies only were printed, on the one hand, and Mr. Russell’s ‘An Ocean Tragedy,’ on the other, of which many thousand have been printed, not to mention unnumbered pirated copies.

Beside Hawthorne, Mr. Richard Henry Stoddard, of American writers, specially knew and appreciated Herman Melville. Mr. Stoddard was connected with the New York dock department at the time of Mr. Melville’s appointment to a custom-house position, and they at once became acquainted. For a good many years, during the period in which our author remained in seclusion, much that appeared in print in America concerning Melville came from the pen of Mr. Stoddard. Nevertheless, the sailor author’s presence in New York was well known to the literary guild. He was invited to join in all new movements, but as often felt obliged to excuse himself from doing so. The present writer lived for some time within a short distance of his house, but found no opportunity to meet him until it became necessary to obtain his portrait for an anthology in course of publication. The interview was brief, and the interviewer could not help feeling although
treated with pleasant courtesy, that more important matters were in hand than the perpetuation of a romancer’s countenance to future generations; but a friendly family acquaintance grew up from the incident, and will remain an abiding memory.

Mr. Melville died at his home in New York City early on the morning of September 28, 1891. His serious illness had lasted a number of months, so that the end came as a release. True to his ruling passion, philosophy had claimed him to the last, a set of Schopenhauer’s works receiving his attention when able to study; but this was varied with readings in the ‘Mermaid Series’ of old plays, in which he took much pleasure. His library, in addition to numerous works on philosophy and the fine arts, was composed of standard books of all classes, including, of course, a proportion of nautical literature. Especially interesting are fifteen or twenty first editions of Hawthorne’s books inscribed to Mr. and Mrs. Melville by the author and his wife.

The immediate acceptance of ‘Typee’ by John Murray was followed by an arrangement with the London agent of an American publisher, for its simultaneous publication in the United States. I understand that Murray did not then publish fiction. At any rate, the book was accepted by him on the assurance of Gansevoort Melville that it contained nothing not actually experienced by his brother. Murray brought it out early in 1846, in his Colonial and Home Library, as ‘A Narrative of a Four Months’ Residence among the Natives of a Valley of the Marquesas Islands; or, a Peep at Polynesian Life,’ or, more briefly, ‘Melville’s Marquesas Islands.’ It was issued in America with the author’s own title, ‘Typee,’ and in the outward shape of a work of fiction. Mr. Melville found himself famous at once. Many discussions were carried on as to the genuineness of the author’s name and the reality of the events portrayed, but English and American critics alike recognised the book’s importance as a contribution to literature.

Melville, in a letter to Hawthorne, speaks of himself as having no development at all until his twenty-fifth year, the time of his return from the Pacific; but surely the process of development must have been well advanced to permit of so virile and artistic a creation as ‘Typee.’ While the narrative does not always run smoothly, yet the style for the most part is graceful and alluring, so that we pass from one scene of Pacific enchantment to another quite oblivious of the vast amount of descriptive detail which is being poured out upon us. It is the varying fortune of the hero which engrosses our attention. We follow his adventures with breathless interest, or luxuriate with him in the leafy bower of the ‘Happy Valley,’ surrounded by joyous children of nature. When all is ended, we then for the first time realise that we know these people and their ways as if we too had dwelt among them.

I do not believe that ‘Typee’ will ever lose its position as a classic of American Literature. The pioneer in South Sea romance--for the mechanical descriptions of earlier voyagers are not worthy of comparison—this book has as yet met with no superior, even in French literature; nor has it met with a rival in any other language than the French. The character of ‘Fayaway,’ and, no less, William S. Mayo’s ‘Kaloolah,’ the enchanting dreams of many a youthful heart, will retain their charm; and this in spite of endless variations by modern explorers in the same domain. A faint type of both characters may be found in the Surinam Yarico of Captain John Gabriel Stedman, whose ‘Narrative of a Five Years’ Expedition’ appeared in 1796.

‘Typee,’ as written, contained passages reflecting with considerable severity on the methods pursued by missionaries in the South Seas. The manuscript was printed in a complete form in England, and created much discussion on this account, Melville being accused of bitterness; but he asserted his lack of prejudice. The passages referred to were omitted in the first and all subsequent American editions. They have been restored in the present issue, which is complete save for a few paragraphs excluded by written direction of the author. I have, with the consent of his family, changed the long and cumbersome sub-
title of the book, calling it a ‘Real-Romance of the South Seas,’ as best expressing its nature.

The success of his first volume encouraged Melville to proceed in his work, and ‘Omoo,’ the sequel to ‘Typee,’ appeared in England and America in 1847. Here we leave, for the most part, the dreamy pictures of island life, and find ourselves sharing the extremely realistic discomforts of a Sydney whaler in the early forties. The rebellious crew’s experiences in the Society Islands are quite as realistic as events on board ship and very entertaining, while the whimsical character, Dr. Long Ghost, next to Captain Ahab in ‘Moby Dick,’ is Melville’s most striking delineation. The errors of the South Sea missions are pointed out with even more force than in ‘Typee,’ and it is a fact that both these books have ever since been of the greatest value to outgoing missionaries on account of the exact information contained in them with respect to the islanders.

Melville’s power in describing and investing with romance scenes and incidents witnessed and participated in by himself, and his frequent failure of success as an inventor of characters and situations, were early pointed out by his critics. More recently Mr. Henry S. Salt has drawn the same distinction very carefully in an excellent article contributed to the Scottish Art Review. In a prefatory note to ‘Mardi’ (1849), Melville declares that, as his former books have been received as romance instead of reality, he will now try his hand at pure fiction. ‘Mardi’ may be called a splendid failure. It must have been soon after the completion of ‘Omoo’ that Melville began to study the writings of Sir Thomas Browne. Heretofore our author’s style was rough in places, but marvellously simple and direct. ‘Mardi’ is burdened with an over-rich diction, which Melville never entirely outgrew. The scene of this romance, which opens well, is laid in the South Seas, but everything soon becomes overdrawn and fantastical, and the thread of the story loses itself in a mystical allegory.

‘Redburn,’ already mentioned, succeeded ‘Mardi’ in the same year, and was a partial return to the author’s earlier style. In ‘White-Jacket; or, the World in a Man-of-War’ (1850), Melville almost regained it. This book has no equal as a picture of life aboard a sailing man-of-war, the lights and shadows of naval existence being well contrasted.

With ‘Moby Dick; or, the Whale’ (1851), Melville reached the topmost notch of his fame. The book represents, to a certain extent, the conflict between the author’s earlier and later methods of composition, but the gigantic conception of the ‘White Whale,’ as Hawthorne expressed it, permeates the whole work, and lifts it bodily into the highest domain of romance. ‘Moby Dick’ contains an immense amount of information concerning the habits of the whale and the methods of its capture, but this is characteristically introduced in a way not to interfere with the narrative. The chapter entitled ‘Stubb Kills a Whale’ ranks with the choicest examples of descriptive literature.

‘Moby Dick’ appeared, and Melville enjoyed to the full the enhanced reputation it brought him. He did not, however, take warning from ‘Mardi,’ but allowed himself to plunge more deeply into the sea of philosophy and fantasy.

‘Pierre; or, the Ambiguities’ (1852) was published, and there ensued a long series of hostile criticisms, ending with a severe, though impartial, article by Fitz-James O’Brien in Putnam’s Monthly. About the same time the whole stock of the author’s books was destroyed by fire, keeping them out of print at a critical moment; and public interest, which until then had been on the increase, gradually began to diminish.

After this Mr. Melville contributed several short stories to Putnam’s Monthly and Harper’s Magazine. Those in the former periodical were collected in a volume as Piazza Tales (1856); and of these
‘Benito Cereno’ and ‘The Bell Tower’ are equal to his best previous efforts.

‘Israel Potter: His Fifty Years of Exile’ (1855), first printed as a serial in Putnam’s, is an historical romance of the American Revolution, based on the hero’s own account of his adventures, as given in a little volume picked up by Mr. Melville at a book-stall. The story is well told, but the book is hardly worthy of the author of ‘Typee.’ ‘The Confidence Man’ (1857), his last serious effort in prose fiction, does not seem to require criticism.

Mr. Melville’s pen had rested for nearly ten years, when it was again taken up to celebrate the events of the Civil War. ‘Battle Pieces and Aspects of the War’ appeared in 1866. Most of these poems originated, according to the author, in an impulse imparted by the fall of Richmond; but they have as subjects all the chief incidents of the struggle. The best of them are ‘The Stone Fleet,’ ‘In the Prison Pen,’ ‘The College Colonel,’ ‘The March to the Sea,’ ‘Running the Batteries,’ and ‘Sheridan at Cedar Creek.’ Some of these had a wide circulation in the press, and were preserved in various anthologies. ‘Clarel, a Poem and Pilgrimage in the Holy Land’ (1876), is a long mystical poem requiring, as some one has said, a dictionary, a cyclopædia, and a copy of the Bible for its elucidation. In the two privately printed volumes, the arrangement of which occupied Mr. Melville during his last illness, there are several fine lyrics. The titles of these books are, ‘John Marr and Other Sailors’ (1888), and ‘Timoleon’ (1891).

There is no question that Mr. Melville’s absorption in philosophical studies was quite as responsible as the failure of his later books for his cessation from literary productiveness. That he sometimes realised the situation will be seen by a passage in ‘Moby Dick’:

‘Didn’t I tell you so?’ said Flask. ‘Yes, you’ll soon see this right whale’s head hoisted up opposite that parmacetti’s.’

‘In good time Flask’s saying proved true. As before, the Pequod steeply leaned over towards the sperm whale’s head, now, by the counterpoise of both heads, she regained her own keel, though sorely strained, you may well believe. So, when on one side you hoist in Locke’s head, you go over that way; but now, on the other side, hoist in Kant’s and you come back again; but in very poor plight. Thus, some minds forever keep trimming boat. Oh, ye foolish! throw all these thunderheads overboard, and then you will float right and light.’

Mr. Melville would have been more than mortal if he had been indifferent to his loss of popularity. Yet he seemed contented to preserve an entirely independent attitude, and to trust to the verdict of the future. The smallest amount of activity would have kept him before the public; but his reserve would not permit this. That reinstatement of his reputation cannot be doubted.

In the editing of this reissue of ‘Melville’s Works,’ I have been much indebted to the scholarly aid of Dr. Titus Munson Coan, whose familiarity with the languages of the Pacific has enabled me to harmonise the spelling of foreign words in ‘Typee’ and ‘Omoo,’ though without changing the phonetic method of printing adopted by Mr. Melville. Dr. Coan has also been most helpful with suggestions in other directions. Finally, the delicate fancy of La Farge has supplemented the immortal pen-portrait of the Typee maiden with a speaking impersonation of her beauty.

New York, June, 1892.
Six months at sea! Yes, reader, as I live, six months out of sight of land; cruising after the sperm-whale beneath the scorching sun of the Line, and tossed on the billows of the wide-rolling Pacific—the sky above, the sea around, and nothing else! Weeks and weeks ago our fresh provisions were all exhausted. There is not a sweet potato left; not a single yam. Those glorious bunches of bananas, which once decorated our stern and quarter-deck, have, alas, disappeared! and the delicious oranges which hung suspended from our tops and stays—they, too, are gone! Yes, they are all departed, disappeared! and the delicious oranges which hung suspended from our bulwarks is painted green; but what Is there nothing fresh around us? Is there no green thing to be seen? Yes, the inside of our bulwarks is painted green; but what sight of land; cruising after the sperm-whale beneath the scorching sun of the Line, and tossed on the billows of the wide-rolling Pacific—the sky above, the sea around, and nothing else! Weeks and weeks ago our fresh provisions were all exhausted. There is not a sweet potato left; not a single yam. Those glorious bunches of bananas, which once decorated our stern and quarter-deck, have, alas, disappeared! and the delicious oranges which hung suspended from our tops and stays—they, too, are gone! Yes, they are all departed, disappeared! and the delicious oranges which hung suspended from our bulwarks is painted green; but what Is there nothing fresh around us? Is there no green thing to be seen? Yes, the inside of our bulwarks is painted green; but what sight of land; cruising after the sperm-whale beneath the scorching sun of the Line, and tossed on the billows of the wide-rolling Pacific—the sky above, the sea around, and nothing else! Weeks and weeks ago our fresh provisions were all exhausted. There is not a sweet potato left; not a single yam. Those glorious bunches of bananas, which once decorated our stern and quarter-deck, have, alas, disappeared! and the delicious oranges which hung suspended from our tops and stays—they, too, are gone! Yes, they are all departed, disappeared! and the delicious oranges which hung suspended from our bulwarks is painted green; but what Is there nothing fresh around us? Is there no green thing to be seen? Yes, the inside of our bulwarks is painted green; but what sight of land; cruising after the sperm-whale beneath the scorching sun of the Line, and tossed on the billows of the wide-rolling Pacific—the sky above, the sea around, and nothing else! Weeks and weeks ago our fresh provisions were all exhausted. There is not a sweet potato left; not a single yam. Those glorious bunches of bananas, which once decorated our stern and quarter-deck, have, alas, disappeared! and the delicious oranges which hung suspended from our tops and stays—they, too, are gone! Yes, they are all departed, disappeared! and the delicious oranges which hung suspended from our bulwarks is painted green; but what Is there nothing fresh around us? Is there no green thing to be seen? Yes, the inside of our bulwarks is painted green; but what
Jack Lewis said right the other day when the captain found fault with his steering.

‘Why d’ye see, Captain Vangs,’ says bold Jack, ‘I’m as good a helmsman as ever put hand to spoke; but none of us can steer the old lady now. We can’t keep her full and bye, sir; watch her ever so close, she will fall off and then, sir, when I put the helm down so gently, and try like to coax her to the work, she won’t take it kindly, but will fall round off again; and it’s all because she knows the land is under the lee, sir, and she won’t go any more to windward.’ Aye, and why should she, Jack? didn’t every one of her stout timbers grow on shore, and hasn’t she sensibilities; as well as we?

Poor old ship! Her very looks denote her desires! how deplorably she appears! The paint on her sides, burnt up by the scorching sun, is puffed out and cracked. See the weeds she trails along with her, and what an unsightly bunch of those horrid barnacles has formed about her stern-piece; and every time she rises on a sea, she shows her copper torn away, or hanging in jagged strips.

Poor old ship! I say again: for six months she has been rolling and pitching about, never for one moment at rest. But courage, old lass, I hope to see thee soon within a biscuit’s toss of the merry land, riding snugly at anchor in some green cove, and sheltered from the boisterous winds.

‘Hurra, my lads! It’s a settled thing; next week we shape course to the Marquesas!’ The Marquesas! What strange visions of outlandish things does the very name spirit up! Naked houris—cannibal banquets—groves of cocoa-nut—coral reefs—tattooed chiefs—and bamboo temples; sunny valleys planted with bread-fruit-trees—carved canoes dancing on the flashing blue waters—savage woodlands guarded by horrible idols—HEATHEN RITES AND HUMAN SACRIFICES.

Such were the strangely jumbled anticipations that haunted me during our passage from the cruising ground. I felt an irresistible curiosity to see those islands which the olden voyagers had so glowingly described.

The group for which we were now steering (although among the earliest of European discoveries in the South Seas, having been first visited in the year 1595) still continues to be tenanted by beings as strange and barbarous as ever. The missionaries sent on a heavenly errand, had sailed by their lovely shores, and had abandoned them to their idols of wood and stone. How interesting the circumstances under which they were discovered! In the watery path of Mendaña, cruising in quest of some region of gold, these isles had sprung up like a scene of enchantment, and for a moment the Spaniard believed his bright dream was realized.

In honour of the Marquess of Mendoza, then viceroy of Peru—under whose auspices the navigator sailed—he bestowed upon them the name which denoted the rank of his patron, and gave to the world on his return a vague and magnificent account of their beauty. But these islands, undisturbed for years, relapsed into their previous obscurity; and it is only recently that anything has been known concerning them. Once in the course of a half century, to be sure, some adventurous rover would break in upon their peaceful repose. and astonished at the unusual scene, would be almost tempted to claim the merit of a new discovery.

(*) Las Islas Marquesas fueron descubiertas por Álvaro Mendaña de Neira, yendo a las islas Salomón en la misión que indica Melville.
Of this interesting group, but little account has ever been given, if we except the slight mention made of them in the sketches of South-Sea voyages. Cook, in his repeated circumnavigations of the globe, barely touched at their shores; and all that we know about them is from a few general narratives. Among these, there are two that claim particular notice. Porter’s ‘Journal of the Cruise of the U.S. frigate Essex, in the Pacific, during the late War’, is said to contain some interesting particulars concerning the islanders. This is a work, however, which I have never happened to meet with; and Stewart, the chaplain of the American sloop of war Vincennes, has likewise devoted a portion of his book, entitled ‘A Visit to the South Seas’, to the same subject.

Within the last few years American and English vessels engaged in the extensive whale fisheries of the Pacific have occasionally, when short of provisions, put into the commodious harbour which there is in one of the islands; but a fear of the natives, founded on the recollection of the dreadful fate which many white men have received at their hands, has deterred their crews from intermixing with the population sufficiently to gain any insight into their peculiar customs and manners.

The Protestant Missions appear to have despairs of reclaiming these islands from heathenism. The usage they have in every case received from the natives has been such as to intimidate them; and Stewart, the chaplain of the American sloop of war Vincennes, has likewise devoted a portion of his book, entitled ‘A Visit to the South Seas’, to the same subject.

De este interesante grupo de islas se ha dado poca noticia, si exceptuamos la ligera mención que de ellas se hace en los esbozos de los viajes por el mar del Sur. Cook, en sus repetidas circunnavegaciones del globo, apenas tocó en sus orillas; y todo lo que de ellas sabemos procede de unos pocos relatos generales. Entre éstos, hay dos que requieren especial atención. El ‘Diario del crucero de la fragata norteamericana Essex, por el Pacífico, durante la última guerra’, de Poner, se dice que contiene algunos detalles interesantes sobre los isleños. Sin embargo, nunca he tenido ocasión de encontrar esta obra. Igualmente, Stewart, capellán de la corbeta americana Vincennes, ha dedicado al mismo tema una parte de su libro titulado Una visita a los mares del Sur.

En estos últimos años, los barcos americanos e ingleses dedicados a extensas pesca de ballenas en el Pacífico, algunas veces, al encontrarse cortos de provisiones, han entrado en el cómodo puerto que hay en una de las islas, pero el miedo a los indígenas, fundado en el recuerdo del terrible destino que muchos blancos han sufrido a manos de ellos, ha impedido a sus tripulaciones mezclarse con la población lo bastante como para obtener alguna idea de sus peculiares costumbres y usos.

Las misiones protestantes parecen haber desesperado de liberar esas islas del paganismismo. El trato que han recibido en todos los casos por parte de los indígenas ha sido tal como para intimidar a los más valientes de sus miembros. Ellis, en sus «Investigaciones polinesias», da ciertos relatos interesantes de los frustrados intentos hechos por la Misión de Tahiti para establecer una rama de su misión en ciertas islas del archipiélago. Poco tiempo antes de mi visita a las Marquesas, tuvo lugar un incidente un tanto divertido en relación con esos esfuerzos, que no puedo menos de relatar.

Un intrépido misionero, undaunted by the ill-success that had attended all previous endeavours to conciliate the savages, and believing much in the efficacy of female influence, introduced among them his young and beautiful wife, the first white woman who had ever visited their shores. The islanders at first gazed in mute admiration at so unusual a prodigy, and seemed inclined to regard it as some new divinity. But after a short time, becoming familiar with its charming aspect, and jealous of the folds which encircled its form, they sought to pierce the sacred veil of calico in which it was enshrined, and in the gratification of their curiosity so far overstepped the limits of good breeding, as deeply to offend the lady’s sense of decorum. Her sex once ascertained, their idolatry was changed into contempt and there was no end to the contumely showered upon her by the savages, who were exasperated at the deception which they conceived had been practised upon them. To the horror of her affectionate spouse, she was stripped of her garments, and given to understand that she could no longer carry on her deceits with impunity. The gentle dame was not sufficiently evangelical to endure this, and, fearful of further improprieties, she forced her husband to relinquish his undertaking, and together they returned to Tahiti.

Not thus shy of exhibiting her charms was the Island Queen herself, the beauteous wife of Movianna, the king of Nukuheva. Between two and three years after the adventures recorded in this volume, I chanced, while aboard of a man-of-war to touch at these islands. The French had then held possession of the Marquesas some time, and already prided themselves upon the beneficial effects of their jurisdiction, as discernible in the deportment of the natives. To be sure, in one of their efforts at reform they had slaughtered about a hundred and fifty of them at Whitihoo—but let that pass. At the time I mention, the French
squadron was rendezvousing in the bay of Nukuheva, and during
an interview between one of their captains and our worthy Com-
modore, it was suggested by the former, that we, as the flag-ship
of the American squadron, should receive, in state, a visit from
the royal pair. The French officer likewise represented, with evi-
dent satisfaction, that under their tuition the king and queen had
imbibed proper notions of their elevated station, and on all cer-
emonious occasions conducted themselves with suitable dignity.
Accordingly, preparations were made to give their majesties a re-
creation on board in a style corresponding with their rank.

One bright afternoon, a gig, gaily bedizened with streamers, was observed to shuffle off from the side of one of the
French frigates, and pull directly for our gangway. In the stern
sheets reclined Mowanna and his consort. As they approached,
we paid them all the honours due to royalty;—manning our yards,
firing a salute, and making a prodigious hubbub.

They ascended the accommodation ladder, were greeted
by the Commodore, hat in hand, and passing along the quarter-deck,
the marine guard presented arms, while the band struck up 'The
King of the Cannibal Islands'. So far all went well. The French
officers grimaced and smiled in exceedingly high spirits, wonder-
fully pleased with the discreet manner in which these distinguished
personages behaved themselves.

Their appearance was certainly calculated to produce an
effect. His majesty was arrayed in a magnificent military uniform,
stiff with gold lace and embroidery, while his shaven crown was
concealed by a huge chapeau braze, waving with ostrich plumes. There
was one slight blemish, however, in his appearance. A broad patch
of tattooing stretched completely across his face, in a line with his
eyes, making him look as if he wore a huge pair of goggles; and
royalty in goggles suggested some ludicrous ideas. But it was in the
adornment of his morena spouse that the tailors of the fleet had evinced the gaiety of their national taste.

The ship's company, crowding into the gangway to view
the sight, soon arrested her majesty's attention. She singled out
the gallardetes, and surmounted by a tuft of variegated feathers.

was a fanciful turban of purple velvet, figured with silver sprigs,
what resembling two miniature Trajan's columns. Upon her head
was a fanciful turban of purple velvet, figured with silver sprigs,
and surmounted by a tuft of variegated feathers.

Subieron por la escala del portalón; el comodoro les saludó,
sombrero en mano y, recorriendo el alcazár, la guardia presentó
armas, mientras la banda tocaba «El Rey de las Islas Caniba-
les». Hasta ahí todo marchó bien. Los oficiales franceses hacían
muecas y sonreían de magnífico humor, admirablemente satis-
fechos de la discreción con que se comportaban tan distinguidos
personajes.

Su aspecto, desde luego, estaba calculado para producir gran efec-
to. El rey iba engalanado con un magnífico uniforme militar, rígido
de encaje de oro y de bordados, mientras que su corona afeitada
quedaba oculta por un enorme chapeau bas, ondulante de plumas de
avesvastuz. Un ligero inconveniente había, sin embargo, en su pre-
sencia: todo a lo largo de la cara se extendía una ancha banda de
tatuaje, a la altura de los ojos, haciendo que pareciera llevar unas
grandes gafas; y eso de la realeza con gafas sugería ideas extrañas.

The ship's company, crowding into the gangway to view
the sight, soon arrested her majesty's attention. She singled out
the gallardetes, and surmounted by a tuft of variegated feathers.

They ascended the accommodation ladder, were greeted
by the Commodore, hat in hand, and passing along the quarter-deck,
the marine guard presented arms, while the band struck up 'The
King of the Cannibal Islands'. So far all went well. The French
officers grimaced and smiled in exceedingly high spirits, wonder-
fully pleased with the discreet manner in which these distinguished
personages behaved themselves.

Their appearance was certainly calculated to produce an
effect. His majesty was arrayed in a magnificent military uniform,
stiff with gold lace and embroidery, while his shaven crown was
concealed by a huge chapeau braze, waving with ostrich plumes. There
was one slight blemish, however, in his appearance. A broad patch
of tattooing stretched completely across his face, in a line with his
eyes, making him look as if he wore a huge pair of goggles; and
royalty in goggles suggested some ludicrous ideas. But it was in the
adornment of the fair person of his morena spouse that the tailors of the fleet had evinced the gaiety of their national taste.

The ship's company, crowding into the gangway to view
the sight, soon arrested her majesty's attention. She singled out
the gallardetes, and surmounted by a tuft of variegated feathers.

was a fanciful turban of purple velvet, figured with silver sprigs,
and surmounted by a tuft of variegated feathers.

The tripulación del barco, agolpada junto al portalón para obser-
vare el espectáculo, pronto atrajo la atención de la reina. De entre
todos ellos, él eligió un viejo lobo de mar, cuyos brazos, pies y pe-
cho al descubierto estaban cubiertos de tontas inscripciones con
ropa china como la tapa de un sarcófago egipcio. A pesar de todas las
maliciosas indicaciones y protestas de los oficiales franceses, se
aceró inmediatamente al marinero, y abriéndole más la pechera de
su blusón de avestruz, y remangándole la pernera de sus anchos pantalo-
nas, embellecidas con tatuajes en espíritu, algo parecidas a dos co-
lumnas de Trajano en miniatura. En la cabeza llevaba un fantástico
turbante de terciopelo púrpura, adornado con puntillas de plata, y
coronado con un mechón de plumas abigarradas.

La tripulación del barco, agolpada junto al portalón para obser-
vare el espectáculo, pronto atrajo la atención de la reina. De entre

1 a long narrow flag. 2 a long narrow strip of ribbon or paper, esp.
3 a banner headline. Banderolas, serpentinas, cintas
tastelessly or extravagantly bright or showy. Chillón, chabacano, llamativo, brillante
35
40
45
50
55
60

1 adj. (slyer) (of an action etc.) done etc. in secret. 2 hypocritical; ironical. 4 knowing; arch;
bantering; insinuating. Socarrón, artero
15
20
25
30
32
18

Austral.

N. Austral. & NZ sl. 2 espadilla (esp. of liquor) illicit.

on the quiet: (of an old salt, whose loose fellows with some through on the sly). sly
dog colq. a person who is discreet about mistakes or pleasures. Socarrón, artero

sly 1 (= wily) (person) astuto; taimado he's a sly one! ¿es un zorro? 2 (= mischievous) [person] picaro; travieso [look: smile] picaro; malicioso

on the sly (informal) a hurtadillas; a escondidas

Melville's Typee  J. M. Valverde

sly dog colq. a person who is discreet about mistakes or pleasures. Socarrón, artero

sly 1 (= wily) (person) astuto; taimado he's a sly one! ¿es un zorro? 2 (= mischievous) [person] picaro; travieso [look: smile] picaro; malicioso

on the sly (informal) a hurtadillas; a escondidas

La tripulación del barco, agolpada junto al portalón para obser-
vare el espectáculo, pronto atrajo la atención de la reina. De entre
todos ellos, él eligió un viejo lobo de mar, cuyos brazos, pies y pe-
cho al descubierto estaban cubiertos de tontas inscripciones con
tapa china como la tapa de un sarcófago egipcio. A pesar de todas las
maliciosas indicaciones y protestas de los oficiales franceses, se
aceró inmediatamente al marinero, y abriéndole más la pechera de
su blusón de avestruz, y remangándole la pernera de sus anchos pantalo-
nas, embellecidas con tatuajes en espíritu, algo parecidas a dos co-
lumnas de Trajano en miniatura. En la cabeza llevaba un fantástico
turbante de terciopelo púrpura, adornado con puntillas de plata, y
coronado con un mechón de plumas abigarradas.
CHAPTER TWO

PASSAGE FROM THE CRUISING GROUND TO THE MARQUESAS—SLEEPY TIMES ABOARD SHIP—SOUTH SEA SCENERY—LAND HO—THE FRENCH SQUADRON DISCOVERED AT ANCHOR IN THE BAY OF NUKUHEVA—STRANGE PILOT—ESCORT OF CANOES—A FLOTTILLA OF COCONUTS—SWIMMING VISITORS—THE DOLLY BOARDED BY THEM—STATE OF AFFAIRS THAT ENSUE

I CAN never forget the eighteen or twenty days during which the light trade-winds were silently sweeping us towards the islands. In pursuit of the sperm whale, we had been cruising on the line some twenty degrees to the westward of the Gallipagos; and all that we had to do, when our course was determined on, was to square in the yards and keep the vessel before the breeze, and then the good ship and the steady gale did the rest between them. The man at the wheel never vexed the old lady with any superfluous steering, but comfortably adjusting his limbs at the tiller, would doze away by the hour. True to her work, the Dolly headed to her course, and like one of those characters who always do best when let alone, she jogged on her way like a veteran old sea-pacer as she was.

What a delightful, lazy, languid time we had whilst we were thus gliding along! There was nothing to be done; a circumstance that happily suited our disinclination to do anything. We abandoned the fore-peak altogether, and spreading an awning over the forecastle, slept, ate, and lounged under it the whole long day. Every one seemed to be under the influence of some narcotic. Even the officers afloat, whose duty required them never to be seated while keeping a deck watch, vainly endeavoured to keep on their pins; and were obliged invariably to compromise the matter by leaning up against the bulwarks, and gazing abstractedly over the side. Reading was out of the question; take a book in your hand, and you were asleep in an instant.

Although I could not avoid yielding in a great measure to the general languor, still at times I contrived to shake off the spell, and to appreciate the beauty of the scene around me. The sky presented a clear expanse of the most delicate blue, except along the skirts of the horizon, where you might see a thin drapery of pale clouds which never varied their form or colour. The long, measured, dirge-like well of the Pacific came rolling along, with its clouds which never varied their form or colour. The long, measured, dirge-like well of the Pacific came rolling along, with its surface broken by little tiny waves, sparkling in the sunshine. Every now and then a shoal of flying fish, scared from the water under the bows, would leap into the air, and fall the next moment like a shower of silver into the sea. Then you would see the superb albicore, with his glittering sides, sailing aloft, and often describing an arc in his descent, disappear on the surface of the water. Far off, the lofty jet of the whale might be seen, and nearer at hand the descent, disappear on the surface of the water. Far off, the lofty jet of the whale might be seen, and nearer at hand the

CAPÍTULO II

TRAVEREÓN DESDE LA ZONA DE PESCA HASTA LAS MARQUESAS. HORAS DE SOMNOLENCIA A BORDO DEL BARCO. ESCENOGRAFÍA DEL MAR DEL SUR. ¡TIERRA! SE DESCUBRE LA FLOTA FRANCESA FONDEADA EN LA ENSENADA DE NUKUHEVA. EXTRAÑO PILOTO. ESCOLTA DE CANOAS. UNA FLOTTILLA DE COCOS. VISITANTES A NADO ABORDAN AL «DOLLY». ESTADO DE COSAS SUBSIGUIENTE

Nunca podrá olvidar los dieciocho o veinte días en que los leves alisios nos empujaron silenciosamente hacia las islas. En persecución del cachalote, habíamos navegado por el Ecuador unos veinte grados al oeste de las Galápagos; y todo lo que tuvimos que hacer, una vez que se determinó nuestro rumbo, fue bracear en cruz las vergas y mantener el barco ante el viento; y luego el buen barco y el viento constante hicieron lo demás entre los dos. El timonel nunca molestaba a la vieja nave con superfluos cambios de rumbo, sino que, apoyando cómodamente el cuerpo en la caña, echaba siestas de horas seguidas. Fiel a su trabajo, el Dolly, avanzaba por su rumbo y como uno de esos temperamentos que siempre se portan mejor cuando se les deja solos, se movía con calma por su camino, como experto viajero marino que era.

¡Qué tiempo delicioso, perezoso, lúgubre, pasamos mientras así nos deslizábamos! No había nada que hacer, circunstancia que se adecuaba felizmente con nuestra falta de inclinación a hacer nada. Abandonos por completo el pique de proa, y extendiendo un toldo sobre el castillo, dormimos, comimos y [19] repasamos bajo él durante todo el santo día. Todos parecíamos bajo el efecto de algún narcótico. Incluso los oficiales a popa, cuya obligación requería que no se sentaran jamás mientras estaban de guardia en cubierta, en vano se esforzaban por mantenerse firmes, y se veían siempre obligados a buscar una transacción en el asunto reclamándose contra las batayolas, para mirar distraídamente sobre la borda. No había ni que pensar en leer: uno tomaba en mano un libro, y al momento estaba dormido.

Aunque yo no pude ceder en gran medida a la languidez general, a veces me las arreglaba para sacudir el hechizo y apreciar la belleza de la escena que tenía a mi alrededor. El cielo presentaba una clara extensión del más delicado azul, salvo a lo largo de los bordes del horizonte, donde se veía un leve velaje de nubes pálidas que nunca variaban de forma ni de color. La larga y mesurada hinchazón del Pacífico, como un canto fúnebre, pasaba en balanceo, con su superficie rota por diminutas olitas que resplandecían al sol. De vez en cuando, una manada de peces voladores salían asustados desde el agua bajo la proa, saltaban por el aire y caían un momento después en el mar como una lluvia de plata. Entonces se veía a la soberbia albacora, con sus costados centelleantes, salir por la altura, a menudo describiendo un arco en su descensó, desaparecer en la superficie del agua. Allá lejos se veía el alto chorro de la ballena, y más cerca, rondaba el tiburón, el villano salteador de los mares, acudiendo al acecho, y, a prudente distancia, observándose con sus ojos malignos. De vez en cuan-do, algún informe monstruo de la profundidad, flotando sobre la superficie, se sumergía, al acercarnos nosotros, en las aguas azules, lentamente, disipándose de la vista. Pero el rasgo más impresionante de la visión era el silencio casi intenso que reinaba en cielo y agua. Apenas se oía un ruido, salvo el respiro ocasional del orlo, y el desgarro en el tajamar.

Al acercarnos más a tierra, saludé con deleite la aparición de innumerables aves marinas. Chillando y girando en filas espirales, acompañaban al barco y de vez en cuando se posaban en nuestras vergas y estiátes. Aquel tipo de aspecto de pirata, adecuadamente lla-
ately named the man-of-war's-hawk, with his blood-red bill and raven plumage, would come sweeping round us in gradually diminishing circles, till you could distinctly mark the strange flashings of his eye; and then, as if satisfied with his observation, would sail up into the air and disappear from the view. Soon, other evidences of our vicinity to the land were apparent, and it was not long before the glad announcement of its being in sight was heard from aloft,—given with that peculiar prolongation of sound that a sailor loves—"Land ho!"

The captain, darting on deck from the cabin, bawled lustily for his spy-glass; the mate in still louder accents hailed the masthead with a tremendous 'where-away?' The black cook thrust his woolly head from the galley, and Boatswain, the dog, leaped up between the knight-heads, and barked most furiously. Land ho! Aye, there it was. A hardly perceptible blue irregular outline, indicating the bold contour of the lofty heights of Nukuheva.

This island, although generally called one of the Marquesas, is by some navigators considered as forming one of a distinct cluster, comprising the islands of Ruhooka, Ropo, and Nukuheva; upon which three the appellation of the Washington Group has been bestowed. They form a triangle, and lie within the parallels of 8 degrees 38' and 9 degrees 32' South latitude and 139 degrees 20' and 140 degrees 10' West longitude from Greenwich. With how little propriety they are to be regarded as forming a separate group will be at once apparent, when it is considered that they lie in the immediate vicinity of the other islands, that is to say, less than a degree to the northwest of them; that their inhabitants speak the Marquesan dialect, and that their laws, religion, and general customs are identical. The only reason why they were ever thus arbitrarily distinguished may be attributed to the singular fact, that their existence was altogether unknown to the world until the year 1791, when they were discovered by Captain Ingraham, of Boston, Massachusetts, nearly two centuries after the discovery of the adjacent islands by the agent of the Spanish Viceroy. Notwithstanding this, I shall follow the example of most voyagers, and treat of them as forming part and parcel of Marquesas.

Nukuheva is the most important of these islands, being the only one at which ships are much in the habit of touching, and is celebrated as being the place where the adventurous Captain Porter refitted his ships during the late war between England and the United States, and whence he sailed out upon the large whaling fleet then under the enemy's flag in the surrounding seas. This island is about twenty miles in length and nearly as many in breadth. It has three good harbours on its coast; the largest and best of which is called the people living in its vicinity 'Taiohac', and by Captain Porter was denominated Massachusetts Bay. Among the adverse tribes dwelling about the shores of the other bays, and by all voyagers, it is generally known by the name bestowed upon the island itself—Nukuheva. Its inhabitants have become somewhat corrupted, owing to their recent commerce with Europeans, but so far as regards their peculiar customs and general mode of life, they retain their original primitive character, remaining very nearly in the same state of nature in which they were first beheld by white men. The hostile clans, residing in the more remote sections of the island, and very seldom holding any communication with foreigners, are in every respect unchanged from their earliest known condition.

In the bay of Nukuheva was the anchorage we desired to reach. We had perceived the loom of the mountains about sunset; so that after running all night with a very light breeze, we found ourselves close in with the island the next morning, but as the bay we sought lay on its farther side, we were obliged to sail some distance along the shore, catching, as we proceeded, short glimpses of blooming valleys, deep glens, mado el hálcón del barco de guerra, con su pico de rojo sangriento y su plumaje negro, venía y nos rozaba girando en círculos gradualmente decrecientes, hasta que se podían observar claramente los centelleos de sus ojos, y entonces, como satisfecho de su observación, se remontaba por los aires y desaparecía de la vista. Pronto se mostraron otras señales de nuestra cercanía a la tierra, y no tardó mucho en oírse desde arriba el alegre aviso de que [20] estaba a la vista, dado con esa peculiar prolongación del sonido que les gusta a los marineros: «Land ho!», ¡«¡Tierra!».

El capitán se precipitó de la cabina a la cubierta, y aulló vigorosamente pidiendo el catalejo, mientras el primer oficial, con voz aún más sonora, gritó hacia la costa un tremendo «¡por dónde!?». El cocinero negro asomó su cabeza lanuda desde el fogón, y el perro Contramaestre subió de un brinco entre los «apóstoles», y ladró furiosamente. ¡Tierra! Sí, allí estaba. Un contorno azul irregular, apenas perceptible, indicaba la atrevida silueta de las elevadas cimas de Nukuheva.

Esta isla, aunque generalmente se considera como una de las Marquesas, algunos navegantes entienden que forma parte de un grupo distinto, que comprende las islas de Ruhooka, Ropo y Nukuheva; dándoseles a estas tres el nombre de Archipiélago Washington. Forman un triángulo que queda entre los paralelos 8 38' y 9 38' de latitud Sur, y los meridianos 139 20' y 140 10' de longitud Oeste de Greenwich. En seguida se verá con qué escasa propiedad se pueden considerar como formando un grupo separado, si se tiene en cuenta que quedan en la cercanía inmediata de las otras islas, es decir, a menos de un grado al noroeste de ellas; que sus habitantes hablan el dialecto de las Marquesas, y que sus leyes, religión y costumbres generales son idénticas. La única razón por la que se distinguieron con tal arbitrariedad puede atribuirse al hecho singular de que su existencia era absolutamente desconocida para el mundo hasta el año 1791, cuando las descubrió el capitán Ingraham, de Boston, Massachusetts, casi dos siglos después del descubrimiento de las islas adyacentes por el agente del virrey español. A pesar de esto, seguiré el ejemplo de la mayor parte de los viajeros, y las consideraré como formando parte integrante de las Marquesas.

Nukuheva es la más importante de estas islas, siendo la única en que los barcos tienen bastante costumbre de tocar, y es famosa como el lugar donde el aventurado capitán Poner volvió a aparejar sus barcos en la última guerra entre Inglaterra y los Estados Unidos, y de donde zarpó contra la amplia flota ballenera que entonces navegaba bajo bandera enemiga en las aguas circundantes. Esa isla tiene unas veinte millas de longitud y otras tantas de anchura. Cuenta con tres buenos ensenadas en la costa: la mayor y mejor de las cuales es llamada, por la gente que vive junto a ella, «Tyohi», y el capitán Poner la llamó Bahía Massachusetts. Entre las tribus enemigas que viven en las orillas de las otras bahías, y entre todos los viajeros, se suele conocer por el nombre concedido a la propia isla: Nukuheva. Sus habitantes se han corrompido en cuanto a la política y gobierno bajo bandera enemiga, manteniendo los viejos costumbres. En su estado natural en que fueron observados por primera vez por hombres blancos. Los clones hostiles que residen en las regiones más remotas de la isla, y que muy raramente entablan comunicación con extranjeros, no han cambiado en ningún aspecto de su condición primitiva.

En la bahía de Nukuheva estaba el forrajeadero que deseábamos alcanzar. Habíamos percibido la presencia de las montañas hacía el ocaso, de modo que, tras correr toda la noche con una brisa muy ligera, nos encontramos cerca de la isla a la mañana siguiente: pero como la bahía que buscábamos quedaba al otro lado, nos vimos obligados a navegar cierta distancia a lo largo de la orilla, captando, al pasar, breves atisos de valles fluviales, profundos barrancos,
waterfalls, and waving groves hidden here and there by projecting and rocky headlands, every moment opening to the view some new and startling scene of beauty.

Those who for the first time visit the South Sea, generally are surprised at the appearance of the islands which they behold from the sea. From the vague accounts we sometimes have of their beauty, many people are apt to picture to themselves enamelled and softly swelling plains, shaded over with delicious groves, and watered by *purling* brooks, and the entire country but little elevated above the surrounding ocean. The reality is very different; bold rock-bound coasts, with the surf beating high against the lofty cliffs, and broken here and there into deep inlets, which open to the view thickly-wooded valleys, separated by the spurs of mountains cloathed with tufted grass, and sweeping down towards the sea from an elevated and furrowed interior, form the principal features of these islands.

* purl 2 v.intr. (of a brook etc.) flow with a swirling [whirling, revolving rapidly] motion and babbling sound. «fluyentes en torbellinos»

Towards noon we drew abreast the entrance go the harbour, and at last we slowly swept by the intervening promontory, and entered the bay of Nukuheva. No description can do justice to its beauty; but that beauty was lost to me then, and I saw nothing but the tri-coloured flag of France trailing over the stern of six vessels, whose black hulls and bristling broadsides proclaimed their warlike character. There they were, floating in that lovely bay, the green eminences of the shore looking down so tranquilly upon them, as if rebuking the sternness of their aspect. To my eye nothing could be more out of keeping than the presence of these vessels; but we soon learnt what brought them there. The whole group of islands had just been taken possession of by Rear-Admiral Du Petit Thouars, in the name of the invincible French nation.

This item of information was imparted to us by a most extraordinary individual, a genuine South-Sea vagabond, who came alongside of us in a whale-boat as soon as we entered the bay, and, by the aid of some benevolent persons at the gangway, was assisted along side of us in a whale-boat as soon as we entered the bay, and, by the aid of some benevolent persons at the gangway, was assisted on board, for our visitor was in that interesting stage of intoxication when a man is amiable and helpless. Although he was utterly unable to stand erect or to navigate his body across the deck, he still magnanimously *proffered* his services to pilot the ship to a good and secure anchorage. Our captain, however, rather distrusted his ability in this respect, and refused to recognize his claim to the character he assumed; but our gentleman was determined to play his part, for, *by dint of* much scrambling, he succeeded in getting into the weather-quarter boat, where he steadied himself by holding on to a shroud, and then commenced issuing his commands with amazing volubility and very peculiar gestures. Of course no one obeyed his orders; but as it was impossible to quiet him, we swept by the ships of the squadron with this strange fellow performing his antics in full view of all the French officers.

We afterwards learned that our eccentric friend had been a lieutenant in the English navy; but having *disgraced* his flag by some criminal conduct in one of the principal ports on the main, he had deserted his ship, and spent many years wandering among the islands of the Pacific, until accidentally being at Nukuheva when the French took possession of the place, he had been appointed pilot of the harbour by the newly constituted authorities.

As we slowly advanced up the bay, numerous canoes pushed off from the surrounding shores, and we were soon in the midst of quite a flotilla of them, their savage occupants struggling to get aboard of us, and jostling one another in their inintellect attempts. Occasionally the projecting out-riggers of their slight shallops running foul of one another, would become entangled beneath the water, threatening to capsize the canoes, when a scene of confusion would ensue that baffles description. Such strange outcascadas, y bosquecillos ondulantes, ocultos acá y allá por promontorios rocosos asomados, que a cada momento abrían a la vista alguna nueva y sorprendente escena de belleza.

Aquéllos que visitan por primera vez los mares del Sur, generalmente se sorprenden del aspecto de las islas cuando se las observa desde el mar. Por las vagas noticias que a veces tenemos de su belleza, mucha gente tiene a imaginárselas como llanuras esmaltadas y suavemente henchidas, sombreadas por deliciosos bosquecillos, y re- gadas por arroyuelos *arremonolados*, con todo ese paisaje líferamente elevado sobre el océano circundante. La realidad es muy diferente: atrevidas costas rocosas, con la espuma batiendo muy alto contra los elevados acantilados, y rotas aquí y allá en profundas entradas, que abren a la vista valles de espeso bosque, separados por estribaciones de montañas revestidas de hierba en mechos, y descendiendo al mar desde un elevado interior rugoso: todo eso forma los principales rasgos de esas islas.

Hacia mediodía embocamos la entrada de la ensenada, y por fin pasamos lentamente ante el promontorio saliente, entrando en la bahía de Nukuheva. Ninguna descripción puede hacer justicia a su belleza, pero esa belleza quedó entonces perdiida ante mí, y no vi más que la bandera tricolor de Francia ondeando en la popa de seis barcos, cuyos cascos negros y costados erizados proclamaban su carácter guerrero. Allí estaban, flotando en esa deliciosa bahía, con las verdes prominencias de la orilla mirándoles tranquilamente desde lo alto, como en reproche hacia la severidad de su aspecto. Para mis ojos, nada podía desentonar tanto como la presencia de esos barcos, pero pronto supimos qué les había llevado [22] allí. El entero archipelago acababa de ser tomado en posesión por el contraalmirante Du Petit Thouars, en nombre de la invencible nación francesa.

Este punto de información nos lo transmitió un individuo extraordi- nario, un auténtico vagabundo del mar del Sur, que se acercó a nuestro costado en una ballenera, tan pronto como entramos en la bahía, y que con ayuda de ciertas personas benevolas del portalón fue hecho subir a bordo, pues nuestro visitante estaba en ese interesante grado de intoxica- ción en que un hombre es amigable e *inerme*. Aunque totalmente incapaz de permanecer erguido y de hacer navegar su cuerpo a través de la cubier- ta, siguió ofreciendo magnánimamente sus servicios para pilotar el buque hasta un buen fondeadero seguro. Nuestro capitán, sin embargo, más bien desconfiaba de su capacidad en ese aspecto, y rehusó reconocer su preten- sión al rango que asumía, pero nuestro caballero estaba decidido a desem- peñar su papel, pues, *a fuerza de* mucho agitarse, logró entrar en la lancha de barlovento, y allí, tras de consolidarse agarrándose a un ocho delantero del mismo, empezó a lanzar sus peculiares gestos. Desde luego, nadie obedeció sus órdenes, pero como era imposible silenciarle, pasamos ante los bar- cos de la escuadra con ese tipo extraño realizando su exhibición a plena vista de todos los oficiales franceses.

Después supimos que nuestro eccéntrico amigo había sido teniente en la marina inglesa, pero, habiendo *deshonrado* su bandera por cierto comportamiento delictivo en uno de los principales puertos del conti- nente, desertó de su barco, y pasó muchos años vagando entre las islas del Pacífico, hasta que, por estar por casualidad en Nukuheva cuando los franceses tomaron posesión del lugar, había sido nombrado piloto de la ensenada por las autoridades recién establecidas.

Al avanzar lentamente por la bahía, numerosas canoas salieron de las orillas circundantes, y pronto estuvimos en medio de una ver- dadera flotilla de ellas, con sus salvajes ocupantes luchando por su- bir a bordo nuestro, y empujándose unos a otros en sus intentos in- eficaces. De vez en cuando, los salientes arboledales de sus ligera- chalupas se enredaban entre sí, y se atascaban debajo del agua, ame- nazando volcar las canoas, y dando lugar a una escena de confusión que desafiaba toda descripción. Desde luego, en mi vida había visto
cries and passionate gesticulations I never certainly heard or saw before. You would have thought the islanders were on the point of flying at each other’s throats, whereas they were only amicably engaged in disentangling their boats.

Scattered here and there among the canoes might be seen numbers of cocoanuts floating closely together in circular groups, and bobbing up and down with every wave. By some inexplicable means these cocoanuts were all steadily approaching towards the ship. As I learned curiously over the side, endeavouring to solve their mysterious movements, one mass far in advance of the rest attracted my attention. In its centre was something I could take for nothing else than a cocoanut, but which I certainly considered one of the most extraordinary specimens of the fruit I had ever seen. It kept twirling and dancing about among the rest in the most singular manner, and as it drew nearer I thought it bore a remarkable resemblance to the brown shaven skull of one of the savages. Presently it betrayed a pair of eyes, and soon I became aware that what I had supposed to have been one of the fruit was nothing else than the head of an islander, who had adopted this singular method of bringing his produce to market. The cocoanuts were all attached to one another by strips of the husk, partly torn from the shell and rudely fastened together. Their proprietor inserting his head into the midst of them, impelled his necklace of cocoanuts through the water by striking up beneath the surface with his feet.

I was somewhat astonished to perceive that among the number of natives that surrounded us, not a single female was to be seen. At that time I was ignorant of the fact that by the operation of the ‘taboo’ the use of canoes in all parts of the island is rigorously prohibited to the entire sex, for whom it is death even to be seen entering one when hauled on shore; consequently, whenever a Marquesan lady voyages by water, she puts in requisition the paddles of her own fair body.

We had approached within a mile and a half perhaps of this foot of the bay, when some of the islanders, who by this time had managed to scramble aboard of us at the risk of swamping their canoes, directed our attention to a singular commotion in the water ahead of the vessel. At first I imagined it to be produced by a shoal of fish sporting on the surface, but our savage friends assured us that it was caused by a shoal of ‘whinhenies’ (young girls), who in this manner were coming off from the shore to welcome us. As they drew nearer, and I watched the rising and sinking of their forms, and beheld the uplifted right arm bearing above the water the girdle of tappa, and their long dark hair trailing beside them as they swam, I almost fancied they could be nothing else than so many mermaids—and very likely mermaids they behaved too.

We were still some distance from the beach, and under slow headway, when we sailed right into the midst of these swimming nymphs, and they boarded us at every quarter; many seizing hold of the chain-plates and springing into the chains; others, at the peril of being run over by the vessel in her course, catching at the bobstays, and rendering their slender forms about the ropes, hung suspended in the air. All of them at length succeeded in getting up the ship’s side, where they clung dripping with the brine* and glowing from the bath, their jet-black tresses streaming over their shoulders, and half enveloping their otherwise naked forms. There they hung, sparkling with savage vivacity, laughing gaily at one another, and chattering away with infinite glee. Nor were they idle the while, for each one performed the simple offices of the toilette for the other. Their luxuriant locks, wound up and twisted into the smallest possible compass, were freed from the briny element, and from a little round shell that passed from hand to hand, anointed with a fragrant oil: their adornments were completed by passing a few loose folds of white tappa, in a modest cincture, around the waist. Thus arrayed they no longer hesitated, but flung themselves lightly over the balwarks, and were quickly frolicking about the decks. Many of them went forward, perching upon the headrails or running out tales exclamaciones extrañas y gesticulaciones apasionadas. Se habría creído que los isleños estaban a punto de lanzarse al cuello unos contra otros, mientras que sólo estaban amigablemente ocupados en desenredar las barcas.

Dispersos acá y allá entre las canoas, se veían muchos cocos flotando muy juntos en grupos circulares, y subiendo y bajando a cada ola. Por algún medio inexplicable, todos esos cocos se aproximaban constantemente al barco. Al asomarse con curiosidad al costado tratando de aclarar sus movimientos misteriosos, un grupo adelantado a los demás atraía mi atención. Tenía en el centro algo que yo no podía tomar sino por un coco, pero que ciertamente consideré como una de las muestras más extraordinarias de ese fruto que he visto jamás. No dejaba de girar y bajar entre los demás del modo más singular, y al acercarse, me pareció que presentaba una notable semejanza al oscuro cráneo aféntado de uno de los salvajes. Por fin, dejó ver unos ojos, y pronto me di cuenta de que lo que yo suponía uno de los frutos no era otra cosa que la cabeza de un isleño, que había adoptado ese singular método para llevar su producto al mercado. Los cocos estaban atados unos a otros por tiras de la cáscara, arrancadas en parte del fruto y atadas toscamente. El propietario metía la cabeza en medio de ellos, y empujaba su collar de cocos por el agua gopeando con los pies por debajo de la superficie.

Nos habíamos acercado a una milla y media, quizás, del fondo de la bahía, cuando algunos isleños, que para entonces se las habían arreglado para subir a bordo nuestro, a riesgo de inundar sus canoas, nos llamaron la atención hacia una singular agitación en el agua, por delante del barco. Al principio, imaginé que la producía una manada de peces juguetear en la superficie, pero nuestros amigos salvajes nos aseguraron que la causaba una manada de whinhenies (muchachas jóvenes), que de ese modo llegaban desde la orilla a darnos la bienvenida. Al acercarse más, observé cómo subían y se hundían sus cuerpos, y miré el brazo derecho que salía del agua elevando el ceñidor de tappa: casi me imaginé que no podían ser sino sirenas —y como sirenas, también, se comportaron.

[caption-a](brine) salted water

Estábamos aún a cierta distancia de la playa, y a marcha lenta, cuando nos metimos en medio de esas ninfadas nadadoras, que nos abordaron por todas partes; unas se agarraron a los cadenotes, subiendo a sus cadenas; otras, a riesgo de que las alcanzara el barco en su marcha, se agarraron al tajamar, y retorciendo sus esbeltas figuras por las jarcias, subieron colgando por el aire. Todas ellas, por fin, lograron subir por el costado del barco, y llegaron a lo alto goateando espuma.[24] resplandecedores del barco, con sus trenzas azañacheces extendidas por los hombros, medio envolviendo sus formas, por lo demás desnudas. Allí colgaban, chispeando de salvaje vivacidad, riendo alegremente entre ellas, y charlando con infinito júbilo. Y mientras tanto tampoco estaban ociosas, pues cada cual cumplía los sencillos deberes del tocado para otra. Sus abundantes riros, trenzados y retorcidos en el menor tamaño posible, quedaron libeados del elemento espumoso; la entera mujer quedó cuidadosamente seca y, con una conchita redonda que pasó de mano en mano, se ungieron con un aceite fragante, completándose sus adornos al pasarse por la cintura unos pocos pliegues sueltos de tappa blanco. Así arregladas, ya no vacilaron más, sino que se lanzaron con ligeza sobre las bataollas, y empezaron a juguetear vivamente por la cubierta. Muchas de ellas fueron a proa o corriendo por el bajacruces.
upon the bowsprit, or reclined at full length upon the boats. What a sight for us bachelor sailors! How avoid so dire a temptation? For who could think of tumbling these artless creatures overhead, when they had swum miles to welcome us?

Their appearance perfectly amazed me; their extreme youth, the light clear brown of their complexions, their delicate features, and inexpressibly graceful figures, their softly moulded limbs, and free unstudied action, seemed as strange as beautiful.

The Dolly was fairly captured; and never I will say was vessel carried before by such a dashing and irresistible party of boarders! The ship taken, we could not do otherwise than yield ourselves prisoners, and for the whole period that she remained in the bay, the Dolly, as well as her crew, were completely in the hands of the mermaids.

In the evening after we had come to an anchor the deck was illuminated with lanterns, and this picturesque band of sylphs, tricked out with flowers, and dressed in robes of variegated tapa, got up a ball in great style. These females are passionately fond of dancing, and in the wild grace and spirit of the style excel everything I have ever seen. The varied dances of the Marquesan girls are beautiful in the extreme, but there is an abandoned voluptuousness in their character which I dare not attempt to describe.

Our ship was now wholly given up to every species of riot and debauchery. Not the feeblest barrier was interposed between the unholy passions of the crew and their unlimited gratification. The grossest licentiousness and the most shameless inbreach prevailed, with occasional but short-lived interruptions, through the whole period of her stay. Alas for the poor savages when exposed to the influence of these polluting examples! Unsophisticated and confiding, they are easily led into every vice, and humanity weeps over the ruin thus remorselessly inflicted upon them by their European civilizers. Thrice happy are they who, inhabiting some yet undiscovered islands in the midst of the ocean, have never been brought into contaminating contact with the white man.
this same Rear-Admiral Du Petit Thouars. Four heavy, doublebanked frigates and three corvettes to frighten a parcel of naked heathen into submission! Sixty-eight pounders to demolish huts of coconuht boughs, and Congreve rockets to set on fire a few canoe sheds!

At Nukuheva, there were about one hundred soldiers ashore. They were encamped in tents, constructed of the old sails and spare spars of the squadron, within the limits of a redoubt mounted with a few nine-pounders, and surrounded with a fosse. Every other day, these troops were marched out in martial array, to a level piece of ground in the vicinity, and there for hours went through all sorts of military evolutions, surrounded by flocks of the natives, who looked on with savage admiration at the show, and as savage a hatred of the actors. A regiment of the Old Guard, reviewed on a summer’s day in the Champs Elysees, could not have made a more critically correct appearance. The officers’ regiments, resplendent with gold lace and embroidery as if purposely calculated to dazzle the islanders, looked as if just unpacked from their Parisian cases.

The expedition for the occupation of the Marquesas had sailed from Brest in the spring of 1842, and the secret of its destination was solely in the possession of its commander. No wonder that those who contemplated such a signal infraction of the rights of humanity should have sought to veil the enormity from the eyes of the world. And yet, notwithstanding their iniquitous conduct in this and in other matters, the French have ever plumed themselves upon the world. And yet, notwithstanding their iniquitous conduct in this and in other matters, the French have ever plumed themselves upon the world. And yet, notwithstanding their iniquitous conduct in this and in other matters, the French have ever plumed themselves upon the world.

One example of the shameless subterfuges under which the French stand prepared to defend whatever cruelties they may hereafter think fit to commit in bringing the Marquesan natives into subjection is well worthy of being recorded. On some flimsy pretext or other Mowanna, the king of Nukuheva, whom the invaders by extravagant presents had cajolled over to their interests, and move about like a mere puppet, has been set up as the rightful sovereign of the entire island—the alleged ruler by prescription of various clans, who for ages perhaps have treated with each other as separate nations. To reinstate this much-injured prince in the assumed dignities of his ancestors, the disinterested strangers have come all the way from France: they are determined that his title shall be acknowledged. If any tribe shall refuse to recognize the authority of the French, by bowing down to the laced chapeau of Mowanna, let them abide the consequences of their obstinacy. Under cover of a similar pretense, have the outrages and massacre

5

10

15

20

25

30

35

40

45

50

55

60

65
On this buccaneering expedition, Rear-Admiral Du Petit Thouars, leaving the rest of his squadron at the Marquesas,—which had then been occupied by his forces about five months,—set sail for the doomed island in the Reine Blanche frigate. On his arrival, as an indemnity for alleged insults offered to the flag of his country, he demanded some twenty or thirty thousand dollars to be placed in his hands forthwith, and in default of payment, threatened to land and take possession of the place.

The frigate, immediately upon coming to an anchor, got springs on her cables, and with her guns cast loose and her men at their quarters, lay in the circular basin of Papeete, with her broadside bearing upon the devoted town; while her numerous cutters, hauled in order alongside, were ready to effect a landing, under cover of her batteries. She maintained this belligerent attitude for several days, during which time a series of informal negotiations were pending, and wide alarm spread over the island. Many of the Tahitians were at first disposed to resort to arms, and drive the invaders from their shores; but more pacific and feeble counsels ultimately prevailed. The unfortunate queen Pomare, incapable of averting the impending calamity, terrified at the arrogance of the insolent Frenchman, and driven at last to despair, fled by night in a canoe to Emio.

During the continuance of the panic there occurred an instance of feminine heroism that I cannot omit to record.

In the grounds of the famous missionary consul, Pritchard, then absent in London, the consular flag of Britain waved as usual during the day, from a lofty staff planted within a few yards of the beach, and in full view of the frigate. One morning an officer, at the head of a party of men, presented himself at the verandah of Mr Pritchard’s house, and inquired in broken English for the lady his wife. The matron soon made herself at the verandah of Mr Pritchard’s house, and inquired in

Mrs Pritchard thinks not; and Rear-Admiral Du Petit Thouars is believed to be of the same opinion.

In esa expedición pirata, el contraalmirante Du Petit Thouars, dejando el resto de su escuadra en las Marquesas,—que entonces llevaban cinco meses ocupadas por sus fuerzas,— se hizo a la vela para la predestinada isla en la fragata Reine Blanche. A su llegada, como indemnización por presuntos insultos hechos a la bandera de su país, exigió unos veinte o treinta mil dólares, a poner inmediatamente en sus manos y, a falta de pago, amenazó desembarcar y tomar posesión del lugar.

En las propiedades del famoso cónsul misionero Pritchard, entonces ausente en Londres, ondeaba como de costumbre la bandera consular británica, durante el día, en una elevada asta plantada a pocos pasos de la playa, y a plena vista de la fragata. Una mañana, un oficial, a la cabeza de un grupo de hombres, se presentó en la veranda de la casa del señor Pritchard y, en mal inglés, preguntó por su señora esposa. Pronto apareció dicha matrona, y el galante francés, haciendo una de sus mejores reverencias, y jugando graciosamente con las aguilillas que bailaban sobre su pecho, pasó a exponer su misión en tono cortés: «El almirante deseaba que se arriara la bandera; tenía esperanza de que no habría inconveniente, y sus hombres estaban dispuestos a realizar esa misión».

—Dígale a ese pirata de su jefe—replicó la animosa inglesa, señalando a la bandera,—que si quiere arriar esos colores, tendrá que venir a hacerlo él mismo: no consentiré que lo haga nadie más.

Después, la dama hizo un saludo al anciano, y se retiró dentro de la casa. El derrotado oficial, al marcharse lentamente, observó la bandera, y notó que la cuerda que la elevaba a su sitio iba desde lo alto del mástil, a través del césped, hasta una ventana abierta en lo alto de la casa, donde la dama que acababa de retirarse estaba tranquilamente sentada haciendo punto. ¿Se arrió esa bandera? La señora Pritchard afirma que no, y se cree que el contraalmirante Du Petit Thouars es de la misma opinión.

La fragata, inmediatamente después de fondear, puso muelles en las cadenas de las anclas, y con los cañones montados y los hombres en su puesto, se instaló en la bahía circular de Papeete, con el costado apuntando a esa infeliz ciudad, mientras sus numerosas lanchas, arriadas en orden a su costado, estaban preparadas para realizar un desembarco, bajo la protección de sus baterías. Durante varios días mantuvo esa belicosa actitud, mientras que estaban en marcha una serie de negociaciones informales, y una amplia alarma se extendía por la isla. Muchos de los tahitianos, al principio, estaban dispuestos a recurrir a las armas, para expulsar a los invasores de sus ori- llas, pero acabaron por prevalecer opiniones más pacíficas y débi- les. La infortunada reina Pomare, incapaz de evitar la calamidad inminente, atormentada [29] por la arrogancia de los insolentes france- sés, y llevada por fin a la desesperación, huyó de noche a Emio en una canoa.

En el tiempo que duró el pánico hubo un caso de heroísmo femenino que no puedo dejar de anotar.

En esa expedición pirata, el contraalmirante Du Petit Thouars, dejando el resto de su escuadra en las Marquesas,—que entonces llevaban cinco meses ocupadas por sus fuerzas,— se hizo a la vela para la predestinada isla en la fragata Reine Blanche. A su llegada, como indemnización por presuntos insultos hechos a la bandera de su país, exigió unos veinte o treinta mil dólares, a poner inmediatamente en sus manos y, a falta de pago, amenazó desembarcar y tomar posesión del lugar.

La fragata, inmediatamente después de fondear, puso muelles en las cadenas de las anclas, y con los cañones montados y los hombres en su puesto, se instaló en la bahía circular de Papeete, con el costado apuntando a esa infeliz ciudad, mientras sus numerosas lanchas, arriadas en orden a su costado, estaban preparadas para realizar un desembarco, bajo la protección de sus baterías. Durante varios días mantuvo esa belicosa actitud, mientras que estaban en marcha una serie de negociaciones informales, y una amplia alarma se extendía por la isla. Muchos de los tahitianos, al principio, estaban dispues- tos a recurrir a las armas, para expulsar a los invasores de sus ori- llas, pero acabaron por prevalecer opiniones más pacíficas y débi- les. La infortunada reina Pomare, incapaz de evitar la calamidad inminente, atormentada [29] por la arrogancia de los insolentes france- sés, y llevada por fin a la desesperación, huyó de noche a Emio en una canoa.

En el tiempo que duró el pánico hubo un caso de heroísmo femenino que no puedo dejar de anotar.

En esa expedición pirata, el contraalmirante Du Petit Thouars, dejando el resto de su escuadra en las Marquesas,—que entonces llevaban cinco meses ocupadas por sus fuerzas,— se hizo a la vela para la predestinada isla en la fragata Reine Blanche. A su llegada, como indemnización por presuntos insultos hechos a la bandera de su país, exigió unos veinte o treinta mil dólares, a poner inmediatamente en sus manos y, a falta de pago, amenazó desembarcar y tomar posesión del lugar.

La fragata, inmediatamente después de fondear, puso muelles en las cadenas de las anclas, y con los cañones montados y los hombres en su puesto, se instaló en la bahía circular de Papeete, con el costado apuntando a esa infeliz ciudad, mientras sus numerosas lanchas, arriadas en orden a su costado, estaban preparadas para realizar un desembarco, bajo la protección de sus baterías. Durante varios días mantuvo esa belicosa actitud, mientras que estaban en marcha una serie de negociaciones informales, y una amplia alarma se extendía por la isla. Muchos de los tahitianos, al principio, estaban dispuestos a recurrir a las armas, para expulsar a los invasores de sus oríllas, pero acabaron por prevalecer opiniones más pacíficas y débiles. La infortunada reina Pomare, incapaz de evitar la calamidad inminente, atormentada [29] por la arrogancia de los insolentes franceses, y llevada por fin a la desesperación, huyó de noche a Emio en una canoa.

En el tiempo que duró el pánico hubo un caso de heroísmo femenino que no puedo dejar de anotar.
OUR ship had not been many days in the harbour of Nukuheva before I came to the determination of leaving her. That my reasons for resolving to take this step were numerous and weighty, may be inferred from the fact that I chose rather to risk my fortunes among the savages of the island than to endure another voyage on board the Dolly. To use the concise, pointblank phrase of the sailors. I had made up my mind of the island than to endure another voyage on board the Dolly. To use resolving to take this step were numerous and weighty, may be inferred before I came to the determination of leaving her. That my reasons for

Away in barrels; affording a never-ending variety in their different

An abundance of dainties. Delicate morsels of beef and pork, cut on

Some long-haired, bare-necked youths, who, forced by the

But what a dismal prospect awaited us in this quarter! The lon-

From them by the due completion of the term of our servitude. The usage on board of her

The usage on board of her

The very preparations made for one of these expeditions are enough to frighten one. As the vessel carries out no cargo, her

To whom could we apply for redress? We had left both law and equity on the other side of the Cape; and unforte-

But, after all, these things could have been endured awhile, had we entertained the hope of being speedily delivered from them by the due completion of the term of our servitude. But what a dismal prospect awaited us in this quarter! The lon-

The very preparations made for one of these expeditions are enough to frighten one. As the vessel carries out no cargo, her

The very preparations made for one of these expeditions are enough to frighten one. As the vessel carries out no cargo, her

(*) Como «señor de horca y cuchillo», con potestad para condenar a muerte, por ejercitarse la sentencia haciendo avanzar al reo por una tabla saliente hasta que caña.
(**) Frederick Marryat (1792-1848), autor de famosas novelas de mar, como Pedro el Simple y El Guardiamarina Easy.
ties. Choice old water too, decanted into stout six-barrel-casks, and two pints of which is allowed every day to each soul on board; together with ample store of sea-bread, previously reduced to a state of petrifaction, with a view to preserve it either from decay or consumption in the ordinary mode, are likewise provided for the nourishment and gastronomic enjoyment of the crew.

But not to speak of the quality of these articles of sailors' fare, the abundance in which they are put onboard a whaling vessel is almost incredible. Oftentimes, when we had occasion to break out in the hold, and I beheld the successive tiers of casks and barrels, whose contents were all destined to be consumed in due course by the ship's company, my heart has sunk within me.

Although, as a general case, a ship unlucky in falling in with whales continues to cruise after them until she has barely sufficient provisions remaining to take her home, turning round then quietly and making the best of her way to her friends, yet there are instances when even this natural obstacle to the further prosecution of the voyage is overcome by headstrong captains, who, bartering the fruits of their hard-earned toils for a new supply of provisions in some of the ports of Chili or Peru, begin the voyage afresh with unabated zeal and perseverance. It is in vain that the owners write urgent letters to him to sail for home, and for their sake to bring back the ship, since it appears he can put nothing in her. Not he. He has registered a vow: he will fill his vessel with good sperm oil, or failing to do so, never again strike Yankee soundings.

I heard of one whaler, which after many years' absence was given up for lost. The last that had been heard of her was a report of her having touched at some of those unstable islands in the far Pacific, whose eccentric wanderings are carefully noted in each new edition of the South-Sea charts. After a long interval, however, 'The Perseverance'—for that was her name—was spoken somewhere in the vicinity of the ends of the earth, cruising along as leisurely as ever, her sails all bepatched and be quilted with rope-yarns, her spars fished with old pipe staves, and her rigging knotted and spliced in every possible direction. Her crew was composed of some twenty venerable Greenwich-pensioner-looking old salts, who just managed to hobble about deck. The ends of all the running ropes, with the exception of the signal halyards and poop-down-haul, were rove through snatch-blocks, and led to the capstan or windlass, so that not a yard was braced or a sail set without the assistance of machinery.

Her hull was encrusted with barnacles, which completely encased her. Three petrels followed in her wake, and every day came alongside to regale themselves from the contents of the cook's bucket, which were pitched over to them. A vast shool of bonnetas and albicores always kept her company.

Such was the account I heard of this vessel and the remembrance of it always haunted me; what eventually became of her I never learned; at any rate: he never reached home, and I suppose she is still regularly tacking twice in the twenty-four hours somewhere off Desolate Island, or the Devil's-Tail Peak.

Having said thus much touching the usual length of these voyages, when I inform the reader that ours had as it were just commenced, we being only fifteen months out, and even at that time hailed as a late arrival and boarded for news, he will readily perceive that there was little to encourage one in looking forward to the future, especially as I had always had a presentiment that we should make an unfortunate voyage, and our experience so far had justified the expectation.

dades salinas. Selecta agua afeja, también, depositada en toneles de seis barrels*, y de la cual se conceden dos pintas por día a cada alma de a bordo, junto con amplia reserva de pan marino, previamente reducido a un estado de petrifacción, con el fin de preservarlo de corrupción o desgaste al modo ordinario, se preparan igualmente para la nutrición y deleite gastronómico de los tripulantes.

Pero, además, habría que hablar de la calidad de los artículos para el consumo marinero que, en abundancia casi increíble, se llevan a bordo de un barco ballenero. A menudo, cuando teníamos ocasión de entrar en la sentina y observaba yo las filas seguidas de toneles y barrotes cuyo contenido estaba todo él destinado a ser consumido en su debido momento por los tripulantes del buque, el corazón se me hundía por dentro.

Aunque, por lo general, un barco que no tenga suerte en encontrar ballenas continúa su cruceo en persecución de ellas hasta que le quedan apenas provisiones para volver al puerto, regresando entonces y apresurándose cuanto antes a llegar junto a sus amigos, hay casos en que tercos capitanes superan incluso ese obstáculo natural para la continuación de su viaje y, maltratando los frutos de sus duros esfuerzos en cambio de una nueva reserva de provisiones en alguno de los puertos de Chile o de Perú, empiezan otra vez el viaje con intrépido celo y perseverancia. Es vano que los propietarios escriban cartas urgentes para que el capitán vuelva al puerto y, en atención a ellos, haga regresar el barco, ya que parece que no puede meter nada en él. No lo hará. He hecho un voto: llenará su buque con buen aceite de cachalote, o si no es capaz, jamás volverá a tocar las orillas yanquis.

He oído decir de un ballenero al que, al cabo de muchos años de ausencia, se daba por perdido. Lo último que se había sabido de él era un informe nebuloso de que había tocado en alguna de esas islas inestables del más remoto Pacífico, cuyos excéntricos vagabundos se anotan cuidadosamente en cada nueva edición [33] de las cartas del Mar del Sur. Sin embargo, tras un largo intervalo, se dijo que el Perseverancia —pues tal era su nombre— andaba por algún lugar en la cercanía de los extremos de la tierra, continuando su travesía con el sosiego de siempre, con las velas todas remendadas y acolchadas de filásticas, las vergas empalmadas con repuestos viejos para toneles, y la caballería anudada y atada en todos los sentidos posibles. Su tripulación se componía de veinte viejos lobos de mar, venerables ancianos con aspecto de pensionados de Greenwich, que apenas se las arreglaban para renquear por cubierta. Los extremos de todas las jarcias de labor, con la excepción de la driza de señales, y la cargadora de popa, estaban enfilados en pastejas, pasando al cabrestante o al molinete, de modo que no se braseaba una verga ni se largaba una vela sin ayuda de maquinaria.

Su casco estaba incrustedo de lapas que lo envolvían completamente. Tres tiburones predilectos lo seguían en su estela, y todos los días acudían junto al barco para regalarse con el contenido del cubo del cocinero, que se les vertía para ellos. Una vasta manada de bonnetas y albicores siempre le acompañaba.

Tal fue la noticia que tuve de este barco, cuyo recuerdo siempre me obsesionó: nunca supe qué fue por fin de él; en todo caso, jamás volvió al puerto, y supongo que seguirá vibrando con regularidad dos veces al día por algún sitio a la altura de la isla Bugerry, o por el pico de la Cola del Diablo.

Dicho esto sobre la duración usual de estos viajes, si informo al lector de que el nuestro estaba apenas comenzado, como quien dice, a los quince meses de zarpar, y que aun entonces se le saludaba como si llegara con retraso y se le abordaba en busca de noticias, en seguida percibirá que había poco para animar a quien mirara al porvenir, sobre todo dado que yo siempre había tenido el presentimiento de que haríamos un viaje infortunado, y nuestra experiencia hasta entonces había justificado esa previsión.
I may here state, and on my faith as an honest man, that though more than three years have elapsed since I left this same identical vessel, she still continues; in the Pacific, and but a few days since I saw her reported in the papers as having touched at the Sandwich Islands previous to going on the coast of Japan.

But to return to my narrative. Placed in these circumstances then, with no prospect of matters mending if I remained aboard the Dolly, I at once made up my mind to leave her: to be sure it was rather an inglorious thing to steal away privily from those at whose hands I had received wrongs and outrages that I could not resent; but how was such a course to be avoided when it was the only alternative left me? Havéndome decidido, comenzé a adquirir toda la información que pudiera obtener respecto a la isla y sus habitantes, con intención de formar consecuencia mis planes de escapatatoria. Ahora presentaré el resultado de esas investigaciones, para que se entienda mejor el posterior relato.

The bay of Nukuheva in which we were then lying is an expanse of water not unlike in figure the space included within the limits of a horse-shoe. It is, perhaps, nine miles in circumference. You approach it from the sea by a narrow entrance, flanked on each side by two small twin islets which soar conically to the height of some five hundred feet. From these the shore recedes on both hands, and describes a deep semicircle.

The houses of the natives, constructed of the yellow bamboo, tastefully twisted together in a kind of wicker-work, and thatched with the long tapering leaves of the palmetto, are scattered irregularly among these valleys beneath the shady branches of the cocoanut trees. Nothing can exceed the imposing scenery of this bay.

Viewed from our ship as she lay at anchor in the middle of the harbour, it presented the appearance of a vast natural amphitheatre in decay, and overgrown with vines, the deep glens that furrowed it’s sides appearing like enormous fissures caused by the ravages of time. Very often when lost in admiration at its beauty, I have experienced a pang of regret that a scene so enchanting should be hidden from the world in these remote seas, and seldom meet the eyes of devoted lovers of nature.

Besides this bay the shores of the island are indented by several other extensive inlets, into which descend broad and verdant valleys. These are inhabited by as many distinct tribes of savages, who, although speaking kindred dialects of a common language, and having the same religion and laws, have from time immemorial waged hereditary warfare against each other. The intervening mountains generally two or three thousand feet above the level of the sea geographically define the territories of each of these

La bahía de Nukuheva, en que estábamos fondeados entonces, es una extensión de agua de figura semejante al espacio que queda dentro de una herradura. Quizá tenga nueve millas de circunferencia. Se llega a ella desde el mar por una estrecha entrada, flanqueada a ambos lados por dos islotes gemelos que se elevan en forma cónica hasta la altura de unos quinientos pies. Desde esos islotes la orilla se va retirando a ambos lados, hasta describir un profundo semicírculo.

Desde el borde del agua, la tierra sube uniformemente por todos los lados, con prominencias verdes y en pendiente, hasta que, desde laderas que se alzan dulcemente, y desde elevaciones moderadas, se hinchá insensiblemente en alturas soberanas y majestuosas, cuyos contornos azules, alineados en torno, cierran la perspectiva. El hermoso aspecto de la orilla queda realzado por profundas y románticas cañadas, que descienden hasta ella a distancias casi iguales, todas, al parecer, irradiando de un centro común, y con sus extremos superiores perdiéndose de vista bajo la sombra de las montañas. Por cada uno de esos pequeños valles desciende un claro arroyo, que asume acá y allá la forma de una esbelta cascada, y luego se desliza invisible hasta que vuelve a irrompír a la vista en cataratas mayores y más ruidosas y, por fin, se marcha modestamente hacia el mar.

Las casas de los indígenas, construidas con el amarillo bambú, entretejido con mucho gusto en una suerte de labor de cestería, y cubiertas con las largas hojas adelgazadas de la palma, se desponen irregularmente por esos valles bajo las umbrales ramas de los cocoteros.

Nada puede superar el imponente escenario de esta bahía. Vista desde nuestro barco, fondeado en medio de la ensenada, presentaba el aspecto de un vasto anfiteatro natural en ruina y, recubiertas de viña silvestre, las profundas cañadas que surcaban sus lados parecían enormes grietas causadas por los estragos del tiempo. Muchas veces, al perderme en admiración ante su belleza, he experimentado una punzada de dolor por que una escena tan seductora esté oculta al mundo en esos mares remotos, apareciendo raramente ante los ojos de los amantes sinceros de la naturaleza. [35]

Más allá de esta bahía, las orillas de la isla están melladas por otros varios entrantes extensos, a los que descienden valles amplios y verdesantes. Éstos los habitan muchas tribus diversas de salvajes, que, aunque hablan dialectos afines de una lengua común, y tienen la misma religión y leyes, desde hace tiempo inmemorial están en guerra hereditaria unas contra otras. Las montañas interpuestas, generalmente a dos o tres mil pies sobre el nivel del mar, definen geográficamente los territorios de cada una de esas tribus hostiles
hostile tribes, who never cross them, save on some expedition of war or plunder. Immediately adjacent to Nukuheva, and only sepa-
rated from it by the mountains seen from the harbour, lies the lovely
valley of Happar, whose inmates cherish the most friendly relations
with the inhabitants of Nukuheva. On the other side of Happar, and
closely adjoining it, is the magnificent valley of the dreaded Typees,
the unapproachable enemies of both these tribes.

These celebrated warriors appear to inspire the other islanders with unspeakable terrors. Their very name is a frightful one; for
the word ‘Typee’ in the Marquesan dialect signifies a lover of
human flesh. It is rather singular that the title should have been bestowed upon them exclusively, inasmuch as the natives of all this
group are irreclaimable cannibals. The name may, perhaps, have been
given to denote the peculiar ferocity of this clan, and to con-
vey a special stigma along with it.

These same Typees enjoy a prodigious notoriety all over the
islands. The natives of Nukuheva would frequently recount in
pantomime to our ship’s company their terrible feats, and would
show the marks of wounds they had received in desperate encoun-
ters with them. When ashore they would try to frighten us by point-
ing, to one of their own number, and calling him a Typee, manifest-
ing no little surprise that we did not take to our heels at so terrible
an announcement. It was quite amusing, too, to see with what ear-
nestness they disclaimed all cannibal propensities on their own part,
while they denounced their enemies—the Typees—as inveterate
gourmandizers of human flesh; but this is a peculiarity to which I
shall hereafter have occasion to allude.

Although I was convinced that the inhabitants of our bay
were as arrant cannibals as any of the other tribes on the island, still
I could not but feel a particular and most unqualified repugnance to
the aforesaid Typees. Even before visiting the Marquesas, I
had heard from men who had touched at the group on former voyages
some revolting stories in connection with these savages; and fresh
in my remembrance was the adventure of the master of the Katherine,
who only a few months previous, imprudently venturing into this bay
in an armed boat for the purpose of barter, was seized by the
natives, carried back a little distance into their valley, and was only
saved from a cruel death by the intervention of a young girl, who
facilitated his escape by night along the beach to Nukuheva.

I had heard too of an English vessel that many years ago,
after a weary cruise, sought to enter the bay of Nukuheva, and arriv-
ing within two or three miles of the land, was met by a large canoe
filled with natives, who offered to lead the way to the place of their
destination. The captain, unacquainted with the localities of the is-
land, joyfully acceded to the proposition—the canoe paddled on,
the ship followed. She was soon conducted to a beautiful inlet, and
dropped her anchor in its waters beneath the shadows of the lofty
shore. That same night the perfidious Typees, who had thus inveigled
her into their fatal bay, flocked aboard the doomed vessel by hun-
dreds, and at a given signal murdered every soul on board.

I shall never forget the observation of one of our crew
as we were passing slowly by the entrance of the bay in our
way to Nukuheva. As we stood gazing over the side at the
verdant headlands, Ned, pointing with his hand in the direc-
tion of the treacherous valley, exclaimed, ‘There—there’s Typee.
Oh, the bloody cannibals, what a meal they’d make of
us if we were to take it into our heads to land! but they say
they don’t like sailor’s flesh, it’s too salt. I say, maty, how
should you like to be shoved ashore there, eh?’ I little thought,
as I shuddered at the question, that in the space of a few weeks
I should actually be a captive in that self-same valley.

Los taipis disfrutan de prodigiosa fama por todas aquellas
islas. Los indígenas de Nukuheva frecuentemente relataban en
pantomima a la tripulación de nuestro barco sus terribles haz-
as, y mostraban las señales de heridas que habían recibido en
desesperados encuentros con ellos. Cuando estábamos en tierra,
os asustaban señalando a uno de ellos mismos y llamándole
«un taipi», con no poca sorpresa al ver que no echábamos a co-
rrer ante tan terrible anuncio. Era muy divertido, también, ver
con qué seriedad negaban toda inclinación caníbalesca por su
propia parte, mientras que denunciaban a sus enemigos los taipis
como empedernidos saboreadores de carne humana; pero a esta
peculiaridad tendrán luego ocasión de aludir.

Aunque yo estaba convencido de que los habitantes de nuestra
bahía eran tan redomados caníbales como cualquier otra tribu de la
isla, no podía dejar de sentir una repugnancia particular y más com-
pleta hacia los mencionados taipis. Aun antes de llegar a las Mar-
quesas, había oído contar, a marineros que habían tocado en el archipiél-
ago en viajes anteriores, ciertas historias repugnantes en relación con esos
salvajes; y estaba fresco en mi memoria lo que le pasó al patrón [36] del
Catalina, quien, sólo pocos meses antes, se aventuró imprudentemente en
esa bahía en una embarcación armada con el propósito de traficar, y fue
capturado por los indígenas, llevado a cierta distancia, por su valle, salván-
dose sólo de muerte cruel por la intervención de una muchacha, que le
facilitó la huida de noche por la playa de Nukuheva.

Había oído hablar también de un barco inglés que, hacía muchos
años, tras de una fatigosa travesía, trató de entrar en la bahía de
Nukuheva, y al llegar a dos o tres millas de tierra, le salió al encuen-
tro una gran canoa llena de indígenas que ofrecieron señalarle el ca-
mino hasta su lugar de destino. El capitán, no conociendo los lugares
de la isla, aceptó gozosamente la proposición: la canoa comenzó a
remar y el barco la siguió. Pronto fue llevado a un hermoso entorno,
echando el ancla en sus aguas a la sombra de la alta orilla. Esa misma
noche, los pérforidos taipis, que así le habían engañado llevándole a su
bahía fatal, abordaron a centenares el predestinado barco y, a una
señal convenida, mataron a todos los hombres de a bordo.

Jamás olvidaré la observación de uno de nuestros tripulantes
cuando pasábamos lentamente ante la entrada de esta bahía, de ca-
mino a Nukuheva. Mientras permanecíamos mirando sobre las amu-
rallas hacia los verdescentes promontorios, Ned señaló con la mano
en dirección al valle traidor, y exclamó:

—¡Allí, allí está Taipi! ¡Ah, esos sanguinarios caníbales, qué comida
harían con nosotros si se nos metiera en la cabeza desembarcar! Pero digan
que no les gusta la carne de marinero: está demasiado salada. Eh, compa-
niero, ¿qué te parecería que te echaran a tierra aquí, eh?

Poco pensé, estremececido ante la pregunta, que al cabo de pocas
semanas yo sería efectivamente prisionero en ese mismísimo valle.
The French, although they had gone through the ceremony of hoisting their colours for a few hours at all the principal places of the group, had not as yet visited the bay of Typee, anticipating a fierce resistance on the part of the savages there, which for the present at least they wished to avoid. Perhaps they were not a little influenced in the adoption of this unusual policy from a recollection of the warlike reception given by the Typees to the forces of Captain Porter, about the year 1814, when that brave and accomplished officer endeavoured to subjugate the clan merely to gratify the moral hatred of his allies the Nukuhevas and Happars.

On that occasion I have been told that a considerable detachment of sailors and marines from the frigate Essex, accompanied by at least two thousand warriors of Happar and Nukuheva, landed in boats and canoes at the head of the bay, and after penetrating a little distance into the valley, met with the stoutest resistance from its inmates. Valiantly, although with much loss, the Typees disputed every inch of ground, and after some hard fighting obliged their assailants to retreat and abandon their design of conquest.

The invaders, on their march back to the sea, consigned themselves for their repulse by setting fire to every house and temple in their route; and a long line of smoking ruins defaced the once-smiling bosom of the valley, and proclaimed to its pagan inhabitants the spirit that reigned in the breasts of Christian soldiers. Who can wonder at the deadly hatred of the Typees to all foreigners after such unprovoked atrocities?

Thus it is that they whom we denominate ‘savages’ are made to deserve the title. When the inhabitants of some sequestered island first descry the ‘big canoe’ of the European rolling through the blue waters towards their shores, they rush down to the beach in crowds, and with open arms stand ready to embrace the strangers. Fatal embrace! They fold to their bosom the vipers whose sting is destined to poison all their joys; and the instinctive feeling of love within their breast is soon converted into the bitterest hate.

The enormities perpetrated in the South Seas upon some of the inoffensive islanders will nigh pass belief. These things are seldom proclaimed at home; they happen at the very ends of the earth; they are done in a corner, and there are none to reveal them. But there is, nevertheless, many a petty trader that has navigated the Pacific whose course from island to island might be traced by a series of cold-blooded robberies, kidnappings, and murders, the iniquity of which might be considered almost sufficient to sink her guilty timbers to the bottom of the sea.

Sometimes vague accounts of such thing’s reach our fire-sides, and we cooly censure them as wrong, impolite, needlessly severe, and dangerous to the crews of other vessels. How different is our tone when we read the highly-wrought description of the massacre of the crew of the Hobomak by the Feejeees; how we sympathize for the unhappy victims, and with what horror do we regard the diabolical heathens, who, after all, have but avenged the unprovoked injuries which they have received. We breathe nothing but vengeance, and equip armed vessels to traverse thousands of miles of ocean in order to execute summary punishment upon the offenders. On arriving at their destination, they burn, slaughter, and destroy, according to the tenor of written instructions, and sailing away from the scene of devastation, call upon all Christendom to applaud their courage and their justice.

How often is the term ‘savages’ incorrectly applied! None really deserving of it were ever yet discovered by voyagers or by travellers. They have discovered heathens and barbarians whom by horrible cruelties they have exasperated into savages. It may be asserted without fear of contradictions that in all the cases of outrages where they have exasperated without fear of contradictions that in all the cases of outrages the French, although they had visitado la bahía de Taipi, esperando una feroz resistencia, por parte de los salvajes de allí, que por el momento deseaban evitar. Quizá les influyó algo en su adopción de tan insólita política el recuerdo de un bélico recibimiento dado por los taipis a las fuerzas del capitán Poner, hacia el año 1814, cuando ese valiente y cumplido oficial trató de subyugar al clan sólo para satisfacer el odio morral de sus aliados los nukuhevas y los happars.

En esa ocasión, me han dicho que un considerable destacamento de marineros e infantes de marina de la fragata Essex, acompañados al menos por dos mil guerilleros de Happar y Nukuheva, desembarcaron en lanchas y canoas en el [37] cabo de la playa, y tras penetrar un poco en el valle, encontraron la más recia resistencia por parte de sus habitantes. Con valentía, aunque con muchas perdiditas, los taipis disputaron cada pulgada del terreno y, tras duras luchas, obligaron a sus asaltantes a retirarse y abandonar su diseño de conquista.

Los invasores, en su marcha de regreso al mar, se consolaron de su rechazo pegando fuego a todas las casas y templos en el camino, y una larga línea de ruinas humeantes manchó el seno del valle, antes sonriente, y proclamó a sus habitantes paganos el espíritu que reinaba en los pechos de los soldados cristianos. ¿Quién se puede extrañar del odio mortal de los taipis a todos los extranjeros, después de tales atrocidades sin provocación?

Así es como a aquellos a quienes denominamos «salvajes» les hemos merecido tal título. Cuando los habitantes de alguna apartada isla avistan por primera vez la «gran canoa» de los europeos meciéndose por las aguas azules hacia sus orillas, se precipitan en multitud a la playa, y se disponen a recibir a los extranjeros con los brazos abiertos. ¡Fatal abrazo! Abrigan en sus pechos víboras cuya mordedura está destinada a envenenar todos los goces, y el instintivo sentimiento de amor que hay en sus pechos pronto se convierte en el más amargo odio.

Las atrocidades perpetradas en los mares del Sur contra algunos de sus inofensivos isleños superan lo creíble. Esas cosas raramente se hacen saber en la patria: ocurren en los extremos de la tierra; se hacen en un rincón, y no hay nadie que las revele. Pero hay, no obstante, muchos pequeños buques mercantes que han navegado por el Pacífico, y cuyo rumbo de isla en isla podría rastrearse por una serie de robos a sangre fría, secuestros y asesinatos, cuya iniquidad parecería casi suficiente como para hundir sus empecesadas cuadernas al fondo del mar.

A veces, vagas noticias de tales cosas nos llegan hasta nuestra conversación junto al fuego, y las censuramos fríamente como erróneas, impolíticas, superfleuamente severas, y peligrosas para las tripulaciones de otros barcos. ¿Qué diferente es nuestro tono cuando leemos la exagerada descripción de la matanza de los tripulantes del Hobomak por los fidijanos; cómo simpatizamos con las infelices víctimas, y con qué horror consideramos a los diabólicos paganos que, después de todo, no han hecho más que vengar las injusticias no provocadas que han recibido! Respiramos sólo venganza, y equipamos buques armados para que atraviesen miles de millas de océano con el fin de infligir castigo sumario contra los ofensores. Al llegar a su destino, queman, matan y destruyen, a tenor de sus [38] instrucciones escritas, y zarpan de la escena de devastación, invitan a toda la Cristiandad a aplaudir su valor y su justicia.

¡Cuántas veces se aplica incorrectamente el término «salvajes»! Todavía no han descubierto los viajeros ni los expedicionarios nada que lo merezca realmente. Han descubierto paganos y bárbaros a quienes han exasperado con horribles crueldades, haciéndoles convertirse en salvajes. Se puede afirmar sin miedo a la contradicción...
complied by Polynesians, Europeans have at some time or other been the aggressors, and that the cruel and bloodthirsty disposition of some of the islanders is mainly to be ascribed to the influence of such examples.

But to return. Owing to the mutual hostilities of the different tribes I have mentioned, the mountainous tracts which separate their respective territories remain altogether uninhabited; the natives invariably dwelling in the depths of the valleys, with a view of securing themselves from the predatory incursions of their enemies, who often lurk along their borders, ready to cut off any imprudent straggler, or make a descent upon the inmates of some sequester habitatation. I several times met with very aged men, who from this cause had never passed the confines of their native vale, some of them having never even ascended midway up the mountains in the whole course of their lives, and who, accordingly had little idea of the appearance of any other part of the island, the whole of which is not perhaps more than sixty miles in circuit. The little space in which some of these clans pass away their days would seem almost incredible.

The glen of the Tior will furnish a curious illustration of this. The inhabited part is not more than four miles in length, and varies in breadth from half a mile to less than a quarter. The rocky vine-clad cliffs on one side tower almost perpendicularly from their base to the height of at least fifteen hundred feet, while across the vale—in striking contrast to the scenery opposite—grass-grown elevations rise one above another in blooming terraces. Hemmed in by these stupendous barriers, the valley would be altogether shut out from the rest of the world, were it not that it is accessible from the sea at one end, and by a narrow defile at the other.

The impression produced upon the mind, when I first visited this beautiful glen, will never be obliterated.

I had come from Nukuheva by water in the ship’s boat, and when we entered the bay of Tior it was high noon. The heat had been intense, as we had been floating upon the long smooth swell of the ocean, for there was but little wind. The sun’s rays had expended all their fury upon us; and to add to our discomfort, we had omitted to supply ourselves with water previous to starting. What with heat and thirst together, I became so impatient of reaching the open ground in the vicinity of the sea, and plunged, diver fashion, into the recesses of the first grove that offered.

What a delightful sensation did I experience! I felt as if floating in some new element, while all sort of gurgling, trickling, liquid sounds fell upon my ear. People may say what they will about the gorgoteos, and excitantes sonidos líquidos. La gente dirá lo que quiera sobre el efecto refrescante de un baño de agua fría, pero a mí que me estaba sudando, los baños de sombra de Tior, bajo los coconaut trees, and amidst the cool delightful atmosphere which surrounds them.

How shall I describe the scenery that met my eye, as I looked out from this verdant recess! The narrow valley, with its steep and close adjoining sides draped with vines, and arched overhead with a fret-work of interlacing boughs, nearly hidden from view by masses of leafy verdure, seemed from where I stood like an immense arbour disclosing its vista to the eye, whilst as I advanced it insensibly widened into the loveliest vale eye ever beheld.

It so happened that the very day I was in Tior the French admiral, attended by all the boats of his squadron, came down in state from Nukuheva to take formal possession of the place. He remained in the valley about two hours, during which time he had a
cereemonial interview with the king. The patriarch-sovereign of Tior was a man very far advanced in years; but though age had bowed his form and rendered him almost decrepit, his gigantic frame retained its original magnitude and grandeur of appearance.

He advanced slowly and with evident pain, assisting his tottering steps with the heavy war spear he held in his hand, and attended by a group of grey-bearded chiefs, on one of whom he occasionally leaned for support. The admiral came forward with head uncovered and extended hand, while the old king saluted him by a stately flourish of his weapon. The next moment they stood side by side, these two extremes of the social scale,—the polished, splendid Frenchman, and the poor tattooed savage. They were both tall and noble-looking men; but in other respects how strikingly contrasted! Du Petit Thouars exhibited upon his person all the paraphernalia of his naval rank. He wore a richly decorated admiral’s frock-coat, a laced chapeau bras, and upon his breast were a variety of ribbons and orders; while the simple islander, with the exception of a slight cincture about his loins, appeared in all the nakedness of nature.

At what an immeasurable distance, thought I, are these two beings removed from each other. In the one is shown the result of long centuries of progressive Civilization and refinement, which have gradually converted the mere creature into the semblance of all that is elevated and grand; while the other, after the lapse of the same period, has not advanced one step in the career of improvement. ‘Yet, after all,’ quoth I to myself, ‘insensible as he is to a thousand wants, and removed from harassing cares, may not the savage be the happier man of the two?” Such were the thoughts that arose in my mind as I gazed upon the novel spectacle before me. In truth it was an impressive one, and little likely to be effaced. I can recall even now with vivid distinctness every feature of the scene. The umbrageous shades where the interview took place—the gloriously tropical vegetation around—the picturesque grouping of the mingled throng of soldiery and natives—and even the golden-hued bunch of bananas that I held in my hand at the time, and of which I occasionally partook while making the aforesaid philosophical reflections.

CHAPTER FIVE

THOUGHTS PREVIOUS TO ATTEMPTING AN ESCAPE—

TOBY, A FELLOW SAILOR, AGREES TO SHARE THE ADVENTURE—LAST NIGHT ABOARD THE SHIP

HAVING fully resolved to leave the vessel clandestinely, and having acquired all the knowledge concerning the bay that I could obtain under the circumstances in which I was placed, I now deliberately turned over in my mind every plan to escape that suggested itself, being determined to act with all possible prudence in an attempt where failure would be attended with so many disagreeable consequences. The idea of being taken and brought back ignominiously to the ship was so inexpressibly repulsive to me, that I was determined by no hasty and imprudent measures to render such an event probable.

I knew that our worthy captain, who felt, such a paternal solicitude for the welfare of his crew, would not willingly consent that one of his best hands should encounter the perils of a sojourner among the natives of a barbarous island; and I was certain that in the event of my disappearance, his fatherly anxiety would prompt him to offer, by way of a reward, yard upon yard of gaily printed calico for my apprehension. He might even have appreciated my services at the value of a musket, in which case I felt perfectly certain that the whole population of the bay would be immediately upon my track, incited by the prospect of so magnificent a bounty.
Having ascertained the fact before alluded to, that the islanders,—from motives of precaution, dwelt altogether in the depths of the valleys, and avoided wandering about the more elevated portions of the shore, unless bound on some expedition of war or plunder, I concluded that if I could effect unperceived a passage to the mountain, I might easily remain among them, supporting myself by such fruits as came in my way until the sailing of the ship, an event of which I could not fail to be immediately apprised, as from my lofty position I should command a view of the entire harbour.

The idea pleased me greatly. It seemed to combine a great deal of practicability with no incomconsiderable enjoyment in a quiet way; for how delightful it would be to look down upon the detested old vessel from the height of some thousand feet, and contrast the verdant scenery about me with the recollection of her narrow decks and gloomy forecastle! Why, it was really refreshing even to think of it; and so I straightway fell to picturing myself seated beneath a cocoanut tree on the brow of the mountain, with a cluster of plantains within easy reach, criticizing her nautical evolutions as she was working her way out of the harbour.

To be sure there was one rather unpleasant drawback to these agreeable anticipations—the possibility of falling in with a foraging party of these same bloody-minded Types, whose appetites, edged perhaps by the air of so elevated a region, might prompt them to devour one. This, I must confess, was a most disagreeable view of the matter.

Había decidido no comunicar mi designio de escaparme del barco a ninguno de mis compañeros, y mucho menos solicitar a ninguno que me acompañara. Pero ocurrió una noche que, estando en cubierta, y dando vueltas en mi ánimo a diversos planes de escapatoria, observé a uno de los tripulantes del barco asomado a las amuradas, al parecer sumido en profundo ensueño. [43] Era un muchacho como de mi edad, por quien siempre había sentido yo una gran consideración, y que Toby, quien así se le llamaba, le había dejado en los saltos, pues nunca quiso decírselo su verdadero nombre, lo merecía en todos los sentidos. Era activo, dispuesto y servicial, de valor intrépido, y singularmente abierto y sin miedo en la expresión de sus sentimientos. En más de una ocasión le había sacado yo de los conflictos en que esto le había metido, y no sé si por esta causa, o por cierta afinidad de sentimientos entre nosotros, siempre había mostrado gran preferencia por mi compañía. Muchas largas guardias habíamos pasado juntos, engañando las horas fatigosas con charlas, cantos y cuentos, mezclados con numerosas maldiciones contra el duro destino que parecía debíamos afrontar en común.

I had determined not to communicate my design of withdrawing from the vessel to any of my shipmates, and least of all to solicit any one to accompany me in my flight. But it so happened one night, that being upon deck, revolving over in my mind various plans of escape, I perceived one of the ship’s company leaning over the bulwarks, apparently plunged in a profound reverie. He was a young fellow about my own age, for whom I had all along entertained a great regard; and Toby, such was the name which he went among us, for his real name he would never tell us, was every way worthy of it. He was active, ready and obliging, of dauntless courage, and singularly open and fearless in the expression of his feelings. I had on more than one occasion got him out of scrapes into which this had led him; and I know not whether it was from this cause, or a certain congeniality of sentiment between us, that he had always shown a partiality for my society. We had battled out many a long watch together, beguiling the weary hours with chat, song, and story, mingled with a good many imprecations upon the hard destiny it seemed our common fortune to encounter.

Toby, like myself, had evidently moved in a different sphere of life, and his conversation at times betrayed this, although he was anxious to conceal it. He was one of that class of rovers you sometimes meet at sea, who never reveal their origin, never allude to home, and go rambling over the world as if pursued by some mysterious fate they cannot possibly elude.

Toby, como yo, se había movido, evidentemente, en otra esfera de vida, y su conversación a veces lo revelaba, aunque él parecía empeñado en ocultarlo. Era uno de esa clase de vagabundos que a veces se encuentran en el mar, que nunca revelan su origen, nunca aluden a su casa, y anclan vagando por el mundo como si les persiguiera un hado misterioso que no les fuera posible eludir.

There was much even in the appearance of Toby calculated to draw me towards him, for while the greater part of the crew were as coarse in person as in mind, Toby was endowed with a remarkably prepossessing exterior. Arrayed in his blue
frock and duck trousers, he was as smart a looking sailor as ever stepped upon a deck; he was singularly small and slightly made, with great flexibility of limb. His naturally dark complexion had been deepened by exposure to the tropical sun, and a mass of jetty locks clustered about his temples, and threw a darker shade into his large black eyes. He was a strange wayward being, moody, fitful, and melancholy—at times almost morose. He had a quick and fiery temper too, which, when thoroughly roused, transported him into a state bordering on delirium.

It is strange the power that a mind of deep passion has over feeble natures. I have seen a brawny, fellow, with no lack of ordinary courage, fairly quail before this slender stripling, when in one of his curious fits. But these paroxysms seldom occurred, and in them he big-hearted shipmate vented the bile which more calm-tempered individuals get rid of by a continual pettishness at trivial annoyances.

But the attempt was so perilous in the place where we then lay, that I supposed myself the only individual on board the ship who was sufficiently reckless to think of it. In this, however, I was mistaken.

When I perceived Toby leaning, as I have mentioned, against the bulwarks and buried in thought, it struck me at once that the subject of his meditations might be the same as my own. And if it be so, thought I, is he not the very one of all my shipmates among the mountains for weeks. In such an event what a solace would alleviate its hardships? Perhaps I might be obliged to lie concealed should I not have some comrade with me to divide its dangers and pettishness.

But the attempt was so perilous in the place where we then lay, that I supposed myself the only individual on board the ship who was sufficiently reckless to think of it. In this, however, I was mistaken.

Latterly I had observed that Toby’s melancholy had greatly increased, and I had frequently seen him since our arrival at the island gazing wistfully upon the shore, when the remainder of the crew would be rioting below. I was aware that he entertained a cordial detestation of the ship, and believed that, should a fair chance of escape present itself, he would embrace it willingly.

When Toby and the other members of the crew had risen to its place with which they were connected, and forming those radiating valleys I have before described. One of these ridges, which appeared more practicable than the rest, we determined to climb, convinced that it would conduct us to the heights beyond. Accordingly, we carefully observed its bearings and locality from the ship, so that when ashore we should run no lones de dril, era un marinero tan elegante como jamás haya pisado una cubierta: era singularmente pequeño y de compleción ligera, con gran flexibilidad de miembros. Su piel, oscura por naturaleza, se había oscurecido aún más por el sol tropical, y una masa de rizos de ébano se agolpaba en torno a sus sienes, lanzando una sombra más oscura sobre sus grandes ojos negros. Era un ser extraño y voluntario, caprichioso, irregual y melancólico; a veces casi arisco. Tenía además un temperamento vivo y fiero, que, cuando se excitaba, le llevaba a un estado rayano en el delirio.

Es extraño el poder que tiene una mente de profunda pasión sobre naturalezas más débiles. He visto a un tipo robusto, nada falto de valor corriente, acobardarse por las buenas ante este flaco mozalbete cuando estaba en uno de sus ataques de furia. Pero esos paroxismos ocurrian rara vez, y en ellos mi compañero, con su gran corazón, desahogaba la bilis de que se desprenden los individuos de temperamento más tranquilo mediante una continua mezquindad ante molestias triviales. [44] pettiness

Nadie había visto reír a Toby; quiero decir, con el cordial abandono de un júbilo a boca llena. A veces sonreía, es verdad, y había en él mucho humor seco y sarcástico, más elocuente por la imperturbable gravedad de su tono y maneras.

Recently, había observado yo que la melancolia de Toby había aumentado mucho, y frecuentemente le había visto, desde nuestra llegada a la isla, observando avidamente la orilla, cuando el resto de la tripulación se entregaba a sus desórdenes bajo cubierta. Me daba cuenta de que aribiapunía un odio cordial hacia el barco, y creía que si se le presentaba una buena ocasión de escapar, la aprovecharía de buena gana.

Pero ese intento era tan peligroso en el sitio en que estábamos entonces, que yo me suponía el único individuo de a bordo tan decidido como para intentarlo. En esto, sin embargo, me equivocaba.

Esos pensamientos pasaron rápidamente por mi mente, y me sorprendi por no haber considerado antes el asunto bajo esa luz. Pero no era demasiado tarde. Un golpe en el hombro sirvió para sacar a Toby de su ensueño: le encontré maduro para la empresa, y muy pocas palabras bastaron para la mutua comprensión entre nosotros. Al cabo de una hora habíamos arreglado todos los preliminares y decidido nuestro plan de acción. Entonces ratificamos nuestro compromiso con un afectuoso apretón de manos, y para eludir sospechas, nos retiramos cada cual a nuestra hamaca, a pasar la última noche a bordo del Dolly.

Al día siguiente, la guardia de estribor, a la que pertenecíamos ambos, iba a ser mandada a tierra con permiso; y, viéndonos de esa oportunidad, decidimos, tan pronto como se pudiera, después de desembarcar, separarnos del resto de los hombres sin provocar sospechas, y lanzarnos en seguida a las montañas. Vistas desde el barco, sus cimas parecían inaccesibles; pero, acá y allá, se extendían estribaciones en declive desde ellas hasta el mar, reforzando las altas elevaciones con que estaban unidas, y formando los valles radiantes que antes he descrito. Una de esas lomas, que parece más accesible que las demás, fue la que decidimos trepar, convencidos de que nos llevaría a las alturas de más allá. [45] En consecuencia, observamos cuidadosamente su posición y situación desde el barco, para que, una vez en tierra, no hubiera probabili-
Melville's Typee  J. M. Valverde

CHAPTER SIX

A SPECIMEN OF NAUTICAL ORATORY—CRITICISMS OF THE SAILORS—THE STARBOARD WATCH ARE GIVEN A HOLIDAY—THE ESCAPE TO THE MOUNTAINS

EARLY the next morning the starboard watch were mustered upon the quarter-deck, and our worthy captain, standing in the cabin gangway, harangued us as follows:

‘Now, men, as we are just off a six months’ cruise, and have got through most all our work in port here, I suppose you want to go ashore. Well, I mean to give your watch liberty today, so you may get ready as soon all you please, and go; but understand this, I am going to give you liberty because I suppose you would growl like so many old quarter gunners if I didn’t; at the same time, if you’ll take my advice, every mother’s son of you will stay aboard and keep out of the way of the bloody cannibals altogether. Ten to one, men, if you go ashore, you will get into some inferior row, and that will be the end of you; for if those tattooed scoundrels get you a little ways back into their valleys, they’ll nab you—that you may be certain of. Plenty of white men have gone ashore here and never been seen any more. There was the old Dido, she put in here about two years ago, and sent one watch off on liberty; they never were heard of again for a week—the natives swore they didn’t know where they were—and only three of them ever got back to the ship again, and one with his face damaged for life, for the cursed heathens tattooed a broad patch clean across his figure-head. But it will be no use pretending.

"I am going to give your watch liberty to-day, so you may get ready as soon all you please, and go; but understand this, I am going to give you liberty because I suppose you would growl like so many old quarter gunners if I didn’t; at the same time, if you’ll take my advice, every mother’s son of you will stay aboard and keep out of the way of the bloody cannibals altogether. Ten to one, men, if you go ashore, you will get into some inferior row, and that will be the end of you; for if those tattooed scoundrels get you a little ways back into their valleys, they’ll nab you—that you may be certain of. Plenty of white men have gone ashore here and never been seen any more. There was the old Dido, she put in here about two years ago, and sent one watch off on liberty; they never were heard of again for a week—the natives swore they didn’t know where they were—and only three of them ever got back to the ship again, and one with his face damaged for life, for the cursed heathens tattooed a broad patch clean across his figure-head. But it will be no use pretending."
ourselves of the confusion which always reigns among a ship’s company preparatory to going ashore, to confer together and complete our arrangements. As our object was to effect as rapid a flight as possible to the mountains, we determined not to encumber ourselves with any superfluous apparel; and accordingly, while the rest were rigging themselves out with some idea of making a display, we were content to put on new stout duck trousers, serviceable pumps, and heavy Havre-frocks, which with a Payta hat completed our equipment.

When our shipmates wondered at this, Toby exclaimed in his odd grave way that the rest might do, as they liked, but that he for one preserved his go-ashore traps for the Spanish main, where the tie of a sailor’s neckerchief might make some difference; but as for a parcel of unbreached heathen, he wouldn’t go to the bottom of his chest for any of them, and was half disposed to appear among them in buff himself. The men laughed at what they thought was one of his strange conceits, and so we escaped suspicion.

It may appear singular that we should have been thus on our guard with our own shipmates; but there were some among us who, had they possessed the least inkling of our project, would, for a paltry hope of reward, have immediately communicated it to the captain.

As soon as two bells were struck, the word was passed for the liberty-men to get into the boat. I lingered behind in the forecastle a moment to take a parting glance at its familiar features, and just as I was about to ascend to the deck my eye happened to light on the broad-barge and beef-kid, which contained the remnants of our last hasty meal. Although I had never before thought of providing anything in the way of food for our expedition, as I fully relied upon the fruits of the island to sustain us wherever we might wander, yet I could not resist the inclination I felt to provide luncheon from the relics before me. Accordingly I took a double handful of those small, broken, flinty bits of biscuit which generally go by the name of ‘midshipmen’s nuts’, and thrust them into the bosom of my frock in which same simple receptacle I had previously stowed away several pounds of tobacco and a few yards of cotton cloth—articles with which I intended to purchase the good-will of the natives, as soon as we should appear among them after the departure of our vessel.

This last addition to my stock caused a considerable protuberance in front, which I abated in a measure by shaking the bits of bread around my waist, and distributing the plugs of tobacco among the folds of the garment.

Hardly had I completed these arrangements when my name was sung out by a dozen voices, and I sprung upon the deck, where I found all the party in the boat, and impatient to shove off. I dropped over the side and seated myself with the rest of the watch in the stern sheets, while the poor larboarders shipped their oars, and commenced pulling us ashore.

This happened to be the rainy season at the islands, and the heavens had nearly the whole morning betokened one of those heavy showers which during this period so frequently occur. The large drops fell bubbling into the water shortly after our leaving the ship, and by the time we had affected a shelter under cover of an immense canoe-house which stood hard by the beach, and waited for the first fury of the storm to pass.

It continued, however, without cessation; and the monotonous beating of the rain over head began to exert a drowsy influ-
ence upon the men, who, throwing themselves here and there upon the large war-canoes, after chatting awhile, all fell asleep.

This was the opportunity we desired, and Toby and I availed ourselves of it at once by stealing out of the canoe-house and plunging into the depths of an extensive grove that was in its rear. After ten minutes' rapid progress we gained an open space from which we could just descry the ridge we intended to mount looming dimly through the mists of the tropical shower, and distant from us, as we estimated, something more than a mile. Our direct course towards it lay through a rather populous part of the bay; but desirous as we were of evading the natives and securing an unmolested retreat to the mountains, we determined, by taking a circuit through some extensive thickets, to avoid their vicinities altogether.

The heavy rain that still continued to fall without intermission favoured our enterprise, as it drove the islanders into their houses, and prevented any casual meeting with them. Our heavy frocks soon became completely saturated with water, and by their weight, and that of the articles we had concealed beneath them, not a little impeded our progress. But it was no time to pause when at any moment we might be surprised by a body of the savages, and forced at the very outset to relinquish our undertaking.

Since leaving the canoe-house we had scarcely exchanged a single syllable with one another; but when we entered a second narrow opening in the wood, and again caught sight of the ridge before us, I took Toby by the arm, and pointing along its sloping outline to the lofty heights at its extremity, said in a low tone, ‘Now, Toby, not a word, nor a glance backward, till we stand on the summit of yonder mountain—so no more lingering but let us shove ahead.

‘All right, brother,’ said Toby, ‘quick’s our play; only lets keep close together, that’s all;’ and so saying with a bound like a young roe, he cleared a brook which ran across our path, and rushed forward with a quick step.

When we arrived within a short distance of the ridge, we were stopped by a mass of tall yellow reeds, growing together as thickly as they could stand, and as tough and stubborn as so many rods of steel; and we perceived, to our chagrin, that they extended midway up the elevation we proposed to ascend.

For a moment we gazed about us in quest of a more practicable route; it was, however, at once apparent that there was no resource but to pierce this thicket of canes at all hazards. We now reversed our order of march, I, being the heaviest, taking the lead, with a view of breaking a path through the obstruction, while Toby fell into the rear.

Two or three times I endeavoured to insinuate myself between the canes, and by dint of coaxing and bending them to make some progress; but a bull-frog might as well have tried to work a passage through the teeth of a comb, and I gave up the attempt in despair.

Half wild with meeting an obstacle we had so little anticipated, I threw myself desperately against it, crushing to the ground the canes with which I came in contact, and, rising to my feet again, repeated the action with like effect. Twenty minutes of this violent exercise almost exhausted me, but it carried us some way into the thicket; when Toby, who had been reaping the benefit of my labours by following close at my heels, pro-

riners que, echándose acá y allá en las grandes canoas de guerra, y charlando mientras tanto, se quedaron todos dormidos.

Esa era la oportunidad que descábamos, y Toby y yo la aprovechamos al momento deslizándonos fuera del cobertizo de las canoas, y hundiéndonos en las profundidades de un extenso bosque que había detrás. Al cabo de diez minutos de rápido avance llegamos a un espacio abierto desde el cual podíamos apenas avistar la cresta que pensábamos subir, elevada vagamente entre las nieblas de la lluvia tropical, y a algo más de una milla de distancia de nosotros, según estimábamos. Nuestro camino directo hacia ella pasaba por una parte de la bahía más bien populosa, pero deseosos como estábamos de eludir a los indígenas, decidimos evitar en absoluto su proximidad dando un rodeo a través de unos extensos setos.

La fuerte lluvia que aún continuaba cayendo sin interrupción favorecía nuestro intento, al hacer que los isleños se metieran en sus casas, evitando cualquier encuentro casual con ellos. Nuestros peados blusones pronto quedaron empapados por completo de agua y, con su peso, y con el de los objetos que habíamos escondido en ellos, estorbaban no poco nuestro avance. Pero no había tiempo para detenernos cuando en cualquier momento podía sorprendernos un grupo de salvajes, obligándonos a abandonar nuestra empresa en su mismo comienzo.

Desde que dejamos el cobertizo de las canoas apenas habíamos intercambiado una sola silaba, pero cuando entramos en una segunda abertura estrecha que daba al bosque, y volvimos a ver la cresta ante nosotros, sujeto a Toby por el brazo y, señalando a lo largo de su silueta en declive hasta las elevadas alturas de su extremo, dije en voz baja:

—Ea, Toby, ni una palabra, ni una mirada atrás, hasta que estemos en la cumbre de esa montaña: así que nada de retardarse, sino tiremos adelante mientras podamos, y dentro de pocas horas podremos reir bien fuerte. Tú eres el más ligero y rápido, de modo que guíe tú, y yo te seguiré. [50]

—Muy bien, hermano —dijo Toby—, lo que hace falta es rapi-dez; pero no nos separemos, eso es todo —y, diciendo así, con un salto como de un corzo joven, pasó un arroyuelo que atravesaba nuestro camino, y siguió avanzando a paso rápido.

Cuando llegábamos a poca distancia de la cresta, nos detuvo una masa de altas cañas amarillas, que crecían tan apretadas como ca-bían, y tan duras y tercas como varillas de acero, y percibimos, para nuestra consternación, que se extendían hasta media altura de la elevación que nos proponíamos subir.

Por unos momentos miramos a nuestro alrededor en busca de un camino más practicable; sin embargo, en seguida se echó de ver que no había más recurso que perforar ese bosque de cañas, pasarlo lo que pasara. Entonces invertimos nuestro orden de marcha: yo, por ser el más pesado, me puse delante, con intención de abrir paso a través del obstáculo, mientras Toby se situó a retaguardia.

Dos o tres veces intenté introducirme entre las cañas, avanzando un poco a fuerza de plegarlas y doblarlas, pero hubiera sido igual que un sapo intentara abrirse paso entre los dientes de un peine, y renuncié al intento con desesperación.

Medio loco ante el encuentro de un obstáculo que tan poco habíamos esperado, me lancé desesperadamente contra él, aplastando por el suelo las cañas con que entré en contacto y, volviendo a ponerme en pie, repetí la acción con igual efecto. Veinte minutos de este violento ejercicio casi me agotaron, pero nos hicieron adelantar un poco por la espesura. Entonces Toby, que había recibido el beneficio de mis esfuerzos siguiéndome de cerca, propuso pasar a ser el
posed to become pioneer in turn, and accordingly passed ahead with a view of affording me a respite from my exertions. As however with his slight frame he made but bad work of it, I was soon obliged to resume my old place again. On we toiled, the perspiration starting from our bodies in floods, our limbs tanger and lacerated with the splintered fragments of the broken canes, until we had proceeded perhaps as far as the middle of the brake, when suddenly it ceased raining, and the atmosphere around us became close and sultry beyond expression. The elasticity of the reeds quickly recovering from the temporary pressure of our bodies, caused them to spring back to their original position; so that they closed in upon us as we advanced, and prevented the circulation of little air which might otherwise have reached us. Besides this, their great height completely shut us out from the view of surrounding objects, and we were not certain but that we might have been going all the time in a wrong direction.

Fatigued with my long-continued efforts, and panting for breath, I felt myself completely incapacitated for any further exertion. I rolled up the sleeve of my frock, and squeezed the moisture it contained into my parched mouth. But the few drops I managed to obtain gave me little relief, and I sank down for a moment with a sort of dogged apathy, from which I was aroused by Toby, who had devised a plan to free us from the net in which we had become entangled.

I began to think we were fairly snared, and had almost made up my mind that without a pair of wings we should never be able to escape from the toils; when all at once I discerned a peep of daylight through the canes on my right, and, communicating the joyful tidings to Toby, we both fell to with fresh spirit, and speedily opened the passage towards it we found ourselves clear of perplexities, and in the near vicinity of the ridge. After resting for a few moments we began the ascent, and after a little vigorous climbing found ourselves close to its summit. Instead however of walking along its ridge, where we should have been in full view of the natives in the vales beneath, and at a point where they could easily intercept us were they so inclined, we cautiously advanced on one side, crawling on our hands and knees, and screened from observation by the grass through which we glided, much in the fashion of a couple of serpents. After an hour employed in this unpleasant kind of locomotion, we started to our way boldly along the crest of the ridge. This salient spur of the lofty elevations that encompassed the bay rose with a sharp angle from the valleys at its base, and presented, with the exception of a few steep acclivities, the appearance of a vast inclined plane, sweeping down towards the sea from the heights in the distance. We had ascended it near the place of its termination and at its lowest point, and now saw our route to the mountains distinctly defined along its narrow crest, which was covered with a soft carpet of verdure, and was in many parts only a few feet wide.

Glancing our eyes into these valleys, we perceived their

que abriera paso, y por tanto, se puso en cabeza con intención de
darme un descanso de mis esfuerzos. Sin embargo, como con su le-
gero cuerpo no conseguía buen efecto, pronto me vi obligado a ocu-
par otra vez mi anterior sitio. Seguimos esforzándonos, con el sudor
trociando a chorrillos de nuestro cuerpo, con nuestros miembros des-
garrados y lacerados con las astillas de las cañas rotas, hasta que
hubimos llegado quizás hasta la mitad de la maleza, cuando de re-
pente dejó de llover, y la atmósfera, a nuestro alrededor, se puso
cerrada y bochornosa más allá de toda expresión. La elasticidad de
las cañas, recuperándose rápidamente de la presión temporal de nues-
trros cuerpos, las hacía volver a subir a su posición original, de modo
que se cerraban contra nosotros conforme avanzábamos, e impe-
dían la circulación del poco aire que de otro modo podría habernos
llegado. Además, su gran altura nos aislaba por completo de la vista
de lo que nos rodeaba, y no estuvimos muy seguros de que todo el
tiempo no hubiéramos ido en dirección equivocada. [51]
savage inhabitants hurrying to and fro, seemingly under the influence of some sudden alarm, and appearing to the eye scarcely bigger than so many pigeons; while their white thatched dwellings, dwarfed by the distance, looked like baby-houses. As we looked down upon the islanders from our lofty elevation, we experienced a sense of security; feeling confident that, should they undertake a pursuit, it would, from the start we now had, prove entirely fruitless, unless they followed us into the mountains, where we knew they cared not to venture.

However, we thought it as well to make the most of our time; and accordingly, where the ground would admit of it, we ran swiftly along the summit of the ridge, until we were brought to a stand by a steep cliff, which at first seemed to interpose an effectual barrier to our farther advance. By dint of much hard scrambling however, and at some risk to our necks, we at last surmounted it, and continued our fight with unabated celerity.

We had left the beach early in the morning, and after an uninterrupted, though at times difficult and dangerous ascent, during which we had never once turned our faces to the sea, we found ourselves, about three hours before sunset, standing on the top of what seemed to be the highest land on the island, an immense overhanging cliff composed of basaltic rocks, hung round with parasitical plants. We must have been more than three thousand feet above the level of the sea, and the scenery viewed from this height was magnificent.

The lonely bay of Nukuheva, dotted here and there with the black hulls of the vessels composing the French squadron, lay reposing at the base of a circular range of elevations, whose verdant sides, perforated with deep glens or diversified with smiling valleys, formed altogether the loveliest view I ever beheld, and were I to live a hundred years, I shall never forget the feeling of admiration which I then experienced.

This was a most unlooked-for discovery, and one that promised to defeat our plans altogether, for we could not think of descending the mountain on the Nukuheva side in quest of food. Should we for this purpose be induced to retrace our steps, we should run no small chance of encountering the natives, who in that case, if they did nothing worse to us, would be certain to convey us back to the ship for the sake of the reward in calico and trinkets, which we had no doubt our skipper would hold out to them as an inducement to our capture.

No obstante, pensamos que convenía aprovechar el tiempo y, por tanto, donde el suelo lo permitía, corríamos rápidamente por la cima de la cresta, hasta que nos detuvimos con una abrupta pared, que al principio pareció interponer una barrera eficaz contra nuestro avance. Sin embargo, a fuerza de mucho agitarnos, y con riesgo de nuestros cueros, acabamos de superarla, y continuamos nuestra huida con celeridad incontenida.

Sentía no poca curiosidad respecto al aspecto de las tierras que encontrábamos al otro lado de las montañas, y yo había supuesto, con Toby, que en cuanto alcanzáramos las alturas, podríamos ver las grandes bahías de Happar y Taipi reposando a nuestros pies, a un lado, del mismo modo que Nukuheva quedaba extendida allá abajo al otro lado. Pero en esto nos vimos decepcionados. En vez de encontrar que la montaña que habíamos ascendido bajara en dirección opuesta hacia valles anchos y capaces, la tierra parecía continuar su elevación general, rota sólo por una serie de crestas e intervalos que, en todo lo que alcanzaba la vista, se extendían alejándose de nosotros con los precipicios de sus costados cubiertos por la más clara vegetación, y ondulando acá y allá con el follaje de manchas de bosque; entre las cuales, sin embargo, no percibimos ninguno de esos árboles en cuyo fruto habíamos confiado con tal certidumbre.
What was to be done? The Dolly would not sail perhaps for ten days, and how were we to sustain life during this period? I bitterly repented our imprudence in not providing ourselves, as we easily might have done, with a supply of biscuits. With a 

rueful visage I now bethought me of the scanty handful of bread I hade stuffed into the bosom of my frock, and felt somewhat desirous to ascertain what part of it had weathered the rather rough usage it had experienced in ascending the mountain. I accordingly proposed to Toby that we should enter into a joint examination of the various articles we had brought from the ship.

rueful expressing sorrow, genuine or humorously affected. Contristo, paštiako, pesaroso, esquinoado.

With this intent we seated ourselves upon the grass; and a little curious to see with what kind of judgement my companion had filled his fock—which I remarked seemed about as well lined as my own—I requested him to commence operations by spreading out its contents.

Thrusting his hand, then, into the bosom of this capacious receptacle, he first brought to light about a pound of tobacco, whose component parts still adhered together, the whole outside being covered with soft particles of sea-bread. Wet and dripping, it had the appearance of having been just recovered from the bottom of the sea. But I paid slight attention to a substance of so little value to us in our present situation, as soon as I perceived the indications it gave of Toby’s foresight in laying in a supply of food for the exigencies of our present state of destitution.

I eagerly inquired what quantity he had brought with him, when rummaging once more beneath his garment, he produced a small handful of something so soft, pulpy, and discoloured, that for a few moments he was as much puzzled as myself to tell by what possible instrumentality such a villainous compound had become engendered in his bosom. I can only describe it as a 
picadillo of pan emmapado y trozos de tabaco, llevados a una consistencia pastosa por el efecto conjunto del sudor y la lluvia. Pero más por repulsivo que hubiera sido en otro momento, ahora lo consideré como un tesoro inestimable, y comencé, con gran cuidado, a trasladar esta masa pastosa a una ancha hoja que había arrancado de una mata a mi lado. Toby me informó de que por la mañana se había metido en el pecho dos galletas enteras, con intención de roerlas durante nuestra huida, si [55] tenía ganas. Estas galletas ahora se habían reducido a la sustancia equivocca que acababa yo de poner en la hoja.

Another dive into the fock brought to view some four or five yards of calico print, whose tasteful pattern was rather disfigured by the yellow stains of the tobacco with which it had been brought in contact. In drawing this calico slowly from his bosom inch by inch, Toby reminded me of a juggler performing the feat of a large leaf which I had plucked from a bush beside me. Toby informed me that in the morning he had placed two whole biscuits in his bosom, with a view of munching them, should he feel so inclined, during our flight. These were now reduced to the equivocal substance which I had just placed on the leaf.

As might have been anticipated from the state of my companion’s edible supplies, I found my own in a deplorable condition, and diminished to a quantity that would not have formed half a dozen mouthfuls for a hungry man who was partial enough to tobacco not to mind swelling it. A few morsels of bread, with a fathom or two of white cotton cloth, and several pounds of choice pigtail, composed the extent of my possessions.

Our joint stock of miscellaneous articles were now made up into a compact bundle, which it was agreed we should carry alternately. But the sorry remains of the biscuit were not to be disposed of so summarily: the precarious circumstances in which we
were placed made us regard them as something on which very prob-
ably, depended the fate of our adventure. After a brief discussion,
in which we both of us expressed our resolution of not descending
into the bay until the ship’s departure, I suggested to my compan-
ion that little of it as there was, we should divide the bread into six
equal portions, each of which should be a day’s allowance for both
of us. This proposition he assented to; so I took the silk kerchief
from my neck, and cutting it with my knife into half a dozen equal
pieces, proceeded to make an exact division.

At first, Toby with a degree of fastidiousness that seemed to
me ill-timed, was for picking out the minute particles of tobacco
which with the spongy mass was mixed; but against this proceeding
I protested, as by such an operation we must have greatly dimin-
ished its quantity.

When the division was accomplished, we found that a day’s
allowance for the two was not a great deal more than what a table-
spoon might hold. Each separate portion we immediately rolled up
in the bit of silk prepared for it, and joining them all together into
a small package, I committed them, with solemn injunctions of fidel-
ity, to the custody of Toby. For the remainder of that day we re-
solved to fast, as we had been fortified by a breakfast in the morn-
ing; and now starting again to our feet, we looked about us for a
shelter during the night, which, from the appearance of the heav-
ens, promised to be a dark and tempestuous one.

There was no place near us which would in any way an-
ter our purpose, so turning our backs upon Nukuheva, we com-
mented exploring the unknown regions which lay upon the other
side of the mountain.

In this direction, as far as our vision extended, not a sign of
life, nor anything that denoted even the transient residence of man,
could be seen. The whole landscape seemed one unbroken solitude,
the interior of the island having apparently been untenanted since
the morning of the creation; and as we advanced through this wil-
derness, our voices sounded strangely in our ears, as though human
acquaintance had never before disturbed the fearful silence of the place,
interrupted only by the low murmurings of distant waterfalls.

Our disappointment, however, in not finding the various
fruits with which we had intended to regale ourselves during our
stay in these wilds, was a good deal lessened by the consideration
that from this very circumstance we should be much less exposed to
a casual meeting with the savage tribes about us, who we knew
don’t always dwelt beneath the shadows of those trees which supplied
them with food.

We wandered along, casting eager glances into every bush
we passed, until just as we had succeeded in mounting one of the
many ridges that intersected the ground, I saw in the grass before
me something like an indistinctly traced footpath, which appeared
to lead along the top of the ridge, and to descend—with it into a
deep ravine about half a mile in advance of us.

Robinson Crusoe could not have been more startled at the
footprint in the sand than we were at this unwelcome discovery. My
first impulse was to make as rapid a retreat as possible, and bend our
steps in some other direction; but our curiosity to see whither this path
might lead, prompted us to pursue it. So on we went, the track becom-
ing more and more visible the farther we proceeded, until it conducted
us to the verge of the ravine, where it abruptly terminated.

‘And so,’ said Toby, peering down into the chasm, ‘every-
one that travels this path takes a jump here, eh?’

Our disappointment, however, in not finding the various
fruits with which we had intended to regale ourselves during our
stay in these wilds, was a good deal lessened by the consideration
that from this very circumstance we should be much less exposed to
a casual meeting with the savage tribes about us, who we knew
don’t always dwelt beneath the shadows of those trees which supplied
them with food.

We wandered along, casting eager glances into every bush
we passed, until just as we had succeeded in mounting one of the
many ridges that intersected the ground, I saw in the grass before
me something like an indistinctly traced footpath, which appeared
to lead along the top of the ridge, and to descend—with it into a
deep ravine about half a mile in advance of us.

Robinson Crusoe could not have been more startled at the
footprint in the sand than we were at this unwelcome discovery. My
first impulse was to make as rapid a retreat as possible, and bend our
steps in some other direction; but our curiosity to see whither this path
might lead, prompted us to pursue it. So on we went, the track becom-
ing more and more visible the farther we proceeded, until it conducted
us to the verge of the ravine, where it abruptly terminated.

‘And so,’ said Toby, peering down into the chasm, ‘every-
one that travels this path takes a jump here, eh?’

Al principio, Toby, con un grado de meticulosidad que me pa-
reció intempestivo, iba a extraer las menudas partículas de tabaco
mezcladas en la esponjosa masa, pero protesté contra ese procedi-
miento, ya que con tal operación tendríamos que disminuir en mu-
cho su cantidad.

Realizada la división, encontramos que la ración de un día
para los dos no era mucho más que lo que cabría en una cucharita.
Cada porción separada la envolvimos en el trozo de seda prepa-
rado para ella, y reuniéndolas todas en un [56] pequeño paquete,
lo confié, con solemnes requerimientos de fidelidad, a la cus-
todia de Toby. Para el resto del día decidimos ayunar, ya que
nos habíamos fortalecido con el desayuno de la mañana; y en-
tonces, poniéndonos en pie de un salto, miramos a nuestro alre-
dedor en busca de refugio para la noche, que, por el aspecto de
los cielos, prometía ser oscura y tempestuosa.

No había sitio cerca de nosotros que de ningún modo respondie-
ra a nuestro propósito, de modo que, volviendo la espalda a
Nukuheva, empezamos a explorar las desconocidas regiones que
quedaban al otro lado de la montaña.

En esa dirección no se podía ver, en lo que alcanzaba nuestra
visión, ni una señal de vida ni nada que denotara siquiera la residen-
cia transitoria del hombre. El paisaje entero parecía una única sole-
dad intemrumpida, ya que, al parecer, el interior de la isla no había
tenido habitantes desde la mañana de la Creación; y al avanzar por ese
desierto, nuestras voces sonaban extrañamente, como si jamás hubie-
ran distauro acentos humanos el terrible silencio de aquel sitio, sólo
interrumpido por los sordos murmullos de cascadas lejanas.

Sin embargo, nuestra decepción al no encontrar los diversos fru-
tos con que habíamos pensado regalarles durante nuestra estancia
en esas soledades, quedó disminuida en buena parte por la conside-
uración de que, por esa misma circunstancia, estaríamos mucho me-
no espturado a un encuentro casual con las tribus salvajes de nues-
tro alrededor, que sabíamos que siempre vivían a la sombra de los
árboles que les proporcionaban alimento.

Seguíamos vagando, y lanzando ávidas miradas a cada matorral
que pasábamos; hasta que, en el mismo instante en que acabábamos
de superar una de las muchas crestas que cortaban el terreno, vi ante
mi, en la hierba, algo como una vereda indistintamente trazada, que
parecía llevar hasta lo alto de la cresta, y descender con ella a un
profundo barranco a una media milla por delante de nosotros.

Robinson Crusoe no pudo asustarse ante la huella en la arena más
que nosotros ante este desagradable descubrimiento. Mi primer impul-
só fue hacer una retirada todo lo rápida posible, y doblar nuestros pasos
en alguna otra dirección, pero nuestra curiosidad por ver adonde podría
lleva esa vereda nos sugirió que la siguierámos. Así que seguimos
adelante, haciéndose más visible el sendero conforme avanzábamos, hasta
que nos llevó al borde del barranco, donde acababa repentinamente.

—Así que —dijo Toby, asomándose a mirar por el precipicio—
todo el que recorrer esta vereda, da un salto aquí, ¿eh? [57]
quickly, ‘if you are going to
and I am resolved to find out what it is.’

‘Oh, no, Toby,’ I exclaimed, laughing; ‘but there’s some-
thing to be seen here, that’s plain, or there would have been no path,
and I am resolved to find out what it is.’

‘I will tell you what, my pleasant fellow,’ rejoined Toby
quickly, ‘if you are going to pry into everything you meet with here
that excites your curiosity, you will marvellously soon get knocked
on the head; to a dead certainty you will come bang upon a party of
these savages in the midst of your discovery-making, and I doubt
whether such an event would particularly delight you, just take my
advice for once, and let us ‘bout ship and steer in some other direc-
tion; besides, it’s getting late and we ought to be mooring ourselves
for the night.’

‘That is just the thing I have been driving at,’ replied I; ‘and I am
thinking that this ravine will exactly answer our purpose, for it is roony,
secluded, well watered, and may shelter us from the weather.’

‘Oh, very well then, my lad,’ said I, ‘since you will not
accompany me, here I go alone. You will see me in the morning;’
and advancing to the edge of the cliff upon which we had been
standing, I proceeded to lower myself down by the tangled roots
laban en todas las grietas de la roca. Como había supuesto, Toby
siguió mi ejemplo, a pesar de sus protestas anteriores, y dejándose
caer con la diligencia de una ardilla de una punta a otra, pronto me
aventajó, y llegó a tomar tierra en el fondo antes que yo hubiera
llegado a los dos tercios de la bajada.

The sight that now greeted us was one that will ever be
vividly impressed upon my mind. Five foaming streams, rushing
through as many gorges, and swelled and turbid by the recent rains,
united together in one mad plunge of nearly eighty feet, and fell
with wild uproar into a deep black pool scooped out of the gloomy
united in one mad plunge of nearly eighty feet, and fell
through as many gorges, and swelled and turbid by the recent rains,
point to point, he quickly outstripped me and effected a landing at
the bottom before I had accomplished two-thirds of the descent.

As soon as I had satisfied my curiosity by gazing at this
scene, I fell to wondering how it was that what we had taken for a
path should have conducted us to so singular a place, and began to
suspect that after all I might have been deceived in supposing it to
have been a trick formed by the islanders. This was rather an agree-
able reflection than otherwise, for it diminished our dread of acci-
dentally meeting with any of them, and I came to the conclusion
that perhaps we could not have selected a more secure hiding-place
than this very spot we had so accidentally hit upon.

Toby agreed with me in this view of the matter, and we
immediately began gathering together the limbs of trees which lay

Not so,’ said I, ‘for I think they might manage to descend
without it; what say you,—shall we attempt the feat?’

And what, in the name of caves and coal-holes, do you
expect to find at the bottom of that gull but a broken neck—why it
looks blacker than our ship’s hold, and the roar of those waterfalls
down there would batter one’s brains to pieces.’

‘Vaya, está más negro que la sentina de nuestro barco, y el ruido de
eso cascadas de ahí abajo le haría a uno pedazos los sesos.

—No es eso —dije yo—, porque me parece que quizá se las arre-
glen para bajar sin saltar. ¿Qué dices, probamos la hazaña?

—Pero, por todas las cavernas y los pozos de carbón, ¿qué espe-

eras encontrar en el fondo de ese abismo sino romperte el cuello?

—Ah, no, Toby —contesté, riendo—. Pero ahí abajo hay algo
que ver, está claro, o si no, no habría vereda, y estoy decidido a
averiguar qué es.

—Escucha lo que te voy a decir, mi simpático amigo —replicó
vivamente Toby—: si vas a hurgar en todo lo que encuentres aquí
que excite tu curiosidad, te verás asombradamente pronto derribado
de un golpe en la cabeza; con absoluta certidumbre, irás a toparte
con una partida de esos salvajes en medio de tus descubrimientos,
y no estoy seguro de que tal acontecimiento te produciría demasiado
placer. Sigue mi consejo, por una vez, y vamos a virar en otra direc-
tión: además, se está haciendo tarde y deberíamos amarrar para pa-
sar la noche.

—A eso es a lo que iba yo —contesté—, y me parece que este barranco
responderá adecuadamente a nuestro propósito, porque es espacioso y abun-
dante de agua, y nos puede resguardar de la intemperie.

—Sí, y también del sueño, y por estas mismas señales, nos dará
dolores de garganta y reumas de propina —gritó Toby, evidentemen-
tente disgustado ante la idea.

—Ah, entonces, muy bien, muchacho —dije—: puesto que no
me quieres acompañar, iré allá yo solo. Nos volveremos a ver por la
mañana —y, avanzando hasta el borde del precipicio donde estába-
mos, empezé a descolgarme por las enredadas raíces que se acumu-
laban en todas las grietas de la roca. Como había supuesto, Toby
siguió mi ejemplo, a pesar de sus protestas anteriores, y dejándose
car con la diligencia de una ardilla de una punta a otra, pronto me
aventajó, y llegó a tomar tierra en el fondo antes que yo hubiera
llegado a los dos tercios de la bajada.

El espectáculo que nos recibió era tal que quedaría siempre impresio-
nado con viveza en mi mente. Cinco torrentes espumeantes, precipi-
tándose por otras tantas gargantas, e hinchados y turbios por las recien-
tes lluvias, se reunían en una loca zumbilduda de casi ochenta pies, ca-
yendo con salvaje estruendo en una profunda laguna negra excavada
en las sombrías rocas que estaban amontonadas alrededor y, desde allí,
en un solo caudal reunido, se lanzaban bajando por un [58] estrecho
canal en declive que parecía penetrar en las mismas entrañas de la tie-
rra. Por encima, vastas raíces de árboles colgaban de los lados del pre-
cipicio, goceando humedad y temblando de la agitación producida por
la catarata. Era ya el oscurecer, y la débil luz incierta que se abría en
la roca, se había transformado en un campo de sombras por la que
se dejaba ver en largas filas de espalda, que se adentraban en el
espesor de la roca hasta las profundidades más remotos.

Tan pronto como satisface mi curiosidad mirando el espectácu-
lo, me puse a meditar por qué sería que lo que habíamos tomado por
una vereda nos había llevado a un sitio tan extraño, y empecé a
suponer que, después de todo, me podía haber engañado al suponer
que era un sendero formado por los isleños. Este reflejo más bien
era agradable, pues disminuía nuestro temor de encontraros por
pasar una noche sin escuchas y boscossos profundidades realizaba su extraño
aspecto y nos recordaba que dentro de poco nos encontraríamos en total
oscuridad.

Toby estuvo de acuerdo conmigo en este modo de ver el asunto, e
inmediatamente empezamos a reunir las ramas de árboles que había
scattered about, with the view of constructing a temporary hut for the night. This we were obliged to build close to the foot of the cataract, for the current of water extended very nearly to the sides of the gorge. The few moments of light that remained we employed in covering our hut with a species of broad-bladed grass that grew in every fissure of the ravine. Our hut, if it deserved to be called one, consisted of six or eight of the straightest branches; we could find laid obliquely against the steep wall of rock, with their lower ends within a foot of the stream. Into the space thus covered over we managed to crawl, and dispose our wearied bodies as best we could.

Shall I ever forget that horrid night? As for poor Toby, I could scarcely get a word out of him. It would have been some consolation to have heard his voice, but he lay shivering the live-long night like a man afflicted with the palsy, with his knees drawn up to his head, while his back was supported against the dripping side of the rock. During this wretched night there seemed nothing wanting to complete the perfect misery of our condition. The rain descended in such torrents that our poor shelter proved a mere mockery. In vain did I try to elude the incessant streams that poured upon me; by protecting one part I only exposed another, and the water was continually finding its way within our hut, apoyada en el goteante costado de la roca. Durante esa misera noche, no pareció faltar nada para completar absolutamente lamentable de nuestra situación. La lluvia caía en tales torrentes que nuestro pobre refugio resultó una simple burla. En vano trataba yo de eludir los incesantes torrentes que caían sobre mí: defendiendo una parte, sólo lograba destapar otra, y el agua encontraba continuamente alguna nueva abertura por donde calarnos. [59]

Muchas zambullidas me he dado en el transcurso de mi vida, y, en general, me importa poco tal cosa, pero los horrores reunidos de aquella noche, la frialdad de muerte del sitio, la horrible oscuridad y la lúgubre sensación de nuestra situación abandonada, casi me dejaron aniquilado.

No se dará que a la mañana siguiente madrugamos mucho, y tan pronto como pude percibir el más leve atisbo de algo parecido a la luz del día, sacudí a mi compañero por el brazo, y le dije que amanecía. El pobre Toby levantó la cabeza, y, tras una pausa de unos momentos, dijo con voz ronca:

—Entonces, compañero, se me han apagado las luces de posición, porque me parece que está más oscuro ahora, con los ojos abiertos, que cuando los tenía cerrados.

—¡Tonterías! —exclamé—: es que todavía no te has despertado.

—¡Despertado! —rugió Toby con cólera—, ¿despertado? ¿Pretendes insinuar que he dormido, eh? Es insultar a un hombre suponer que pueda dormir en un sitio tan infernal como éste.

Para cuando acabé mis excusas con mi amigo por haber malentendido su silencio, ya había aclarado algo más, y salimos a gatas de nuestro refugio. La lluvia había cesado, pero todo a nuestro alrededor goteaba de humedad. Nos despojamos de nuestras empapadas ropas, y las retorcimos para secarlas lo mejor que pudimos. Logramos hacer circular la sangre por nuestros entumeciados miembros a fuerza de frotareslos vigorosamente con las manos y, después de lavarnos en el torrente, y poniéndonos nuestra ropa aún mojada, empezamos a creer aconsejable romper nuestro largo ayuno, pues hacía ya veinticuatro horas que no probábamos nada.

En consecuencia, sacamos nuestra ración del día y, sentándonos en un fragmento desprendido de roca, empezamos a repartirla. Primero la dividimos en dos porciones iguales y, enrollando una de ellas cuidadosamente para nuestra comida de la tarde, distribuimos el resto con toda la equidad posible, y luego echamos a suertes a ver quién elegiría su parte. El trozo que me tocó, podía habérmelo puesto en la punta del dedo, pero, a pesar de eso, me cuidé de tardar mis buenos diez minutos antes de tragar la última migaja. ¿Qué proverbo más cierto es que «no hay salsa como el hambre»? Esa pequeña partícula de alimento tenía un aroma y un gusto que, en otras circunstancias, habría sido imposible que alcanzaran las más delicadas viandas. Un copioso sorbo de la pura agua que corría a nuestros pies sirvió para completar la comida, y tras de eso nos levantamos sensiblemente reanimados y preparados para.
freshed, and prepared for whatever might befall us.

We now carefully examined the chasm in which we had passed the night. We crossed the stream, and gaining the further side of the pool I have mentioned, discovered proofs that the spot must have been visited by some one but a short time previous to our arrival. Further observation convinced us that it had been regularly frequented, and, as we afterwards conjectured from particular indications, for the purpose of obtaining a certain root, from which the natives obtained a kind of ointment.

These discoveries immediately determined us to abandon a place which had presented no inducement for us to remain, except the promise of security; and as we looked about us for the means of ascending again into the upper regions, we at last found a practicable part of the rock, and half an hour’s toil carried us to the summit of the same cliff from which the preceding evening we had descended.

I now proposed to Toby that instead of rambling about the island, exposing ourselves to discovery at every turn, we should select some place as our fixed abode for as long a period as our food should hold out, build ourselves a comfortable hut, and be as prudent and circumspect as possible. To all this my companion assented, and we at once set about carrying the plan into execution.

With this view, after exploring without success a little glen near us, we crossed several of the ridges of which I have before spoken; and about noon found ourselves ascending a long and gradually rising slope, but still without having discovered any place adapted to our purpose. Low and heavy clouds betokened an approaching storm, and we hurried on to gain a covert in a clump of thick bushes, which appeared to terminate the long ascent. We threw ourselves under the lee of these bushes, and pulling up the long grass that grew around, covered ourselves completely with it, and awaited the shower.

But it did not come as soon as we had expected, and before many minutes my companion was fast asleep, and I was rapidly falling into the same state of happy forgetfulness. Just at this juncture, however, down came the rain with the violence that put all thoughts of slumber to flight. Although in some measure sheltered, our clothes soon became as wet as ever; this, after all the trouble we had taken to dry them, was provoking enough: but there was no help for it; and I recommend all adventurous youths who abandon vessels in romantic islands during the rainy season to provide themselves with umbrellas.

After an hour or so the shower passed away. My companion slept through it all, or at least appeared so to do; and now that it was over I had not the heart to awaken him. As I lay on my back completely shrouded with verdure, the leafy branches drooping over me, my limbs buried in grass, I could not avoid comparing our situation with that of the interesting babes in the wood. Poor little sufferers!—no wonder their constitutions broke down under the hardships to which they were exposed.

During the hour or two spent under the shelter of these bushes, I began to feel symptoms which I at once attributed to the exposure of the preceding night. Cold shiverings and a burning fever succeeded one another at intervals, while one of my legs was swollen to such a degree, and pained me so acutely, that I half suspected I had been bitten by some venomous reptile, the congenial inhabitant of the chasm from which we had lately emerged. I may here remark by the way—that what I subsequently gleaned—that all the islands of Polynesia enjoy the reputation, in common with the Hibernian isle, of being free from the presence of any vipers; though cualquier cosa que pudiera ocurrirnos. [60]

Examinamos entonces con cuidado el abismo en que habíamos pasado la noche. Cruzamos el torrente, y llegando al otro lado de la laguna que mencioné, descubrimos pruebas de que el lugar debía haber sido visitado por alguien poco antes de nuestra llegada. Observándolo más, nos convencimos de que había sido frecuentado con regularidad, y como luego conjecturamos por ciertas indicaciones, con el objeto de obtener cierta raíz de la que los indígenas sacaban una especie de unto.

Esos descubrimientos nos decidieron inmediatamente a abandonar un lugar que no nos había ofrecido otro atractivo para quedarnos sino la promesa de seguridad; al mirar a nuestro alrededor buscando los medios de ascender otra vez a las regiones superiores, encontramos por fin una parte practicable en la roca, y media hora de esfuerzo nos llevó a la cima del mismo precipicio de donde habíamos bajado la tarde precedente.

Entonces propuse a Toby que, en vez de vagabundear por la isla, exponiéndonos a ser descubiertos a cada momento, eligiéramos algún sitio como residencia fija durante todo el tiempo que resistiera nuestro alimento, construyéndonos una cabaña cómoda y siendo todo lo prudentes y circunscritos que pudiéramos. Mi compañero asintió a ello, e inmediatamente nos pusimos a realizar el plan.

Con esa mira, tras de explorar sin éxito una pequeña cañada junto a nosotros, cruzamos varias de las crestas de que hablábamos antes, y hacia mediodía, nos encontramos subiendo un declive largo y gradual, pero sin haber descubierto aún ningún sitio apropiado para nuestro objetivo. Nubes bajas y pesadas anunciaban una tormenta inminente, y nos apuramos a ganar refugio en un grupo de densos arbustos que parecían terminar la larga subida. Nos echamos al socaire de esos arbustos, y reuniendo toda la larga hierba que crecía alrededor, nos cubrimos completamente con ella, y guardamos el chaparrón.

Pero no llegó tan pronto como esperábamos, y al cabo de pocos minutos mi compañero estaba profundamente dormido, y yo caía rápidamente en el mismo estado de olvido feliz. Sin embargo, en esa misma coyuntura, la lluvia cayó con tal violencia que ahuyentó toda idea de dormir. Aunque hasta cierto punto cobijados, pronto se nos empapó la ropa como nunca, cosa bastante irritante después del trabajo que nos habíamos tomado para secarla, pero no había remedio; y a todos los jovencitos aventureros que abandonan barcos en islas románticas durante la estación de las lluvias, les recomiendo que se preparen de paraguas. [61]

Al cabo de una hora o dos, pasó el chaparrón. Mi compañero durmió todo el tiempo mientras tanto, o al menos así lo pareció, y después que pasó, yo no tuve ánimos para despertarlo. Tendido de espaldas, completamente resguardado en verder, con las ramas de anchas hojas cayendo sobre mí, y con los miembros hundidos en hierba, no pude evitar comparar nuestra situación con la de los famosos niños perdidos en el bosque. ¡Pobres pequeños atormentados! No es extraño que sus complejones se hundieran bajo las durezas a que estuvieron expuestos.

Durante esa hora o dos que pasó al amparo de los arbustos, empecé a notar síntomas que en seguida atribuí a la in temperie de la noche pasada. Tiríticos fríos y fiebre ardiente se sucedían a intervalos, mientras que una pierna se me hincharía hasta tal punto y me dolía tanto que casi sospeché que me había mordido algún reptil venenoso, habitan te adecuado del precipicio de que habíamos salido recientemente. Quizá he de observar, a propósito, que —como supe luego todas las islas de Polinesia tienen fama, en común con la isla de Irlanda, de estar libres de la presencia de ninguna víbora, aunque, (*) El hecho de que en Irlanda no haya reptiles venenosos se atribuye popularmente a San Patricio, patrono de la isla.
CHAPTER EIGHT

THE IMPORTANT QUESTION, TYPEE OR HAPPAR?—A WILD GOOSE CHASE—MY SUFFERINGS—DISHEARTENING SITUATION—A NIGHT IN A RAVINE—MORNING MEAL—HAPPY IDEA OF TOBY—JOURNEY TOWARDS THE VALLEY

RECOVERING from my astonishment at the beautiful scene before me, I quickly awakened Toby, and informed him of the discovery I had made. Together we now repaired to the border of the precipice, and my companion’s admiration was equal to my own. A little reflection, however, abated our surprise at coming so unexpectedly upon this valley, since the large vales of Happar and Typee, lying upon this side of Nukuheva, and extending a considerable distance from the sea towards the interior, must necessarily terminate somewhere about this point.

From the spot where I lay transfixed with surprise and delight, I looked straight down into the bosom of a valley, which swept away in long wavy undulations to the blue waters in the distance. Midway towards the sea, and peering here and there amidst the foliage, might be seen the palmetto-thatched houses of its inhabitants glistening in the sun that had bleached them to a dazzling whiteness. The vale was more than three leagues in length, and about a mile across at its greatest width.

On either side it appeared hemmed in by steep and green acclivities, which, uniting near the spot where I lay, formed an abrupt and semicircular termination of grassy cliffs and precipices hundreds of feet in height, over which flowed numberless small cascades. But the crowning beauty of the prospect was its universal verdure; and in this indeed consists, I believe, the peculiar charm of every Polynesian landscape. Everywhere below me, from the base of the precipice upon whose very verge I had been unconsciously reposing, the surface of the vale presented a mass of foliage, spread with such rich profusion that it was impossible to determine of what description of trees it consisted.

But perhaps there was nothing about the scenery I beheld more impressive than those silent cascades, whose slender threads of water, after leaping down the steep cliffs, were lost amidst the rich herbage of the valley.

Over all the landscape there reigned the most hushed repose, which I almost feared to break, lest, like the enchanted garden of the fairy tale, a single syllable might dissolve the spell. For a long time, forgetful alike of my own situation, and the vicinity of my still slumbering companion, I remained gazing around me, hardly able to comprehend by what means I had thus suddenly been made a spectator of such a scene.

The question now was as to which of those two places we had visited them, is a question I shall not attempt to decide.

As the feverish sensation increased upon me I tossed about, still unwilling to disturb my slumbering companion, from whose side I removed two or three yards. I chanced to push aside a branch, and by so doing suddenly disclosed to my view a scene which even now I can recall with all the vividness of the first impression. Had a glimpse of the gardens of Paradise been revealed to me, I could scarcely have been more ravished with the sight.

From the spot where I lay transfixed with surprise and delight, I looked straight down into the bosom of a valley, which swept away in long undulations to the blue waters in the distance. Midway towards the sea, and peering here and there amidst the foliage, might be seen the palmetto-thatched houses of its inhabitants glistening in the sun that had bleached them to a dazzling whiteness. The vale was more than three leagues in length, and about a mile across at its greatest width.

On either side it appeared hemmed in by steep and green acclivities, which, uniting near the spot where I lay, formed an abrupt and semicircular termination of grassy cliffs and precipices hundreds of feet in height, over which flowed numberless small cascades. But the crowning beauty of the prospect was its universal verdure; and in this indeed consists, I believe, the peculiar charm of every Polynesian landscape. Everywhere below me, from the base of the precipice upon whose very verge I had been unconsciously reposing, the surface of the vale presented a mass of foliage, spread with such rich profusion that it was impossible to determine of what description of trees it consisted.

But perhaps there was nothing about the scenery I beheld more impressive than those silent cascades, whose slender threads of water, after leaping down the steep cliffs, were lost amidst the rich herbage of the valley.

Over all the landscape there reigned the most hushed repose, which I almost feared to break, lest, like the enchanted garden of the fairy tale, a single syllable might dissolve the spell. For a long time, forgetful alike of my own situation, and the vicinity of my still slumbering companion, I remained gazing around me, hardly able to comprehend by what means I had thus suddenly been made a spectator of such a scene.

The question now was as to which of those two places we were looking down upon. Toby insisted that it was the abode of the Happar, and I that it was tenanted by their enemies the ferocious Typees.

CHAPTER EIGHT

THE IMPORTANT QUESTION, TYPEE OR HAPPAR?—A WILD GOOSE CHASE—MY SUFFERINGS—DISHEARTENING SITUATION—A NIGHT IN A RAVINE—MORNING MEAL—HAPPY IDEA OF TOBY—JOURNEY TOWARDS THE VALLEY

RECOVERING from my astonishment at the beautiful scene before me, I quickly awakened Toby, and informed him of the discovery I had made. Together we now repaired to the border of the precipice, and my companion’s admiration was equal to my own. A little reflection, however, abated our surprise at coming so unexpectedly upon this valley, since the large vales of Happar and Typee, lying upon this side of Nukuheva, and extending a considerable distance from the sea towards the interior, must necessarily terminate somewhere about this point.

The question now was as to which of those two places we were looking down upon. Toby insisted that it was the abode of the Happar, and I that it was tenanted by their enemies the ferocious Typees.

As the feverish sensation increased upon me I tossed about, still unwilling to disturb my slumbering companion, from whose side I removed two or three yards. I chanced to push aside a branch, and by so doing suddenly disclosed to my view a scene which even now I can recall with all the vividness of the first impression. Had a glimpse of the gardens of Paradise been revealed to me, I could scarcely have been more ravished with the sight.

From the spot where I lay transfixed with surprise and delight, I looked straight down into the bosom of a valley, which swept away in long undulations to the blue waters in the distance. Midway towards the sea, and peering here and there amidst the foliage, might be seen the palmetto-thatched houses of its inhabitants glistening in the sun that had bleached them to a dazzling whiteness. The vale was more than three leagues in length, and about a mile across at its greatest width.

On either side it appeared hemmed in by steep and green acclivities, which, uniting near the spot where I lay, formed an abrupt and semicircular termination of grassy cliffs and precipices hundreds of feet in height, over which flowed numberless small cascades. But the crowning beauty of the prospect was its universal verdure; and in this indeed consists, I believe, the peculiar charm of every Polynesian landscape. Everywhere below me, from the base of the precipice upon whose very verge I had been unconsciously reposing, the surface of the vale presented a mass of foliage, spread with such rich profusion that it was impossible to determine of what description of trees it consisted.

But perhaps there was nothing about the scenery I beheld more impressive than those silent cascades, whose slender threads of water, after leaping down the steep cliffs, were lost amidst the rich herbage of the valley.

Over all the landscape there reigned the most hushed repose, which I almost feared to break, lest, like the enchanted garden of the fairy tale, a single syllable might dissolve the spell. For a long time, forgetful alike of my own situation, and the vicinity of my still slumbering companion, I remained gazing around me, hardly able to comprehend by what means I had thus suddenly been made a spectator of such a scene.
Typees. To be sure I was not entirely convinced by my own arguments, but Toby’s proposition to descend at once into the valley, and partake of the hospitality of its inmates, seemed to me to be risking so much upon the strength of a mere supposition, that I resolved to oppose it until we had more evidence to proceed upon.

The point was one of vital importance, as the natives of Happar were not only at peace with Nukuheva, but cultivated with its inhabitants the most friendly relations, and enjoyed besides a reputation for gentleness and humanity which led us to expect from them, if not a cordial reception, at least a shelter during the short period we should remain in their territory.

On the other hand, the very name of Typee struck a panic into my heart which I did not attempt to disguise. The thought of voluntarily throwing ourselves into the hands of these cruel savages, seemed to me an act of mere madness; and almost equally so the idea of venturing into the valley, uncertain by which of these two tribes it was inhabited. That the vale at our feet was tenanted by one of them, was a point that appeared to us past all doubt, since we knew that they resided in this quarter, although our information did not enlighten us further.

My companion, however, incapable of resisting the tempting prospect which the place held out of an abundant supply of food and other means of enjoyment, still clung to his own inconsiderate view of the subject, nor could all my reasoning shake it. When I reminded him that it was impossible for either of us to know anything with certainty, and when I dwelt upon the horrible fate we should encounter were we rashly to descend into the valley, and discover too late the error we had committed, he replied by detailing all the evils of our present condition, and the sufferings we must undergo should we continue to remain where we then were.

Anxious to draw him away from the subject, if possible—

for I saw that it would be in vain to attempt changing his mind—I directed his attention to a long bright unwooded tract of land which, sweeping down from the elevations in the interior, descended into the valley before us. I then suggested to him that beyond this ridge might lie a capacious and untenanted valley, abounding with all manner of delicious fruits; for I had heard that there were several such upon the island, and proposed that we should endeavour to reach it, and if we found our expectations realized we should at once take refuge in it and remain there as long as we pleased.

He acquiesced in the suggestion; and we immediately, therefore, began surveying the country lying before us, with a view of determining upon the best route for us to pursue; but it presented little choice, the whole interval being broken into steep ridges, divided by dark ravines, extending in parallel lines at right angles to our direct course. All these we would be obliged to cross before we could hope to arrive at our destination.

A weary journey! But we decided to undertake it, though, for my own part, I felt little prepared to encounter its fatigues, shivering and burning by turns with the ague and fever; for I knew how else to describe the alternate sensations I experienced, and suffering not a little from the lameness which afflicted me. Added to this was the faintness consequent on our meagre diet—a calamity in which Toby participated to the same extent as myself.

These circumstances, however, only augmented my anxiety to reach a place which promised us plenty and repose, before I should be reduced to a state which would render me altogether unable to perform the journey. Accordingly we now commenced it by descending the almost perpendicular side of a steep and narrow gorge, bristling with a thick growth of reeds. Here there was but one mode for us to

He acquiesced in the suggestion; and we immediately, therefore, began surveying the country lying before us, with a view of determining upon the best route for us to pursue; but it presented little choice, the whole interval being broken into steep ridges, divided by dark ravines, extending in parallel lines at right angles to our direct course. All these we would be obliged to cross before we could hope to arrive at our destination.

A weary journey! But we decided to undertake it, though, for my own part, I felt little prepared to encounter its fatigues, shivering and burning by turns with the ague and fever; for I knew how else to describe the alternate sensations I experienced, and suffering not a little from the lameness which afflicted me. Added to this was the faintness consequent on our meagre diet—a calamity in which Toby participated to the same extent as myself.

These circumstances, however, only augmented my anxiety to reach a place which promised us plenty and repose, before I should be reduced to a state which would render me altogether unable to perform the journey. Accordingly we now commenced it by descending the almost perpendicular side of a steep and narrow gorge, bristling with a thick growth of reeds. Here there was but one mode for us to

He acquiesced in the suggestion; and we immediately, therefore, began surveying the country lying before us, with a view of determining upon the best route for us to pursue; but it presented little choice, the whole interval being broken into steep ridges, divided by dark ravines, extending in parallel lines at right angles to our direct course. All these we would be obliged to cross before we could hope to arrive at our destination.

A weary journey! But we decided to undertake it, though, for my own part, I felt little prepared to encounter its fatigues, shivering and burning by turns with the ague and fever; for I knew how else to describe the alternate sensations I experienced, and suffering not a little from the lameness which afflicted me. Added to this was the faintness consequent on our meagre diet—a calamity in which Toby participated to the same extent as myself.

These circumstances, however, only augmented my anxiety to reach a place which promised us plenty and repose, before I should be reduced to a state which would render me altogether unable to perform the journey. Accordingly we now commenced it by descending the almost perpendicular side of a steep and narrow gorge, bristling with a thick growth of reeds. Here there was but one mode for us to
adopt. We seated ourselves upon the ground, and guided our descent by catching at the canes in our path. This velocity with which we thus slid down the side of the ravine soon brought us to a point where we could use our feet, and in a short time we arrived at the edge of the torrent, which rolled impetuously along the bed of the chasm.

After taking a refreshing draught from the water of the stream, we addressed ourselves to a much more difficult undertaking than the last. Every foot of our late descent had to be regained in ascending the opposite side of the gorge—an operation rendered the less agreeable from the consideration that in these perpindicular episodes we did not progress a hundred yards on our journey. But, ungrateful as the task was, we set about it with exemplary patience, and after a snail-like progress of an hour or more, had scaled perhaps one half of the distance, when the fever which had left me for a while returned with such violence, and accompanied by so raging a thirst, that it required all the entreaties of Toby to prevent me from losing all the fruits of my late exertion, by precipitating myself madly down the cliffs we had just climbed, in quest of the water which flowed so temptingly at their base. At the moment all my hopes and fears appeared to be merged in this one desire, careless of the consequences that might result from its gratification. I am aware of no feeling, either of pleasure or of pain, that so completely deprives one of an power to resist its impulses, as this same raging thirst.

Toby earnestly conjured me to continue the ascent, assuring me that a little more exertion would bring us to the summit, and that then in less than five minutes we should find ourselves at the brink of the stream, which must necessarily flow on the other side of the ridge.

‘Do not,’ he exclaimed, ‘turn back, now that we have proceeded thus far; for I tell you that neither of us will have the courage to repeat the attempt, if once more we find ourselves looking up to where we now are from the bottom of these rocks!’

I was not yet so perfectly beside myself as to be heedless of these representations, and therefore toiled on, ineffectually endeavouring to appease the thirst which consumed me, by thinking that in a short time I should be able to gratify it to my heart’s content.

At last we gained the top of the second elevation, the loftiest of those I have described as extending in parallel lines between us and the valley we desired to reach. It commanded a view of the whole intervening distance; and, discouraged as I was by other circumstances, this prospect plunged me into the very depths of despair. Nothing but dark and fearful chasms, separated by sharp-crested and perpendicular ridges as far as the eye could reach. Could we have stepped from summit to summit of these steep but narrow elevations we could easily have accomplished the distance; but we must penetrate to the bottom of every yawning gulf, and scale in succession every one of the eminences before us. Even Toby, although not suffering as I did, was not proof against the disheartening influences of the sight.

But we did not long stand to contemplate it, impatient as I was to reach the waters of the torrent which flowed beneath us. With an insensibility to danger which I cannot call to mind without shuddering, we threw ourselves down the depths of the ravine, starting its savage solitude with the echoes produced by the falling fragments of rock we every moment dislodged from their places, careless of the insecurity of our footing, and reckless whether the slight roots and twigs we clutched at sustained us for the while, or treacherously yielded to our grasp. For my own part, I scarcely knew whether I was helplessly falling from the heights above, or whether the fearful rapidity with which I descended was an act of my own volition.

Tras de tomar un sorbo refrescante del agua del torrente, nos aplicamos a una empresa mucho más difícil que la última. Había que recuperar cada palmo de nuestra reciente bajada, subiendo por el otro lado del barranco: operación que hacía menos agradable la consideración de que, con todos estos episodios perpendiculares, no avanzábamos ni cien yardas en nuestra expedición. Pero, aun siendo tan ingrata la tarea, nos pusimos a ella con paciencia ejemplar, y tras de un avance de caracol durante una hora o más, habíamos subido quizás la mitad de la distancia cuando la fiebre, que me había dejado algún tiempo, volvió con tal violencia, y acompañada de tan rabiosa sed, que fueron precisos todos los ruegos de Toby para impedirme que perdiera todos los frutos de mis esfuerzos anteriores, precipitándome locamente por las rocas que acababa de trepar, en busca del agua que fluía de modo tan tentador por su base. En ese momento, todas mis esperanzas y temores parecían fundirse en ese único deseo, sin preocuparme de las consecuencias que resultaran de saciarlo. Me doy cuenta de que no hay sentimiento, ni de placer ni de dolor, que le prive tan completamente a uno de poder resistir a sus impulsos, con esa sed rabiosa.

Toby me conjuró solemnemente a que continuara la subida, asegurándome que un poco más de esfuerzo nos llevaría a la cima, y que entonces, en menos de [66] cinco minutos, nos encontraríamos al borde del arroyo que tenía por fuerza que correr al otro lado de la cresta.

—¡No te vuelvas —exclamó— ahora que hemos llegado hasta aquí, porque te digo que ninguno de los dos tendrá valor para repetir el intento, si volvemos a encontrarnos mirando desde abajo, desde el fondo de esas rocas, hacia donde estamos ahora! —Yo no estaba tan totalmente fuera de mí como para no prestar atención a lo que así se me hacía considerar, y por tanto, seguía en mi esfuerzo, tratando inútilmente de apaciguar la sed que me consumía a fuerza de pensar que dentro de poco la podría saciar con satisfacción cordial.

Por fin llegamos a la cima de la segunda elevación, la más alta de las que he descrito extendiéndose en líneas paralelas entre nosotros y el valle que deseadábamos alcanzar. Dominaba la perspectiva de toda la distancia que nos separaba de él, y desamorado como yo estaba yo por otras circunstancias, esta visión me sumió en los abismos de la desesperación. No había sino terribles abismos oscuros, separados por crestas afladas y verticales, en todo lo que alcanzaba la vista. Si hubiéramos podido pasar de cima a cima de esas elevaciones, abruptas pero estrechas, fácilmente habríamos superado esa distancia, pero teníamos que penetrar hasta el fondo de cada hendidura, abierta como un bostezo, y escalar sucesivamente todas las alturas que teníamos delante. Hasta Toby, aunque no sufriera como yo, tampoco resistió al efecto descorazonador de la perspectiva.

Pero no estuvimos mucho tiempo contemplándola, por estar yo tan impaciente de alcanzar las aguas del torrente que fluía debajo de nosotros. Con una insensibilidad al peligro que no puedo recordar sin estremecerme, nos lanzamos a bajar a las profundidades del barranco, sobresaltando sus salvajes soledades con los ecos de la caída de trozos de roca que a cada momento sacábamos de su sitio, sin preocuparnos de poner el pie con seguridad, y sin fijarnos en si las leves raíces y ramas a que nos agarравábamos nos sostendrían todo el tiempo, o cederían traidoramente a nuestro tiron. Por mi parte, apenas sabía si me caía sin remedio desde las alturas de arriba, o si la terrible rapidez con que bajaba era acto de mi propia voluntad.
In a few minutes we reached the foot of the gorge, and kneeling upon a small ledge of dripping rocks, I bent over to the stream. What a delicious sensation was I now to experience! I paused for a second to concentrate all my capabilities of enjoyment, and then immerged my lips in the clear element before me. My thirst was like chills, which shook me one after another like so many shocks of electricity, while the perspiration produced by my late violent exertions congealed in icy beads upon my forehead. The fever that had been burning in my veins gave place on the instant to death-seemed to freeze every drop of blood in my body; the terror which lay beyond this series of impediments; while at the same time the dark stream shooting along its dismal channel, sent fresh chills through my shivering frame, and I felt as uncontrollable a desire to climb up towards the genial sunlight as I before had to descend the ravine. dank disagreesely damp and cold.

After two hours' perilous exertions we stood upon the summit of another ridge, and it was with difficulty I could bring myself to believe that we had ever penetrated the black and yawning chasm which then gaped at our feet. Again we gazed upon the prospect which the height commanded, but it was just as depressing as the one which had before met our eyes. I now felt that in our present situation it was in vain for us to think of ever overcoming the obstacles in our way, and I gave up all thoughts of reaching the vale which lay beyond this series of impediments; while at the same time I could not devise any scheme to extricate ourselves from the difficulties in which we were involved.

The remotest idea of returning to Nukuheva, unless assured of our vessel's departure, never once entered my mind, and indeed it was questionable whether we could have succeeded in reaching it, divided as we were from the bay by a distance we could not compute, and perplexed too in our remembrance of localities by our recent wanderings. Besides, it was undeniably the thought of retracing our steps and rendering all our painful exertions of no avail.

There is scarcely anything when a man is in difficulties that he is more disposed to look upon with abhorrence than a rightabout retrograde movement—a systematic going over of the already trodden ground: and especially if he has a love of adventure, such a course appears indescribably repulsive, so long as there remains the least hope to be derived from braving untried difficulties.

It was this feeling that prompted us to descend the opposite side of the elevation we had just scaled, although with what definite object in view it would have been impossible for either of us to tell.

Without exchanging a syllable upon the subject, Toby and myself simultaneously renounced the design which had lured us thus far—perceiving in each other's countenances that desponding expression which speaks more eloquently than words.

Together we stood towards the close of this weary day in the cavity of the third gorge we had entered, wholly incapacitated for any further exertion, until restored to some degree of strength by food and repose.

We seated ourselves upon the least uncomfortable spot we could select, and Toby produced from the bosom of his frock the sacred package. In silence we partook of the small morsel of refreshment that had been left from the morning's repast, and without once propos-

Al cabo de dos horas de peligroso esfuerzo, llegamos a la cima de otra cresta, y me costó trabajo creer que habíamos penetrado jamás en el negro abismo hostigante que se abría entonces a nuestros pies. Volvimos a mirar la perspectiva que dominaba esa altura, pero era tan deprimente como la que antes se nos había puesto ante los ojos. Ahora sentía que en nuestra situación actual era vano que pensáramos superar jamás los obstáculos de nuestro camino, y renuncié a toda idea de alcanzar el valle que quedaba tras toda la serie de impedimentos, a la vez que tampoco era capaz de pensar algún recurso para escapar de las dificultades en que estábamos metidos.

La más remota idea de volver a Nukuheva, sin asegurarnos de que el barco se hubiera ido, no me pasó una sola vez por la cabeza, y desde luego, era dudoso que hubiéramos logrado alcanzarla, separados como estábamos de la bahía por una distancia que no podíamos calcular, y desconcertados también en nuestros recuerdos de lugares por nuestros recientes vagabundos. Además, no se podía soportar la idea de volver sobre nuestros pasos, y hacer inútiles todos nuestros penosos esfuerzos.

Cuando un hombre se encuentra en una dificultad, difícilmente hay algo que esté dispuesto a mirar con más aborrecimiento que un movimiento retrogrado de medias vueltas: el recorrer sistemáticamente un terreno ya pisado, sobre todo si tiene amor a las aventuras. Tal decisión le parece indescriptiblemente repelente, mientras que a obtener la menor esperanza en desafiar dificultades no probadas.

Ese sentir fue el que nos sugirió descender el lado opuesto de la elevación que acabábamos de escalar, aunque ninguno de nosotros habría sido capaz de decir qué objetivo concreto teníamos por mira. [68]

Sin cambiar una sílaba sobre el tema, Toby y yo renunciamos simultáneamente al desengaño que nos había atado hasta allí, notando cada cual en el rostro del otro esa expresión desesperada que habla más eloquentemente que las palabras.

Juntos llegamos al final de ese fatigoso día en la cavidad de la tercera garganta en que habíamos entrado, completamente incapacitados para más esfuerzo hasta que nos restablecieran hasta cierto punto el alimento y el descanso.

Nos sentamos en el sitio menos incómodo que podíamos elegir, y Toby sacó del seno de su blusón el sagrado paquete. En silencio tomamos el pequeño bocado de refrigerio que había quedado de por la mañana, y sin proponernos ni por una vez violar...
ing to violate the sanctity of our engagement with respect to the remain-
der, we rose to our feet, and proceeded to construct some sort of shelter under which we might obtain the sleep we so greatly needed.

Fortunately the spot was better adapted to our purpose than the
one in which we had passed the last wretched night. We cleared
away the tall reeds from the small but almost level bit of ground,
and twisted them into a low basket-like hut, which we covered with
a profusion of long thick leaves, gathered from a tree near at hand. We
disposed them thickly all around, reserving only a slight open-
ing that barely permitted us to crawl under the shelter we had thus
obtained.

These deep recesses, though protected from the winds that
assail the summits of their lofty sides, are damp and chill to a de-
gree that one would hardly anticipate in such a climate; and being
unprovided with anything but our woollen frocks and thin duck tron-
ers to resist the cold of the place, we were the more solicitous to
render our habitation for the night as comfortable as we could. Ac-
cordingly, in addition to what we had already done, we plucked
down all the leaves within our reach and threw them in a heap over
our little hut, into which we now crept, raking after us a reserved
supply to form our couch.

That night nothing but the pain I suffered prevented me
from sleeping most refreshing. As it was, I caught two or three
naps, while Toby slept away at my side as soundly as though he had
been sandwiched between two Holland sheets. Luckily it did not
rain, and we were preserved from the misery which a heavy shower
would have occasioned us. In the morning I was awakened by the
sonorous voice of my companion ringing in my ears and bidding
me rise. I crawled out from our heap of leaves, and was astonished
at the change which a good night’s rest had wrought in his appear-
ance. He was as blithe and joyous as a young bird, and was staying
the keeness of his morning’s appetite by chewing the soft bark of a
delicate branch he held in his hand, and he recommended the like
to me as an admirable antidoate against the gnawings of hunger.

For my own part, though feeling materially better than I
had done the preceding evening, I could not look at the limb that
had pained me so violently at intervals during the last twenty-four
hours, without experiencing a sense of alarm that I strove in vain to
shake off. Unwilling to disturb the flow of my comrade’s spirits, I
managed to stifle the complaints to which I might otherwise have
given vent, and calling upon him good-humouredly to speed our
operation concluded, we swallowed, or rather absorbed, by a pecu-
lar kind of slow sucking process, our respective morsels of nour-
ishment, and then entered into a discussion as to the steps was
necessary for us to pursue.

‘What’s to be done now?’ inquired I, rather dolefully.

‘Descend into that same valley we descried yesterday.’
rejoined Toby, with a rapidity and loudness of utterance that al-
most led me to suspect he had been slyly devouring the breadside
of an ox in some of the adjoining thickets. ‘What else,’ he
continued, ‘remains for us to do but that, to be sure? Why, we
shall both starve to a certainty if we remain here; and as to your
fears of those Typees—depend upon it, it is all nonsense. It is
impossible that the inhabitants of such a lovely place as we saw
can be anything else but good fellows; and if you choose rather
to perish with hunger in one of these soppy caverns, I for one
prefer to chance a bold descent into the valley, and risk the con-
sequences’.

‘And who is to pilot us thither,’ I asked, ‘even if we should
nuestro sagrado compromiso respecto al resto, nos pusimos de
pie, y empezamos a construir alguna suerte de refugio bajo el
cual pudiéramos conseguir el sueño que tanto necesitábamos.

Por fortuna, el lugar era más apropiado a nuestro propósito que
aquel en que habíamos pasado nuestra última noche miserable. Cor-
tamos las cachas de un trozo, pequeño pero casi liso de terreno, y las
trenzamos en una especie de baja cabaña de cestería, que cubrimos
con abundancia de largas hojas gruesas de un árbol cercano. Éstas
las dispusimos alrededor rápidamente, reservando sólo una leve aber-
tura que apenas nos permitió entrar gateando bajo el refugio que así
hábiamos obtenido.

Esa noche, sólo el dolor que sufría me impidió dormir del modo
más confortante. Aun así, eché dos o tres sueños, mientras Toby
dormía seguido, a mi lado, tan tranquilamente como si estuviera
emparedado entre dos sábanas de holanda. Por fortuna, no llovió, y
nos salvamos de la misera situación que nos habría ocasionado un
fuerte chaparrón. [69] Por la mañana me desperté la ruidosa voz de
mi compañero sonando en mis oídos y mandándome levantar. Salí a
gatas de nuestro montón de hojas y me quedé asombrado del camb-
bio que el descanso de una buena noche había producido en su as-
pecto. Estaba tan alegre y gozoso como un pajarillo, y refrenaba las
punzadas de su apetito mañanero mascando la corteza blanda de
una delicada rama que tenía en la mano, y que me recomendé como
admirable antídoto contra los mordiscos del hambre.

Por mi parte, aunque me sentía materialmente mejor que la no-
che anterior, no pude mirar la pierna, que tan violentamente me ha-
bía dolido a intervalos durante las últimas veinticuatro horas, sin
experimentar una sensación de alarma que en vano intenté rechazar.
No queriendo estropear la elevación del humor de mi camarada, me
las arreglé para ahogar las quejas con que de otro modo me habría
deshagado, y gritándole con buen humor que se diera prisa en su
banquete, me preparé a él lavándome en el torrente. Con-
cluida esta operación, tragamos, o más bien absorbimos, por una
peculiar forma de proceso chupador, nuestros respectivos bocados de
alimento, y empezamos a discutir qué paso tendríamos necesi-
dad de dar.

—¿Qué hay que hacer ahora? —pregunté, bastante acongojado.

—Bajar al mismo valle que observamos ayer —replicó Toby,
con tal rapidez y sonoridad de voz que casi me hizo sospechar que
hubiera estado devorando a escondidas un solomillo de buey en al-
guno de los matorrales cercanos—. ¿Qué otra cosa —continuó—
nos queda que hacer, desde luego? En fin, es seguro que nos morí-
remos de hambre si nos quedamos aquí; y en cuanto a tus temores
sobre esos taipis... puedes estar seguro de que son tonterías. Es
imposible que los habitantes de un sitio tan delicioso como el que he-
mos visto puedan ser otra cosa que buena gente, y si prefieres mo-
rirte de hambre en una de estas cavernas empapadas, yo, por mi
parte, prefiero arriesgarme a un descenso atrevido al valle, y afon-
rar las consecuencias.

—Y ¿quién nos va a guiar hasta allí —pregunté—, aunque nos
decidamos a la medida que propones? ¿Vamos a volver a subir y bajar por esos precipicios que cruzamos ayer, hasta que alcancemos el sitio de donde salimos, y luego vamos a salir volando desde los precipicios hasta el valle?

—La verdad es que no había pensado en eso —dijo Toby—: desde luego, los dos lados del valle parecían bordeados por precipicios, ¿no?

—Sí —contesté yo—: tan abruptos como los costados de un buque de guerra, y unas cien veces más altos. [70] Mi compañero desplomó la cabeza en el pecho y permaneció un rato pensando profundamente. De repente, se puso de pie, mientras sus ojos se iluminaban con ese fulgor de inteligencia que señala la presencia de alguna idea luminosa.

—Sí, si —exclamó—: todos estos torrentes corren en la misma dirección, y necesariamente deben correr al valle antes de alcanzar el mar; todo lo que tenemos que hacer es seguir el torrente, y antes o después nos llevará al valle.

—Tienes razón, Toby —exclamé—, tienes razón; debe llevarnos allí, y rápidamente, además, porque mira con que inclinación tan fuerte baja el agua.

—Sí, es verdad —prorrumpió mi compañero, entusiasmado ante mi comprobación de su teoría—, sí que es verdad; en fin, está tan claro como el mango de una pica. Vamos en seguida; vamos, rechazemos esas estúpidas ideas sobre los taipis, y ¡hurra por el delicioso valle de los happars!

—Te empeñas en que sean los happars, ya lo veo, mi querido amigo; rogues a los cielos que no te veas desengañado —observé, sacudiendo la cabeza.

—Amén a todo eso, y mucho más —gritó Toby, precipitándose abajo—, pero es Happar, porque no puede ser más que Happar. Un valle tan delicioso... tales bosques de árboles del pan... tales espesuras de cocoteros... tales soledades de matorrales de guayaba... ¡Ah, compañero! Note quedes atrás: en nombre de todos los frutos deliciosos, me estoy muriendo por llegar a ellos. Vamos, vamos, tira adelante, sé un muchacho dispuesto; no te preocupes por las rocas: quitálas de delante de una patada, como yo; y mañana, viejo, te doy mi palabra, estaremos en la abundancia. ¡Vamos!

—Y, diciendo así, se precipitó por el barranco como un loco, olvidando mi incapacidad de mantenerme a su altura. Sin embargo, poco minutos después cayó la exuberancia de sus ánimos, y deteniéndose un rato, me permitió alcanzarle. [71]

---

**CHAPTER NINE**

**PELIGROSO PASO DEL BARRANCO. DESCENSO AL VALLE**

La confianza sin miedo de Toby era contagiosa, y empecé a adoptar el lado Happar de la cuestión. Sin embargo, no podía reprimir cierta sensación de temblor mientras caminábamos por esas sombrías soledades. Nuestro avance, al principio relativamente fácil, se fue haciendo cada vez más difícil. El cauce de la corriente de agua estaba cubierto de fragmentos de rocas rotas, que habían caído desde lo alto, produciendo muchas interrupciones en el curso del rápido torrente, que se agitaba y arremolinaba en torno a ellas, formando de vez en cuando pequeñas cascadas, cayendo en profundos estanques, o salpicando desatado en montones de piedras.

Por la estrechez de la garganta y lo abrupto de sus lados, no había modo de avanzar por ella sino vadeando por el agua, a tropezones, a cada momento, por los obstáculos escondidos bajo su superfici-

(*) Giovanni B. Belzoni (1778-1823), explorador y arqueólogo, publicó sus investigaciones en las pirámides y tumbas egipcias.
hidden under its surface, or tripping against the huge roots of trees. But the most annoying hindrance we encountered was from a multitude of crooked boughs, which, shooting out almost horizontally from the sides of the chasm, twisted themselves together in fantastic masses almost to the surface of the stream, affording us no passage except under the low arches which they formed. Under these we were obliged to crawl on our hands and feet, sliding along the oozy surface of the rocks, or slipping into the deep pools, and with scare light enough to guide us. Occasionally we would strike our heads against some projecting limb of a tree; and while imprudently engaged in rubbing the injured part, would fall sprawling amongst flinty fragments, cutting and bruising ourselves, whilst the unpitying waters flowed over our prostrate bodies. Belzoni, worming himself through the subterranean passages of the Egyptian catacombs, could not have met with greater impediments than those we here encountered. But we struggled against them manfully, well knowing our only hope lay in advancing.

Towards sunset we halted at a spot where we made prepa-
rations for passing the night. Here we constructed a hut, in much the same way as before, and crawling into it, endeavoured to forget our sufferings. My companion, I believe, slept pretty soundly; but at day break, when we rolled out of our dwelling, I felt nearly disqualified for any further efforts. Toby prescribed as a remedy for my illness the contents of one of our little silk packages, to be taken at once in a single dose. To this species of medical treatment, however, I would by no means accede, much as he insisted upon it; and so we partook of our usual morsel, and secretly resumed our journey. It was now the fourth day since we left Nukuheva, and the gnawings of hunger became painfully acute. We were fain to pacify them by chewing the tender bark of roots and twigs, which, if they did not afford us nourishment, were at least sweet and pleasant to the taste.

Our progress along the steep watercourse was necessarily slow, and by noon we had not advanced more than a mile. It was somewhere near this part of the day that the noise of falling waters, which we had faintly caught in the early morning, became more distinct; and it was not long before we were arrested by a rocky precipice of nearly a hundred feet in depth, that extended all across the channel, and over which the wild stream poured in an unbroken leap. On each hand the walls of the ravine presented their overhanging sides both above and below the fall, affording no means whatever of avoiding the cataract by taking a circuit round it.

‘What’s to be done now, Toby?’ said I.

‘Why,’ rejoined he, ‘as we cannot retreat, I suppose we must keep shoving along.’

‘Very true, my dear Toby; but how do you purpose accomplishing that desirable object?’

‘By jumping from the top of the fall, if there be no other way,’ unhesitatingly replied my companion: ‘it will be much the quickest way of descent; but as you are not quite as active as I am, we will try some other way.’

And, so saying, he crept cautiously along and peered over into the abyss, while I remained wondering by what possible means we could overcome this apparently insuperable obstruction. As soon as my companion had completed his survey, I eagerly inquired the result.

‘The result of my observations you wish to know, do you?’ began Toby, deliberately, with one of his odd looks: ‘well, my lad, the result of my observations is very quickly imparted. It is at present uncertain which of our two necks will have the honour to be broken cie, or chocking with las grandes raíces de los árboles. Pero el estor-
bo más molesto que encontramos fue una muchedumbre de ramas
torcedas que, disparándose casi horizontalmente desde los lados del
barranco, se enredaban retorcidos en fantásticas masas casi hasta la
superficie del torrente, sin dejarnos paso sino por los bajos arcos
que formaban. Por debajo de éstos estábamos obligados a gatear a
cuatro patas, deslizándonos por la rezumante superficie de las ro-
cas, o resbalando a profundos estanques, y con escasa luz para guiarnos. De vez en cuando, nos [72] golpeábamos la cabeza contra algu-
a rama saliente de árbol, y mientras estábamos ocupados impru
dentemente en restregarnos la parte dolorida, caíamos de brudes entre
fragmentos de pedernal, cortándonos y arañándonos, mientras las despiadadas aguas corrían sobre nuestros cuerpos caídos. Belzoni*,
abriéndose paso como un gusano por los pasadizos subterráneos de
las catacumbas egipcias, no pudo encontrar mayores obstáculos que los que allí hallamos. Pero luchamos contra ellos valientemente, sabiendo muy bien que nuestra única esperanza estaba en avanzar.

Hacia el ocaso, nos detuvimos en un lugar donde hicimos preparati-
vos para pasar la noche. Allí construimos una cabaña, de modo muy parecido a la anterior, y, entrando a gatas en ella, intentamos olvidar nuestros sufrimientos. Mi compañero creo que durmió de modo bien saludable, pero al amanecer, cuando salimos rodando de nuestra morada, yo me sentí casi incapacitado para nuevos esfuerzos. Toby prescribió como remedio de mi enfermedad el contenido de uno de nuestros paquetitos de seda, para tomarse de una vez en una sola dosis. Sin embar-
go, yo no quise acceder de ningún modo a esa especie de tratamiento médico, por más que él se empeñó, así que tomamos nuestro habitual bocabo
do, y continuamos en silencio nuestra expedición. Hacía ya cuatro días que salimos de Nukuheva, y los mordiscos del hambre se habían hecho dolorosamente agudos. Nos empeñábamos en calmarlos mordiendo la corte
tiza tierra de raíces y ramas, que aunque no nos proporcionaba alimento, era por lo menos dulce y grata para el gusto.

Nuestro avance a lo largo del abrupto curso de agua fue por fuerza
lento, y a mediodía no habíamos avanzado más de una milla. Hacia ese momento del día, el ruido de las aguas al caer, que nos había llegado débilmente por la mañana temprano, se hizo más claro, y no tardamos en vernos detenidos por un precipicio rocoso de unos cien pies de profundidad, que se extendía a todo lo ancho del canal, y sobre el cual saltaba el torrente salvaje en un salto continuo. A un lado y a otro, las paredes del barranco hacían sobresalir sus lados por encima y por debajo de la catarata, sin dejar medio ninguno de evitarla dando un rodeo.

—¿Qué vamos a hacer ahora, Toby? —dije.

—Bueno —replicó él—; como no podemos retirarnos, supongo que tendremos que seguir avanzando.

—Es mucha verdad, mi querido Toby, pero ¿cómo piensas cum-
plir ese objetivo tan deseable? [73]

—Saltando desde lo alto de la cascada, si no hay otro modo —
contestó mi compañero sin vacilar—; será, con mucho, el modo más rápido de bajar. Pero como tú no eres tan activo como yo, probare-
mos otro modo.

Y diciendo así, se deslizó cautelosamente adelante y se asomó sobre el abismo, mientras yo me quedaba preguntándome por qué medios posibles superaría ese obstáculo al parecer insuperable. Tan pronto como mi compañero completó su inspección, pregunté ávidamente el resultado.

—Deseas saber el resultado de mis observaciones, ¿no es eso?
—empezó Toby, deliberadamente, con una de sus caras extrañas—;
¡bueno, muchachito, el resultado de mis observaciones se dice en
guía. Por el momento, no es seguro cuál de nuestros cuellos ten-
first; but about a hundred to one would be a fair bet in favour of the man who takes the first jump.'

‘Then it is an impossible thing, is it?’ inquired I gloomily.

‘No, shipmate; on the contrary, it is the easiest thing in life: the only awkward point is the sort of usage which our unhappy limbs may receive when we arrive at the bottom, and what sort of travelling trim we shall be in afterwards. But follow me now, and I will show you the only chance we have.’ With this he conducted me to the verge of the cataract, and pointed along the side of the ravine to a number of curious looking roots, some three or four inches in thickness, and several feet long, which, after twisting among the fissures of the rock, shot perpendicularly from it and ran tapering to a point in the air, hanging over the gulf like so many dark icicles. They covered nearly the entire surface of one side of the gorge, the lowest of them reaching even to the water. Many were moss grown and decayed, with their extremities snapped short off, and those in the immediate vicinity of the fall were slippery with moisture.

Toby’s scheme, and it was a desperate one, was to entrust ourselves to these treacherous-looking roots, and by slipping down from one to another to gain the bottom.

‘Are you ready to venture it?’ asked Toby, looking at me earnestly but without saying a word as to the practicability of the plan.

‘I am,’ was my reply; for I saw it was our only resource if we wished to advance, and as for retreat, all thoughts of that sort had been long abandoned.

After I had signified my assent, Toby, without uttering a single word, crawled along the dripping ledge until he gained a point from whence he could just reach one of the largest of the pendant roots; he shook it—it quivered in his grasp, and when he let it go it twanged in the air like a strong, wire sharply struck. Satisfied by his scrutiny, my light limbed companion swung himself nimblly upon it, and twisting his legs round it in sailor fashion, slipped down eight or ten feet, where his weight gave it a motion not unlike that of a pendulum. He could not venture to descend any further; so holding on with one hand, he with the other shook one by one all the slender roots around him, and at last, finding one which he thought trustworthy, shifted himself self to it and continued his downward progress.

So far so well; but I could not avoid comparing my heavier frame and disabled condition with his light figure and remarkable activity; but there was no help for it, and in less than a minute’s time I was swinging directly over his head. As soon as his upturned frame and disabled condition with his light figure and remarkable activity were visible to me, I expected them every moment to swing to and fro in the air, and I expected them every moment to drop into the waters beneath.

As one after another the treacherous roots yielded to my grasp, and fell into the torrent, my heart sunk within me. The branches on which I was suspended over the yawning chasm swang to and fro in the air, and I expected them every moment to swing into the waters beneath.

On arriving towards the end of the second stage in this vertical journey, and shaking the long roots which were round me, to my consternation they snapped off one after another like so many pipe stems, and fell in fragments against the side of the gulf, splashing at last into the waters beneath.

As one after another the treacherous roots yielded to my grasp, and fell into the torrent, my heart sunk within me. The branches on which I was suspended over the yawning chasm swang to and fro in the air, and I expected them every moment to swing into the waters beneath.

On arriving towards the end of the second stage in this vertical journey, and shaking the long roots which were round me, to my consternation they snapped off one after another like so many pipe stems, and fell in fragments against the side of the gulf, splashing at last into the waters beneath.

As one after another the treacherous roots yielded to my grasp, and fell into the torrent, my heart sunk within me. The branches on which I was suspended over the yawning chasm swang to and fro in the air, and I expected them every moment to swing into the waters beneath.

On arriving towards the end of the second stage in this vertical journey, and shaking the long roots which were round me, to my consternation they snapped off one after another like so many pipe stems, and fell in fragments against the side of the gulf, splashing at last into the waters beneath.

As one after another the treacherous roots yielded to my grasp, and fell into the torrent, my heart sunk within me. The branches on which I was suspended over the yawning chasm swang to and fro in the air, and I expected them every moment to swing into the waters beneath.

On arriving towards the end of the second stage in this vertical journey, and shaking the long roots which were round me, to my consternation they snapped off one after another like so many pipe stems, and fell in fragments against the side of the gulf, splashing at last into the waters beneath.
to snap in twain. Appalled at the dreadful fate that menaced me, I clutched frantically at the only large root which remained near me, but in vain; I could not reach it, though my fingers were within a few inches of it. Again and again I tried to reach it, until at length, maddened with the thought of my situation, I swayed myself violently by striking my foot against the side of the rock, and at the instant that I approached the large root caught desperately at it, and transferred myself to it. It vibrated violently under the sudden weight, but fortunately did not give way.

My brain grew dizzy with the idea of the frightful risk I had just run, and I involuntarily closed my eyes to shut out the view of the depth beneath me. For the instant I was safe, and I uttered a devout ejaculation of thanksgiving for my escape.

‘Pretty well done,’ shouted Toby underneath me; ‘you are nimbler than I thought you to be—hopping about up there from root to root like any young squirrel. As soon as you have diverted yourself sufficiently, I would advise you to proceed.’

‘Aye, aye, Toby, all in good time: two or three more such famous roots as this, and I shall be with you.’

The residue of my downward progress was comparatively easy; the roots were in greater abundance, and in one or two places jutting out points of rock assisted me greatly. In a few moments I was standing by the side of my companion.

Substituting a stout stick for the one I had thrown aside at the top of the precipice, we now continued our course along the bed of the ravine. Soon we were saluted by a sound in advance, that grew by degrees louder and louder, as the noise of the cataract we were leaving behind gradually died on our ears.

‘Another precipice for us, Toby.’

‘Very good; we can descend them, you know—come on.’

Nothing indeed appeared to depress or intimidate this intrepid fellow. Typees or Niagaras, he was as ready to engage one as the other, and I could not avoid a thousand times congratulating myself upon having such a companion in an enterprise like the present.

After an hour’s painful progress, we reached the verge of another fall, still loftier than the preceding and flanked both above and below with the same steep masses of rock, presenting, however, here and there narrow irregular ledges, supporting a shallow soil, on which grew a variety of bushes and trees, whose bright verdure contrasted beautifully with the foamy waters that flowed between them.

Toby, who invariably acted as pioneer, now proceeded to reconnoitre. On his return, he reported that the shelves of rock on our right would enable us to gain with little risk the bottom of the cataract. Accordingly, leaving the bed of the stream at the very point where it thundered down, we began crawling along one of those sloping ledges until it carried us to within a few feet of another that inclined downwards at a still sharper angle, and upon which, by assisting each other we managed to alight in safety. We warily crept along this, steadying ourselves by the naked roots of the shrubs that clung to every fissure. As we proceeded, the narrow path became still more contracted, rendering it difficult for us to maintain our footing, until suddenly, as we reached an angle of the wall of rock where we had expected it to widen, we perceived to our consternation that a yard or two tieran en dos. Horrorizado ante el terrible destino que me amenazaba, eché mano frenéticamente a la única raíz grande que queda-ba cerca de mí, pero en vano: no podía alcanzarla, aunque mis dedos quedaban a pocas pulgadas. Una vez y otra traté de alcanzar-lá, hasta que por fin, enloquecido al pensar en mi situación, me balanceé violentamente golpeando con el pie contra el lado de la roca, y en el momento en que me acercaba a la raíz grande, me agarré desesperadamente y me trasladé a ella. Vibré violentamente con el peso repentino, pero por fortuna no cedió. [75]

Mi cerebro quedó aturdido con la idea del terrible riesgo que acababa de correr, e involuntariamente cerré los ojos para no ver la perspectiva que tenía debajo. Por el momento, estaba a salvo, y lanzé una devota exclamación de agradecimiento por mi escapatoria.

El resto de mi avance hacia abajo fue relativamente fácil: las raíces eran más abundantes, y en uno o dos sitios, puntas salientes de roca me ayudaron mucho. Pocos momentos después estaba al lado de mi compañero.

Tomé un grueso bastón en lugar del que había tirado en lo alto del precipicio, y seguimos nuestro camino por el cauce del barran-co. Pronto nos recibió un ruido, por delante, que crecía poco a poco, cada vez más sonoro, a medida que el ruido de la catarata que dejábamos atrás se extinguía gradualmente en nuestros oídos.

—¿Muy bien hecho! —gritó Toby, debajo de mí—. Eres más ágil de lo que yo creía: brincando por ahí, de rama en rama, como cualquiera ardilla joven. Tan pronto como te hayas divertido bastan-te, te aconsejaré como seguir.

—Eso, eso, Toby, cada cosa a su tiempo: dos o tres raíces más, tan famosas como ésta, y estaré contigo.

Al cabo de una hora de penoso avance, llegamos al borde de otra cascada, aún más alta que la anterior, y flanqueada por arriba y por abajo por las mismas masas abruptas de roca, aunque presentando aquí y allá bordes irregulares que sostenían tierra superficial en que crecía una gran variedad de arbustos y árboles, cuyo claro verdor contrastaba hermosamente con las espumosas aguas que corrían entre ellos.

Toby, que actuaba siempre de explorador, procedió entonces a hacer un reconocimiento. A su regreso, informó que las repi-sas de roca a nuestra derecha nos permitirían alcanzar con poco peligro el fondo de la catarata. Por tanto, dejando el cauce del torrente en el mismo punto en que caía tronando, empezamos a gaterar a lo largo de uno de esos bordes en declive hasta que nos llevó a pocos pies de otro que se inclinaba hacia abajo a un ángulo aún más agudo, y por el cual, ayudándonos unos a otros, nos las arreglamos para llegar abajo a salvo. Cautamente nos deslizamos a lo largo de éste, sujetándonos a las raíces desnudas [76] de los arbustos que se agarraban a cada grieta. Al avan-zar, el estrecho sendero se volvió aún más angosto, haciéndo-nos difícil conservar el pie apoyado, hasta que de repente, al alcanzar una esquina del muro de roca donde habíamos espera-do que se ensanchara, percibimos, para nuestra consternación,
Toby as usual led the van, and in silence I waited to learn from him how he proposed to extricate us from this new difficulty.

Well, my boy,' I exclaimed, after the expiration of several minutes, during which time my companion had not uttered a word, 'what’s to be done now?'

He replied in a tranquil tone, that probably the best thing we could do in our present strait was to get out of it as soon as possible.

'Yes, my dear Toby, but tell me how we are to get out of it.'

'Something in this sort of style,' he replied, and at the same moment to my horror he slipped sideways off the rocks and, as I then thought, by good fortune merely, alighted among the spreading branches of a species of palm tree, that shooting its hardy roots along a ledge below, curved its trunk upwards into the air, and presented a thick mass of foliage about twenty feet below the spot where we had thus suddenly been brought to a standstill. I involuntarily held my breath, expecting to see the form of my companion, after being sustained for a moment by the branches of the tree, sink through their frail support, and fall headlong to the bottom. To my surprise and joy, however, he recovered himself, and disentangling his limbs from the fractured branches, he peered out from his leafy bed, and shouted lustily, 'Come on, my hearty there is no other alternative!' and with this he ducked beneath the foliage, and slipping down the trunk, stood in a moment at least fifty feet beneath me, upon the broad shelf of rock from which sprung the tree he had descended.

What would I not have given at that moment to have been by his side. The feat he had just accomplished seemed little less than miraculous, and I could hardly credit the evidence of my senses when I saw the wide distance that a single daring act had so suddenly placed between us.

Toby’s animating ‘come on’ again sounded in my ears, and dreading to lose all confidence in myself if I remained meditating upon the step, I once more gazed down to assure myself of the relative bearing of the tree and my own position, and then closing my eyes and uttering one comprehensive ejaculation of prayer, I inclined myself over towards the abyss, and after one breathless instant fell with a crash into the tree, the branches snapping and cracking with my weight, as I sunk lower and lower among them, until I was stopped by coming in contact with a sturdy limb.

In a few moments I was standing at the foot of the tree manipulating myself all over with a view of ascertaining the extent of the injuries I had received. To my surprise the only effects of my feat were a few slight contusions too trifling to care about. The rest of our descent was easily accomplished, and in half an hour after regaining the ravine we had partaken of our evening morsel, built our hut as usual, and crawled under its shelter.

The next morning, in spite of our debility and the agony of hunger under which we were now suffering, though neither of us confessed to the fact, we struggled along our dismal and still difficult and dangerous path, cheered by the hope of soon catching a glimpse of the valley before us, and towards evening the voice of a cataract which had for some time sounded like a low deep bass to our ears, and assured us that we were approaching its vicinity.

That evening we stood on the brink of a precipice, over which the dark stream bounded in one final leap of full 300 feet. The sheer descent terminated in the region we so long had sought. On each side of the fall, two lofty and perpendicular bluffs buttressed the sides of the enormous cliff, and projected into the sea of water till it was lost from sight; and after our body, which the dark stream bounded in one final leap or cataract which had for some time sounded like a low deep bass to our ears, and assured us that we were approaching its vicinity.

Ese anochecer estábamos al borde de un precipicio, sobre el cual el oscuro torrente saltaba en un brinco final de más de trescientos pies. El continuo descenso terminaba en la región que durante tanto tiempo habíamos buscado. A un lado y a otro de la catarata, dos altos peñascos verticales reforzaban los lados de los enormes precipicios y
verdure with which the valley waved, and a range of similar project-
ing eminences stood disposed in a half circle about the head if the
vale. A thick canopy of trees hung over the very verge of the fall, leaving an arched aperture for the passage of the waters, which imparted a strange picturesqueness to the scene.

The valley was now before us; but instead of being con-
ducted into its smiling bosom by the gradual descent of the deep
course we had thus far pursued, all our labours now appeared
to have been rendered futile by its abrupt termination. But, bitterly
disappointed, we did not entirely despair.

As it was now near sunset we determined to pass the night
where we were, and on the morrow, refreshed by sleep, and by eat-
ing at one meal all our stock of food, to accomplish a descent into
the valley, or perish in the attempt.

We laid ourselves down that night on a spot, the recollec-
tion of which still makes me shudder. A small table of rock which
was projected over the precipice on one side of the stream, and was
sustained a huge trunk of a tree which must have been deposited there by some heavy freshet. It lay
drenched by the spray of the fall, awaited the morning’s
light beneath such shelter as it afforded.

At length the day dawned upon us, and rising from our
miserable pallet, we stretched our stiffened joints, and after eating
all that remained of our bread, prepared for the last stage of our
journey. I will not recount every hair-breath escape, and after
every fearful difficulty that occurred before we succeeded in reaching
the bosom of the valley. As I have already described similar scenes, it
will be sufficient to say that at length, after great toil and great dan-
gers, we both stood with no limbs broken at the head of that magni-
ficent vale which five days before had so suddenly burst upon my
sight, and almost beneath the shadow of those very cliffs from whose
summits we had gazed upon the prospect.

CHAPTER TEN

THE HEAD OF THE VALLEY—CAUTIOUS ADVANCE—A
PATH—FRUIT—DISCOVERY OF TWO OF THE NATIVES—
THEIR SINGULAR CONDUCT—APPROACH TOWARDS THE
INHABITED PARTS OF THE VALE—SENSATION PRODUCED
BY OUR APPEARANCE—RECEPTION AT THE HOUSE OF
ONE OF THE NATIVES

HOW to obtain the fruit which we felt convinced must grow
near at hand was our first thought.

Typee or Happar? A frightful death at the hands of the fierce-
est of cannibals, or a kindly reception from a gentler race of sav-
gages? Which? But it was too late now to discuss a question which
would so soon be answered.

La entrada del valle ante nosotros, pero, en vez de ser llevados
to su seno sonrient por el descenso gradual del profundo curso de
agua que habíamos seguido, todos nuestros esfuerzos parecían ha-
berse hecho inútiles por su abrupta terminación. Sin embargo, an-
que amargamente decepcionados, no desesperamos por completo.

Como ya era casi la puesta del sol, decidimos pasar la noche
donde estábamos, y por la mañana, refrescados por el sueño y por
comer de una sola vez toda nuestra reserva de alimento, lograr el
descenso al valle o perecer en el intento. [78]

Nos tumbamos esa noche en un lugar cuyo recuerdo me hace
extremecer: una pequeña mesa de roca que se asomaba al precipicio
por un lado del torrente, y que estaba empapada por la salpicadura
de la cascada, sostenía el gran tronco de un árbol que debía haber
dejado allí una fuerte riada. Estaba tendido oblicuamente, con un
extremo apoyado en la roca y el otro puesto contra el lado del ba-
rranco. Contra él apoyamos, en declive, muchas ramas medio
peadas que había dispersas por allí, y cubriendo el conjunto con
ramas y hojas, aguardamos la luz de la mañana bajo el refugio que
proporcionaba.

Por fin, alboróé el día, y levantándonos de nuestra miserable ya-
cija estimaríamos nuestras articulaciones rígidas, y después de comer
todo el pan que nos quedaba, nos preparamos para la última etapa de
nuestro viaje. No voy a contar todas las escapatorias por un pelo,
y todas las terribles dificultades que hubo antes que lográramos al-
cazar el fondo del valle. Como ya he descrito escenas semejantes,
bastará decir que, por fin, tras de mucho esfuerzo y grandes peli-
gros, los dos llegamos, sin rompemos ningún hueso, a la entrada de
ese espléndido valle que cinco días antes había irrumpido tan de
repente ante mis ojos, y casi a la sombra de las mismas peñas desde
cuyas cimas habíamos contemplado la perspectiva. [79]

Nuestro primer pensamiento fue cómo obtener la fruta que está-
bamos convencidos de que debía crecer cerca y a mano.

¿Taipi o Happar? ¿Terrible muerte en manos de los más feroces
caníbales, o benévolo recibimiento por parte de una raza más ama-
ble de indígenas? Pero ya era tarde para discutir una cuestión que
pronto quedaría contestada.
The part of the valley in which we found ourselves appeared to be altogether uninhabited. An almost impenetrable thicket extended from side to side, without presenting a single plant affording the nourishment we had confidently calculated upon; and with this object, we followed the course of the stream, casting quick glances as we proceeded into the thick jungles on each hand. My companion—to whose solicitations I had yielded in descending into the valley—now that the step was taken, began to manifest a degree of caution I had little expected from him. He proposed that in the event of our finding an adequate supply of fruit, we should remain in this unfrequented portion of the country—where we should run little chance of being surprised by its occupants, whoever they might be—until sufficiently recruited to resume our journey; when laying a store of food equal to our wants, we might easily regain the bay of Nukuheva, after the lapse of a sufficient interval to ensure the departure of our vessel.

We were surprised that, after moving as far as we had along the valley, we should still meet with the same impervious thickets; and thinking, that although the borders of the stream might be lined for some distance with them, yet beyond there might be more open ground, I requested Toby to keep a bright look-out upon one side, while I did the same on the other, in order to discover some opening in the bushes, and especially to watch for the slightest appearance of a path or anything else that might indicate the vicinity of the islanders.

What furtive and anxious glances we cast into those dim-looking shadows! With what apprehensions we proceeded, ignorant at what moment we might be greeted by the javelin of some ambuscaded savage. At last my companion paused, and directed my attention to a narrow opening in the foliage. We struck into it, and it soon brought us by an indistinctly traced path to a comparatively clear space, at the further end of which we descried a number of the trees, the native name of which is ‘annuee,’ and which bear a most delicious fruit. What a race! I hobbling over the ground like some decrepit wretch, and Toby leaping forward like a greyhound. He quickly cleared one of the trees on which there were two or three of the fruit, but to our chagrin they proved to be much decayed; the rings partly opened by the birds, and their hearts half devoured. However, we quickly despatched them, and no ambrosia could have been more delicious.

We looked about us uncertain whither to direct our steps, since the path we had so far followed appeared to be lost in the open space around us. At last we resolved to enter a grove near at hand, and had advanced a few rods, when, just upon its skirts, I picked up a slender bread-fruit shoot perfectly green, and with the tender bark freshly stripped from it. It was still slippery with moisture, and appeared as if it had been but that moment thrown aside. I said nothing, but merely held it up to Toby, who started at this undeniable evidence of the vicinity of the savages.

Yo objeté fuertemente contra esta propuesta, aun siendo tan plausible, porque las dificultades del camino serían casi insuperables, no conociendo nosotros la disposición general de la comarca; y recordé a mi compañero las dificultades que habíamos encontrado en nuestros inciertos vagabundos. En resumen, dije que, puesto que habíamos considerado aconsejable entrar en el valle, debíamos afrontar valientemente las consecuencias, cualesquiera que fuesen, sobre todo dado que yo estaba convencido de que no nos quedaba más alternativa sino entrar en contacto con los indígenas, y arriesgarnos valientemente al recibimiento que nos dieran; y que, en cuanto a mí, sentía necesidad de descanso y refugio, y mientras no los obtuviera sería completamente incapaz de afrontar sufrimientos tales como los que acababa de pasar. Un tanto de mala gana, Toby asintió a la justicia de esas observaciones.

Nos extrañaba que, después de haber avanzado tanto por el valle, siguiéramos encontrando los mismos setos impenetrables; yo, por pensar que, por más que las márgenes del torrente estuvieran bordeadas de ellos durante cierta distancia, más allá debía haber terreno abierto, pedía Toby que mantuviera una atenta vigilancia por un lado, mientras yo hacia lo mismo por el otro, para descubrir alguna abertura entre las espesuras, y sobre todo, para descubrir la más leve apariencia de sendero o cualquier otra cosa que indicara la cercanía de los isleños.

—¿Qué furtivas y ansiosas miradas lanzamos a esas sombras de borroso aspecto! —Con qué temores avanzamos, sin saber en qué momento podría salvarnos la jabalina de algún salvaje emboscado! —Pero, a fin de no comprometernos con los indígenas, y arriesgarnos valientemente al recibimiento que nos dieran; y que, en cuanto a mí, sentía necesidad de descanso y refugio, y mientras no los obtuviera sería completamente incapaz de afrontar sufrimientos tales como los que acababa de pasar. Un tanto de mala gana, Toby asintió a la justicia de esas observaciones.

Míramos a nuestro alrededor sin saber a dónde dirigir nuestros pasos, ya que el sendero que habíamos seguido parecía haberse perdido en el espacio abierto a nuestro alrededor. Por fin, decidimos entrar en un bosquecillo inmediato, y apenas habíamos avanzado unos pasos, cuando, en su mismo borde, recogi del suelo un fino retoño del árbol del pan, perfectamente verde, y con la tierna corteza recién arrancada. Aún estaba resbaloso de humedad, y parecía acabar de ser tirado al suelo en aquel mismo instante. No dije nada, sino que simplemente se lo enseñé a Toby, que se sobresaltó ante esta ignorable evidencia de la proximidad de los salvajes.
La trama estaba ahora más densa. Un poco más lejos, un pequeño grupo de árboles lucía una capa de hojas. Podía haber sido el último de los arbustos que teníamos que cruzar para llegar al océano. Alguien en su altura, por lo alto, lo vio, y al parecer, alguien le hizo un gesto que lo alivió. "¿Typee o Happr?" —pregunté, mientras le seguía.

"Deberíamos preguntarles, ¿Typee o Happr?" —replicó, viendo a los árboles que se alineaban a lo largo de la costanera.

"Entendido —exclamé, y en ese momento me adelanté—. ¿Typee o Happr, Toby? —pregunté, mientras nos acercábamos a ellos.

La pareja protestó, y en un momento decidí que debíamos hacer que se aproximaran. Si lo hacíamos, podríamos hacerles entender nuestras intenciones. Luego, compruebe con el jefe que podamos hacerles entender nuestras necesidades. "¿Taipi o Happar? Pero ya era tarde para retroceder, de modo que seguímos lentamente, con mi compañero en la cabeza, lanzando ansiosas miradas a lo ancho y a lo largo, hasta que de repente le vi retroceder como mordido por una víbora. Arrodillándome, me hizo señas con una mano de que me quedara a un lado, mientras con la otra apartaba unas hojas que tenía delante, y miraba atentamente algo.

Desobedeciendo su indicación, me acerqué a él de prisa y capté un atisbo de dos figuras medio escondidas por el denso follaje: estaban juntas y apretadas, absolutamente inmóviles. Debían haberlos observado antes, y haberse retirado a lo profundo de los bosques para escapar a nuestra observación.

Inmediatamente tomé mi decisión. Dejando caer el bastón, y desgarrando el envoltorio de cosas que habíamos traído del barco, desenrollé el tejido de algodón, lo levanté con una mano, arranqué con la otra una rama de los arbustos que tenía a mi lado y, diciendo a Toby que siguiera mi ejemplo, brocé el certificado y avanzé, agitando la rama en señal de paz hacia las figuras que se replegaban ante mí. Eran un muchacho y una muchacha, esbeltos y graciosos, plenamente desnudos, salvo un ligero taparrabos de corteza, del que colgaban, en puntas opuestas, dos hermosas hojas de árbol del pan. El muchacho había echado a cuello la muchacha un brazo, medio oculto por las enredadas trenzas de ésta, mientras con el otro le sostenía una mano, y así permanecían, con las cabezas [82] echadas hacia delante, captando el débil ruido que hacíamos en nuestro avance, y con un pie adelantado, casi como dispuestos a huir de nuestra presencia.

Al acercarnos, su alarma aumentó evidentemente. Temiendo que se nos escaparan del todo, me detuve y les hice señales de que se adelantarían a recibir el regalo que extendía hacia ellos, pero no quisieron: entonces pronuncié unas pocas palabras de su idioma que conocía, con pocas esperanzas de que me comprendieran, pero para mostrar que no habíamos caído de las nubes encima de ellos. Esto pareció darles un poco de confianza, de modo que me acercé más, enseñándoles el tejido con una mano y sosteniendo la rama con la otra, mientras ellos se retiraban lentamente. Por fin, nos consintieron que nos acercáramos a ellos tanto que pudimos echarnos el tejido del algodón por los hombros, dándole a entender que era suyo, y, con diversos gestos, tratando de hacerles comprender que sentíamos hacia ellos la mayor estimación posible.

La pareja parecía tranquila, mientras tratabamos de hacerles entender cuál fue nuestra necesidad. Para ello, Toby realizó una serie completa de ilustraciones pantomímicas, abriendo la boca de oreja a oreja, metiéndose los dedos por la garganta, rechinando los dientes y haciendo girar los ojos, hasta que estoy seguro de que las pobres criaturas nos tomaron por un par de caníbales blancos que iban a hacer con ellos una comida. Sin embargo, cuando nos entendieron, no mostraron inclinación a satisfacer nuestros deseos. En ese momento, empezó a llover violentamente, y les hicimos señales de que nos llevaran a algún lugar de refugio. Esta petición sí parecieron dispuestas a cumplirla, pero nada podía evitar que el temor que nos consideraban en el modo como, al andar ante nosotros, tenían los ojos constantemente vuelto atrás a observar todos los movimientos que hiciéramos, y hasta la cara que nos poníamos.

"-¿Taipi o Happr, Toby? —pregunté, mientras les seguimos.

"-Desde luego Happr —contestó, con una ostentación de confianza destinada a disfrazar sus dudas.

"-Pronto lo sabremos —exclamé, y en ese momento me adelan-
ment I stepped forward towards our guides, and pronouncing the two names interrogatively and pointing to the lowest part of the valley, endeavoured to come to the point at once. They repeated the words after me again and again, but without giving any peculiar emphasis to either, so that I was completely at a loss to understand them; for a couple of willer young things than we afterwards found them to have been on this particular occasion never probably fell in any traveller’s way.

More and more curious to ascertain our fate, I now threw together in the form of a question the words ‘Happar’ and ‘Motarkee’, the latter being equivalent to the word ‘good’. The two natives interchanged glances of peculiar meaning with one another at this, and manifested no little surprise; but on the repetition of the question after some consultation together, to the great joy of Toby, they answered in the affirmative. Toby was now in ecstasies, especially as the young savages continued to reiterate their answer with great energy, as though desirous of impressing us with the idea that being among the Happars, we ought to consider ourselves perfectly secure.

Although I had some lingering doubts, I feigned great delight with Toby at this announcement, while my companion broke out into a pantomimic abhorrence of Typee, and immeasurable love for the particular valley in which we were; our guides all the while gazing uneasily at one another as if at a loss to account for our conduct.

They hurried on, and we followed them; until suddenly they set up a strange halloo, which was answered from beyond the grove through which we were passing, and the next moment we entered upon some open ground, at the extremity of which we descried a long, low hut, and in front of it were several young girls. As soon as they perceived us they fled with wild screams into the adjoining thickets, like so many startled fawns. A few moments after the whole valley resounded with savage outcries, and the natives came running onwards towards us from every direction.

Had an army of invaders made an irruption into their territory they could not have evinced greater excitement. We were soon completely encircled by a dense throng, and in their eager desire to behold us they almost arrested our progress; an equal number surrounded our youthful guides, who with amazing volubility appeared to be detailing the circumstances which had attended their meeting with us. Every item of intelligence appeared to redouble the astonishment of the islanders, and they gazed at us with inquiring looks.

At last we reached a large and handsome building of bamboos, and were by signs told to enter it, the natives opening a lane for us through which to pass; on entering without ceremony, we threw our exhausted frames upon the mats that covered the floor. In a moment the slight tenement was completely full of people, whilst those who were unable to obtain admittance gazed at us through its open cane-work.

It was now evening, and by the dim light we could just discern the savage countenances around us, gleaming with wild curiosity and wonder; the naked forms and tattooed limbs of brawny warriors, with here and there the slighter figures of young girls, all engaged in a perfect storm of conversation, of which we were of course the only theme, whilst our recent guides were fully occupied in answering the innumerable questions which every one put to them. Nothing can exceed the fierce gesticulation of these people when animated in conversation, and on this occasion they gave loose to all their natural vivacity, shouting and dancing about in a manner that well nigh intimidated us.

Cada vez más curioso por conocer nuestro destino, lancé entonces, en forma de pregunta, las palabras «Happar» y mortarki, esta última equivalente a «bueno». Los dos indígenas intercambiaron miradas de peculiar significado, y manifestaron no poca sorpresa pero, al repetir la pregunta, trataron de acuerdo juntos, contestaron afirmativamente, con gran alegría de Toby. Toby estaba extasiado, sobre todo por que los jóvenes salvajes continuaban repitiendo su respuesta con gran energía, como deseosos de infundirnos la idea de que, estando entre los happars, debíamos considerarnos completamente seguros.

Aunque yo tenía ciertas dudas reacias, fíngi gran deleite con Toby ante este anuncio, mientras mi compañero se lanzaba a una pantomima sobre el aborrecimiento a Taipi y su incomensurable cariño hacia el valle preciso en que estábamos, en tanto que nuestros guías se miraban inquietos, como desconcertados y sin explicarse nuestra conducta.

Ellos marchaban de prisa, y nosotros les seguíamos, hasta que de repente lanzaron un extraño grito, que fue respondido desde detrás de la espesa que pasábamos, y un momento después entrabanmos en un claro, a cuyo extremo observamos una larga cabaña baja, ante la cual había varias muchachas. Tan pronto como nos percibieron, huyeron con gritos salvajes a los matorrales cercanos, como ciervas asustadas. Pocos momentos después, el valle entero retumbaba de salvajes clamores, y los indígenas acudían corriendo hacia nosotros desde todas las direcciones.

Si un ejército de invasores hubiera irrumpido en su territorio, no podrían haber mostrado mayor excitación. Pronto quedamos por completo rodeados por una densa multitud, y en su ansioso deseo de observarnos, casi impidieron nuestro avance, mientras otra multitud igual rodeaba a nuestros jóvenes guías, quienes, con sorprendente lucidez, parecían detallar las circunstancias de su encuentro con nosotros. Cada punto de información parecía redoblar el asombro de los isleños, que nos miraban con ojos inquisitivos.

Por fin llegamos a una gran y hermosa construcción de bambúes y por signos nos dijeron que entramos, abriendo calle los nativos para que pasáramos: al entrar, sin ceremonias, arrojamos nuestros exhaustos cueros en las esteras que cubrian el suelo. Un momento después, la ligera construcción estaba completamente llenada de gente, mientras que los que no podían lograr entrada nos miraban a través de su abierto trencizado de cañas. [84]
Close to where we lay, squatting upon their haunches, were some eight or ten noble-looking chiefs—for such they subsequently proved to be—who, more reserved than the rest, regarded us with a fixed and stern attention, which not a little discomposed our equanimity. One of them in particular, who appeared to be the highest in rank, placed himself directly facing me, looking at me with a rigidity of aspect under which I absolutely quailed. He never once opened his lips, but maintained his severe expression of countenance, without turning his face aside for a single moment. Never before had I been subjected to so strange and steady a glance; it revealed nothing of the mind of the savage, but it appeared to be reading my own.

After undergoing this scrutiny till I grew absolutely nervous, with a view of diverting it if possible, and conciliating the good opinion of the warrior, I took some tobacco from the bosom of my frock and offered it to him. He quietly rejected the proffered gift, and, without speaking, motioned me to return it to its place.

In my previous intercourse with the natives of Nukuheva and Tior, I had found that the present of a small piece of tobacco would have rendered any of them devoted to my service. Was this act of the chief a token of his enmity? Typee or Happar? I asked within myself. I started, for at the same moment this identical question was asked by the strange being before me. I turned to Toby, the flickering light of a native taper showed me his countenance pale with trepidation at this fatal question. I paused for a second, and I know not by what impulse it was that I answered ‘Typee’. The piece of dusky statuary nodded in approval, and then murmured ‘Motarkee!’ ‘Motarkee,’ said I, without further hesitation ‘Typee motarkee.’

What a transition! The dark figures around us leaped to their feet, clapped their hands in transport, and shouted again and again the talismanic syllables, the utterance of which appeared to have settled everything.

When this commotion had a little subsided, the principal chief squatted once more before me, and throwing himself into a sudden rage, poured forth a string of philippics, which I was at no loss to understand, from the frequent recurrence of the word Happar, as being directed against the natives of the adjoining valley. In all these denunciations my companion and I acquiesced, while we extolled the character of the warlike Typees. To be sure our panegyrics were somewhat laconic, consisting in the repetition of this name, but when our congeniality of sentiment on this point did more towards inspiring a friendly feeling than anything else that could have happened.

At last the wrath of the chief evaporated, and in a few moments he was as placid as ever. Laying his hand upon his breast, he gave me to understand that his name was ‘Mehevi’, and that, in return, he wished me to communicate my appellation. I hesitated for an instant, thinking that it might be difficult for him to pronounce my real name, and then with the most praiseworthy intentions intimated that I was known as ‘Tom’. But I could not have made a worse selection; the chief could not master it. ‘Tommo’, ‘Tomma’, ‘Tom mee’, everything but plain ‘Tom’. As he persisted in garnishing the, word with an additional syllable, I compromised the matter with him at the word ‘Tommo’; and by that name I went during the entire period of my stay in the valley. The same proceeding was gone through with Toby, whose mellifluous appellation was more easily caught.

An exchange of names is equivalent to a ratification of good will and amity among these simple people; and as we were aware of this fact, we were delighted that it had taken place on the present occasion.

Cerca de donde estábamos tendidos había, en cuclillas, ocho o diez jefes de noble aspecto, pues eso resultaron luego ser, quienes, más reservados que los demás, nos observaban con atención fija y severa, que descomponía no poco nuestra equanimitad. Uno de ellos en especial, que parecía ser el de rango más alto, se colocó directamente delante de mí, y me miró con una rigidez de expresión bajo la cual me acabaría por completo. Ni una sola vez abrió los labios, sino que mantuvo su severa expresión de rostro, sin volver a un lado la cara ni por un instante. Nunca me había visto sometido a un mirada tan extraña y firme: no revelaba nada de la mente del salvaje, sino que parecía estar leyendo la mía.

Sometido a este escrutinio hasta que me puse absolutamente nervioso, y con intención de distraerle si era posible y de conciliarme la buena opinión del guerrero, saqué tabaco del pecho del blusón y se lo ofré. Él rechazó en silencio el regalo que se le ofrecía, y, sin hablar, me hizo señas de volverlo a su sitio.

En mi anterior trato con los indígenas de Nukuheva y Tior, había encontrado que el regalo de un poco de tabaco les hacía adictos a mi servicio. ¿Era este acto del jefe una señal de su enemistad? ¿Taipi o Happar? me pregunté. En ese mismo instante, me sobresalté, porque la extraña figura que tenía delante me hacía esa misma pregunta. Me volví hacia Toby: la chisporroteante luz de una candela indígena me mostró su rostro pálido y sudoroso ante esta pregunta fatal. Yo me detuve un segundo, y no sé por qué impulso fue por lo que contesté:

—Taipi.

Aquél ejemplar de oscura estatua asintió aprobativamente con la cabeza, y luego murmuró:

—Mortarki!
—Mortarki —dijo yo, sin vacilar más: —taipi mortarki. [85]

¡Qué transición! Las sombrías figuras a nuestro alrededor se pusieron de pie de un brinco, palmoteando de éxtasis, y gritaron una vez y otra las talismanas sílabas, que al pronunciarse parecían haberlo arreglado todo.

Cuando disminuyó un poco esa comoción, el jefe principal volvió a ponerse en cuclillas ante mí, y encolerizándose de repente, lanzó una sarta de imprecaciones que no me costó trabajo entender, por la frecuente repetición de la palabra ‘Happar’ dirigida contra los indígenas del valle adyacente. Mi compañero y yo asintimos a todas esas acusaciones, mientras exclamábamos la valía de los belicosos taipis. Desde luego, nuestros panegíricos eran algo lacónicos, consistiendo en la repetición de este nombre, unido al potente adjetivo mortarki. Pero era suficiente, y sirvió para conciliar los buenos voluntades de las indígenas, con quienes nuestra afinidad de sentires en este punto hizo más para inspirarles sentimientos amistosos, que cualquier otra cosa que pudiera haber ocurrido.

Por fin, se evaporó la ira del jefe, y pocos momentos después estaba tan plácido como siempre. Poniéndose la mano en el pecho, me dio a entender que su nombre era Mehevi, y que, en correspondencia, deseaba que yo le dijera mi nombre. Yo vacilé un momento, pensando que le sería difícil pronunciar mi verdadero nombre, y entonces, con las más laudables intenciones, indiqué que se me conocía por Tom. Pero no podía haber hecho peor elección, el jefe no pudo dominarlo: ‘Totumo’, ‘Totumaa’, ‘Tommi’, cualquier cosa menos ‘Tom’ se acercaban. Como se empeñaba en adornar la palabra con una sílaba adicional, transigiéndose en el asunto con el en la palabra ‘Totumo’; y con ese nombre me conocieron durante todo el tiempo de estancia en el valle. Lo mismo se hizo con Toby, cuyo melifluous nombre fue más fácilmente captado.

Un intercambio de nombres equivale a una ratificación de buena voluntad y amistad entre esa sencilla gente, y como nos dábamos cuenta de ello, nos encantó que hubiera tenido lugar en la presente circunstancia.
Reclining upon our mats, we now held a kind of levee, giving audience to successive troops of the natives, who introduced themselves to us by pronouncing their respective names, and retired in high good humour on receiving ours in return. During this ceremony the greatest merriment prevailed nearly every announcement on the part of the islanders being followed by a fresh sally of gaiety, which induced me to believe that some of them at least were innocently diverting the company at our expense, by bestowing upon themselves a string of absurd titles, of the humour of which we were of course entirely ignorant.

All this occupied about an hour, when the throng having a little diminished, I turned to Mehevi and gave him to understand that we were in need of food and sleep. Immediately the attentive chief addressed a few words to one of the crowd, who disappeared, and returned in a few moments with a calabash of 'poe-poe', and two or three young coconuts stripped of their husks, and with their shells partly broken. We both of us forthwith placed one of these natural goblets to our lips, and drained it in a moment of the refreshing draught it contained. The poe-poe was then placed before us, and even fancied as I was, I paused to consider in what manner to convey it to my mouth.

This staple article of food among the Marquesan islanders is manufactured from the produce of the bread-fruit tree. It somewhat resembles in its plastic nature our bookbinders' paste, is of a yellow colour, and somewhat tart to the taste.

Such was the dish, the merits of which I was now eager to discuss. I eyed it wistfully for a moment, and then, unable any longer to stand on ceremony, plunged my hand into the yielding mass, and to the boisterous mirth of the natives drew it forth laden with the poe-poe, which adhered in lengthy strings to every finger. So stubborn was its consistency, that in conveying my heavily-weighted hand to my mouth, the connecting links almost raised the calabash from the mats on which it had been placed. This display of awkwardness—in which, by-the-bye, Toby kept me company—convinced the bystanders with uncontrollable laughter.

As soon as their merriment had somewhat subsided, Mehevi, motioning us to be attentive, dipped the forefinger of his right hand in the dish, and giving it a rapid and scientific twist, drew it out coated smoothly with the preparation. With a second peculiar flourish he prevented the poe-poe from dropping to the ground as he raised it to his mouth, into which the finger was inserted and drawn forth perfectly free from any adhesive matter. This performance was evidently intended for our instruction; so I again essayed the feat on the principles inculcated, but with very ill success.

A starving man, however, little heeds conventional proprieties, especially on a South-Sea Island, and accordingly Toby and I partook of the dish after our own clumsy fashion, beplastering our faces all over with the glutinous compound, and daubing our hands nearly to the wrist. This kind of food is by no means disagreeable to the taste.

During the repast, the natives eyed us with intense curiosity, and grew remarkably fond of it.

So much for the first course; several other dishes followed it, some of which were positively delicious. We concluded our banquet by tossing off the contents of two more young coconuts, after which we regaled ourselves with the soothing fumes of tobacco, inhaled from a quaintly carved pipe which passed round the circle.

Reclamados en nuestras esteras, hicimos entonces una especie de levée dando audiencia a sucesivas tropas de indígenas, que se nos presentaba pronunciando sus respectivos nombres, y se retiraron de muy buen humor al recibir el nuestro en correspondencia. Durante esta ceremonia, prevaleció el mayor júbilo, pues casi todos los anuncios por parte de los isleños eran recibidos por una nueva explosión de alegría, lo que me hizo creer que por lo menos algunos de ellos estaban divirtiendo inoportunamente a la concurrencia a nuestras expensas, [86] apropriadamente de una sarta de títulos absurdos, de cuyo humorismo, por supuesto, permanecían por completo ignorantes.

Todo eso ocupó cerca de una hora, y entonces, habiendo dismi- nuido una poco la multitud, me volví a Mehevi y le di a entender que necesitábamos almuerzo y sueño. Inmediatamente, el atento jefe dirigió unas pocas palabras a uno de la gente, que desapareció, y poco después se volvió con una calabaza de poi-poi y dos o tres cocos tiernos, con la cáscara pelada y partidos por la mitad. Ambos nos llevamos en seguida a los labios uno de esos cuencos naturales, y vaciamos en un instante el refrescante líquido que contenían. Luego nos pusieron delante el poi-poi, y aun tan hambriento como estaba, me detuve a considerar de qué manera llevarmelo a la boca.

Este artículo básico de la alimentación de los isleños de las Mar- quesas se fabrica con el producto del árbol del pan. Se parece algo, en su condición pastosa, al engrudo de los encuadernadores, y es algo agrio de sabor.

Tan pronto como disminuyó su júbilo, Mehevi, haciéndonos señas de estar atentos, metió el índice de la mano derecha en el plato, y, dándole un rápido giro científico, lo sacó limpiamente revestido de esa preparación. Con otro movimiento peculiar impidió que el poi-poi cayera al suelo al levantarlo a la boca, en que metió el dedo y lo retiró completamente libre de materia adheriva. Esa exhibición estaba evidentemente destinada a nuestra enseñanza, de modo que volvió a intentar la hazaña según los principios inculcados, pero con muy escaso éxito.
ity, observing our minutest motions, and appearing to discover abundant matter for comment in the most trifling occurrence. Their surprise mounted the highest, when we began to remove our uncomfortable garments, which were saturated with rain. They scanned the whiteness of our limbs, and seemed utterly unable to account for the contrast they presented to the swarthy hue of our faces embrowned from a six months’ exposure to the scorching sun of the Line. They felt our skin, much in the same way that a silk mercer would handle a remarkably fine piece of satin; and some of them went so far in their investigation as to apply the olfactory organ.

Their singular behaviour almost led me to imagine that they never before had beheld a white man; but a few moments’ reflection convinced me that this could not have been the case; and a more satisfactory reason for their conduct has since suggested itself to my mind.

Deterred by the frightful stories related of its inhabitants, ships never enter this bay, while their hostile relations with the tribes in the adjoining valleys prevent the Typees from visiting that section of the island where vessels occasionally lie. At long intervals, however, some intrepid captain will touch on the skirts of the bay, with two or three armed boats’ crews and accompanied by interpreters. The natives who live near the sea descry the strangers long before they reach their waters, and aware of the purpose for which they come, proclaim loudly the news of their approach. By a species of vocal telegraph the intelligence reaches the immost recesses of the vale in an inconceivably short space of time, drawing nearly its whole population down to the beach laden with every variety of fruit. The interpreter, who is invariably a ‘tabooed Kanaka’*, leaps ashore with the goods intended for barter, while the boats, with their oars shipped, and every man on his thwart, lie just outside the surf, heading off the shore, in readiness at the first untoward event to escape to the open sea. As soon as the traffic is concluded, one of the boats pulls in under cover of the muskets of the muskets of the others, the fruit is quickly thrown into her, and the transient visitors precipitately retire from what they justly consider so dangerous a vicinity.

Su extraña conducta casi me hizo pensar que nunca habían visto un hombre blanco, pero unos momentos de reflexión me convencieron de que no podía haber sido así, y después se me ocurrió una razón más satisfactoria de su conducta.

Disuadidos por las terribles historias que se cuentan sobre sus habitantes, los barcos jamás entran en esta bahía, mientras que sus relaciones hostiles con las tribus de los valles adyacentes impiden a los taipis visitar la parte de la isla donde fondean en vez en cuanto los barcos. Sin embargo, a largos intervalos, algún capitán intrépido toca en los bordes de la bahía, con dos o tres lanchas de hombres armados y acompañado por un intérprete. Los indígenas que viven junto al mar avistan a los extranjeros mucho antes de que lleguen a sus aguas, y notando el propósito con que vienen, proclaman ruidosamente la noticia de su llegada. Por una especie de telégrafo vocal, la información llega a las interioridades más profundas del valle en un espacio de tiempo inconceibiblemente corto, atrayendo a la población casi enteramente hasta la playa, cargada con toda clase de frutas. El intérprete, que es siempre un ‘kannaka tabio’*, salta a tierra con las mercancías que se pretenden canjear, mientras las lanchas, con los remos alzados, y todos [88] los hombres en sus bancadas, se quedan detrás mismo de las rompientes, dando la popa a la orilla, y dispuestas a escapar al mar abierto a la primera acción hostil. Tan pronto como se concluye el trato, una de las lanchas rema acercándose bajo la protección de los mosquetes de las demás; e echan dentro la fruta, con rapidez, y los visitantes transitorios se retiran precipitadamente de lo que consideran con justicia una vecindad peligrosa.

* The word ‘Kanaka’ is at the present day universally used in the South Seas by Europeans to designate the Islanders. In the various dialects of the principal groups it is simply a sexual designation applied to the males; but it is now used by the natives in their intercourse with foreigners in the same sense in which the latter employ it.

A ‘Tabooed Kanaka’ is an islander whose person has been made to a certain extent sacred by the operation of a singular custom hereafter to be explained.

The intercourse occurring with Europeans being so restricted, no wonder that the inhabitants of the valley manifested so much curiosity with regard to us, appearing as we did among them under such singular circumstances. I have no doubt that we were the first white men who ever penetrated thus far back into their territories, or at least the first who had ever descended from the head of the vale. What had brought us thither must have appeared a complete mystery to them, and from our ignorance of the language it was impossible for us to enlighten them. In answer to inquiries which the eloquence of their gestures enabled us to comprehend, all that we could reply was, that we had come from Nukuheva, a place, be it remembered, with which they were at open war. This intelligence appeared to affect them with the most lively emotions. ‘Nukuheva motarkee?’ they asked. Of course we replied most energetically in the negative.
Then they plied us with a thousand questions, of which we could understand nothing more than that they had reference to the recent movements of the French, against whom they seemed to cherish the most fierce hatred. So eager were they to obtain information on this point, that they still continued to propound their queries long after we had shown that we were utterly unable to answer them. Occasionally we caught some indistinct idea of their meaning, when we would endeavour by every method in our power to communicate the desired intelligence. At such times their gratification was boundless, and they would redouble their efforts to make us comprehend them more perfectly. But all in vain; and in the end they looked at us despairingly, as if we were the receptacles of invaluable information; but how to come at it they knew not.

After a while the group around us gradually dispersed, and we were left about midnight (as we conjectured) with those who appeared to be permanent residents of the house. These individuals now provided us with fresh mats to lie upon, covered us with several folds of tappa, and then extinguishing the tapers that had been burning, threw themselves down beside us, and after a little desultory conversation were soon sound asleep.

CHAPTER ELEVEN


VARIOUS and conflicting were the thoughts which oppressed me during the silent hours that followed the events related in the preceding chapter. Toby, wearied with the fatigues of the day, slumbered heavily by my side; but the pain under which I was suffering effectually prevented my sleeping, and I remained distressingly alive to all the fearful circumstances of our present situation. Was it possible that, after all our vicissitudes, we were really in the terrible valley of Typee, and at the mercy of its inmates, a fierce and unrelenting tribe of savages? Typee or Happar? I shuddered when I reflected that there was no longer any room for doubt; and that, beyond all hope of escape, we were now placed in those very circumstances from the bare thought of which I had recoiled with such abhorrence but a few days before. What might not be our fearful destiny? To be sure, as yet we had been treated with no violence; nay, had been even kindly and hospitably entertained. But what dependence could be placed on the fickle passions which sway the bosom of a savage? His inconstancy and treachery are proverbial. Might it not be that beneath these fair appearances the islanders covered some perfidious design, and that their friendly reception of us might only precede some horrible catastrophe? How was it possible that, after all our vicissitudes, we were really in the preceding chapter. Toby, wearied with the fatigues of the day, slumbered heavily by my side; but the pain under which I was suffering effectually prevented my sleeping, and I remained dis-...
by no jealous duennas, their proceedings were altogether informal, and void of artificial restraint. Long and minute was the investigation with which they honoured us, and so uproarious their mirth, that I felt infinitely sheepish; and Toby was immeasurably outraged at their familiarity.

These lively young ladies were at the same time wonderfully polite and humane; fanning aside the insects that occasionally lighted on our brows; presenting us with food; and compassionately regarding me in the midst of my afflictions. But in spite of all their blandishments, my feelings of propriety were exceedingly shocked, for I could but consider them as having overstressed the due limits of female decorum.

Having diverted themselves to their hearts’ content, our young visitors now withdrew, and gave place to successive troops of the other sex, who continued flocking towards the house until near noon; by which time I have no doubt that the greater part of the inhabitants of the valley had bated themselves in the light of our benévolent countenances.

At last, when their numbers began to diminish, a superb-looking warrior stooped the towering plumes of his head-dress beneath the low portal, and entered the house. I saw at once that he was some distinguished personage, the natives regarding him with the utmost deference, and making room for him as he approached. His aspect was imposing. The splendid long drooping tail-feathers of the tropical bird, thickly interspersed with the gaudy plumage of the cock, were disposed in an immense upright semicircle upon his head, their lower extremities being fixed in a crescent of guinea-heads which spanned the forehead. Around his neck were several enormous necklaces of boar’s tusks, polished like ivory, and disposed in such a manner as that the longest and largest were upon his capacious chest. Thrust forward through the large apertures in his ears were two small and finely-shaped sperm whale teeth, presenting their cavities in front, stuffed with freshly-plucked leaves, and curiously wrought at the other end into strange little images and devices. These barbaric trinkets, garnished in this manner at their open extremities, and tapering and curving round to a point behind the ear, resembled not a little a pair of cornucopias.

The loins of the warrior were girt about with heavy folds of a dark-coloured tappa, hanging before and behind in clusters of braided tassels, while anklets and bracelets of curling human hair completed his unique costume. In his right hand he grasped a beautifully carved paddle-spear, nearly fifteen feet in length, made of the bright koar-wood, one end sharply pointed, and the other flattened like an oar-blade. Hanging obliquely from his girdle by a loop of sinnate was a curious wrought at the other end into strange little images and poses [91] sobre su cabeza en un enorme semicírculo vertical, con los extremos inferiores sujetos a una media luna de cuentas de cristal que le atraviesaba la frente. En torno al cuello, llevaba varios enormes collares de colmillos de jabalí, pulidos como marfil, y dispuestos de tal modo que los mayores y más largos le quedaban sobre el ancho pecho. Asomado hacia delante por los amplios agujeros de las orejas, había dos pequeños dientes de cachalote, sutilmente configurados, con sus cavidades delanteras llenas de hojas recién arrancadas, y curiosamente tallados por el otro extremo con pequeñas y extrañas imágenes y formas. Estas bárbaras joyas, guarnecidas de tal modo por sus extremos abiertos, y adelgándose y curvándose en punta detrás de la oreja, parecían mucho un par de pequeños cuernos de la abundancia.

For the cintura, el guerrero llevaba pesados pliegues de tappa de color oscuro, colgando por delante y por detrás con racimos de borlas trenzadas, mientras que brazaletes y tobilleras de pelo humano completaban esta indumentaria sin par. En la mano derecha empuñaba una lanza-pagaia bellamente esculpida, de casi quince pies de larga, hecha de madera de koar clara, con un extremo en punta aguda, y el otro aplanado como la pala de un remo. De su ceñidor colgaba oblicuamente, con una presilla de sinnate, una pipa ricamente decorada: la delgada caña que formaba su tubo estaba coloreada con un pigmento rojo, y alrededor de ella, así como en torno a la cazoleta en forma de ídolo, temblaban pequeños flecos de la tappa más sutil.

But that which was most remarkable in the appearance of this splendid islander was the elaborate tattooing displayed on every noble limb. All imaginable lines and curves and figures were delineated over his whole body, and in their grotesque variety and infinite profusion I could only compare them to the crowded groupings of quaint patterns we sometimes see in costly pieces of lacework. The most simple and remarkable of all these ornaments was that which decorated the countenance of the chief. Two broad stripes of tattooing, diverging from the centre of his shaven crown, obliquely crossed both eyes—staining the lids—to a little below each ear, where they united with another stripe which swept in a straight line along the lips and formed the base of the triangle. The warrior, from the excellence of his physical proportions, might certainly have been regarded as one of Nature’s noblemen, and the lines drawn upon his face may possibly have denoted his exalted rank.

This warlike personage, upon entering the house, seated him-
self at some distance from the spot where Toby and myself reposed, while the rest of the savages looked alternately from us to him, as if in expectation of something they were disappointed in not perceiving. Regarding the chief attentively, I thought his lineaments [facciones] appeared familiar to me. As soon as his full face was turned upon me, and I again beheld its extraordinary embellishment, and met the strange gaze to which I had been subjected the preceding night, I immediately, in spite of the alteration in his appearance, recognized the noble Mehevi. On addressing him, he advanced at once in the most cordial manner, and greeting me warmly, seemed to enjoy not a little the effect his barbaric costume had produced upon me.

I forthwith determined to secure, if possible, the good-will of this individual, as I easily perceived he was a man of great authority in his tribe, and one who might exert a powerful influence upon our subsequent fate. In the endeavour I was not repulsed; for nothing could surpass the friendliness he manifested towards both my companion and myself. He extended his sturdy limbs by our side, and endeavoured to make us comprehend the full extent of the kindly feelings by which he was actuated. The almost insuperable difficulty in communicating to one another our ideas affected the chief with no little mortification. He evinced a great desire to be enlightened with regard to the customs and peculiarities of the far-off country we had left behind us, and to which under the name of Maneka he frequently alluded.

But that which more than any other subject engaged his attention was the late proceedings of the ‘Frances’ as he called the French, in the neighbouring bay of Nukuheva. This seemed a never-ending theme with him, and one concerning which he was never weary of interrogating us. All the information we succeeded in imparting to him on this subject was little more than that we had seen six men-of-war lying in the hostile bay at the time we had left it. When he received this intelligence, Mehevi, by the aid of his fingers, went through a long numerical calculation, as if estimating the time we had left it. When he received this intelligence, Mehevi, by the aid of his fingers, went through a long numerical calculation, as if estimating the number of Frenchmen the squadron might contain.

It was just after employing his faculties in this way that he happened to notice the swelling in my limb. He immediately examined it with the utmost attention, and after doing so, despatched a boy who happened to be standing by with some message.

After the lapse of a few moments the stringing re-entered the house with an aged islander, who might have been taken for old Hippocrates himself. His head was as bald as the polished surface of a cocoanut shell, which article it precisely resembled in smoothness and colour, while a long silvery beard swept almost to his girdle of bark. Encircling his temples was a bandana of the twisted leaves of the Omoo tree, pressed closely over the brows to shield his feeble vision from the glare of the sun. His tottering steps were supported by a long slim staff, resembling the wand with which a theatrical magician appears on the stage, and in one hand he carried a freshly plaited fanc of the green leaflets of the cocoanut tree. A flowing robe of tapa, knotted over the shoulder, hung loosely round his stooping figure and heightened the venerableness of his aspect.

Mehevi, saluting this old gentleman, motioned him to a seat between us, and then uncovering my limb, desired him to examine it. The leech gazed intently from me to Toby, and then proceeded to business. After diligently observing the ailing member, he commenced manipulating it; and on the supposition probably that the complaint had deprived the leg of all sensation, began to thump and pinch to the part as if it were something for which he had been long seeking, and muttering some kind of incantation continued his tancia of the place where we reposábamos Toby y yo, mientras el resto de los salvajes nos miraban alternativamente a él y a nosotros, como aguardando algo que les decepcionaba [92] no percibir. Observando atentamente al jefe, me pareció que sus rasgos me eran familiares. Tan pronto como volvió del todo la cara hacia mí, y contemplé otra vez su extraordinario embellecimiento, encontrando la rara mirada a que había estado sujeto la noche anterior, inmediatamente, a pesar de la alteración en su aspecto, reconocí al noble Mehevi.

Al dirigirle la palabra, avanzó en seguida del modo más cordial, y saludándome cálidamente, pareció disfrutar no poco con el efecto que me había producido su bárbaro atavío. Inmediatamente decidi asegurarme, si era posible, la buena voluntad de este individuo, porque era fácil notar que era hombre de gran autoridad en su tribu, y que podía ejercer un poderoso influjo en nuestro destino ulterior. En este esfuerzo no me vi rechazado, pues nada pudo sobrepasar la deferencia que nos manifestó, tanto a mi compañero como a mí. Extendió a su lado sus robustos miembros, y sintió hacernos comprender el pleno alcance de los benévolos sentimientos que le movían. La dificultad casi insuperable para comunicarnos nuestras ideas produjo no poca molestia al jefe. Mostró un gran deseo de ser informado respecto a las costumbres y peculiaridades del remoto país que habíamos dejado allá lejos, y al que aludió frecuentemente con el nombre de Manika.

Pero el tema que ocupó principalmente su atención fue la reciente actividad de los frani, como llamaba a los franceses, en la cercana bahía de Nukuheva. Éste parecía un tema inagotable para él, y jamás se cansaba de preguntarnos sobre ello. Tal la información que fuimos capaces de transmitirle sobre ese tema se redujo a que había visto seis barcos de guerra anclados en esa bahía hostil cuando salimos de ella. Cuando recibió esta noticia, Mehevi realizó un largo cálculo numérico con ayuda de los dedos, como para deducir el número de franceses que contendría la escuadra.

Al terminar de ocupar en ello sus facultades, se dio cuenta por casualidad de la hinchazón en mi pierna. Inmediatamente la examinó con la mayor atención, y después de hacerlo así, envió con un recado a un muchacho que acertó a estar por allí.

Pocos momentos después, el mozaltete volvió a entrar en la casa con un anciano isleño, a quien se podría haber tomado por el viejo Hipócrates en persona. Tenía la cabeza tan calva como la pulida superficie de un coco, objeto al que se parecía exactamente en suavidad y color, mientras que su larga barba plateada descendía casi hasta su tappa de corteza. Le ceñía las sienes una guirnalda de hojas entrelazadas del árbol omu, bien aterciopelada sobre la frente para defender su débil visión del resplandor del sol. Sus vagantes pasos se sostenían en un largo y delgado báculo, semejante a una vara con que aparecen en escena los magos de teatro, y en una mano llevaba un abanico recién trenzado con hojitas verdes de cocotero. Un holgado manto de tapa, anudado al hombro, colgaba ampliamente en torno a su encorvada figura y realizaba la venerableness de su aspecto.

Mehevi, al saludar a este anciano, le hizo señas de que se sentara entre nosotros, y entonces, destapando mi pierna, le rogó que la examinara. El galeno miró atentamente a Toby, y luego a mí, y después comenzó el trabajo. Tras observar con cuidado el miembro enfermo, empezó a manipular con él, y suponiendo probablemente que el mal había privado a la pierna de toda sensibilidad, empezó a pellizcarla y a mar- tillarla de tal manera que yo rugí desafardosamente de dolor.

Trató de resistirme a esta especie de tratamiento médico, pensando que yo era tan capaz como cualquiera de realizar una aplicación de golpes y pellizcos a dicha parte; pero no fue cosa tan fácil escapar de las garras del viejo brujo, que se agarró a la desgraciada pierna como si fuera algo que estuviera buscando desde hacía mucho tiempo, y con un murmullo de conjuro, continuó
disciplining, the news of an affair that set me well nigh crazy; while Mehevi, upon the same principle which prompts an affectionate mother to hold a struggling child in a dentist’s chair, restrained me in his powerful grasp, and actually encouraged the wretch in this infliction of torture.

Almost frantic with rage and pain, I yelled like a bedlamite; while Toby, throwing himself into all the attitudes of a posture-master, vainly endeavoured to expostulate with the natives by signs and gestures. To have looked at my companion, as, sympathizing with my sufferings, he strove to put an end to them, one would have thought that he was the deaf and dumb alphabet incarnated. Whether my tormentor yielded to Toby’s entreaties, or paused from sheer exhaustion, I do not know; but at all once he ceased his operations, and at the same time the chief relinquishing his hold upon me, I fell back, faint and breathless with the agony I had endured.

Almost frantic with rage and pain, I yelled like a bedlamite; while Toby, throwing himself into all the attitudes of a posture-master, vainly endeavoured to expostulate with the natives by signs and gestures. To have looked at my companion, as, sympathizing with my sufferings, he strove to put an end to them, one would have thought that he was the deaf and dumb alphabet incarnated. Whether my tormentor yielded to Toby’s entreaties, or paused from sheer exhaustion, I do not know; but at all once he ceased his operations, and at the same time the chief relinquishing his hold upon me, I fell back, faint and breathless with the agony I had endured.

My unfortunate limb was now left much in the same condition as a rump-steak after undergoing the castigating process which precedes cooking. My physician, having recovered from the fatigues of his exertions, as if anxious to make amends for the pain to which he had subjected me, now took some herbs out of a little wallet that was suspended from his waist, and moistening them in water, applied them to the inflamed part, stooping over it at the same time, and either whispering a spell, or having a little confidential chat with some imaginary demon located in the calf of my leg. My limb was now swathed in leafy bandages, and grateful to Providence for the cessation of hostilities, I was suffered to rest.

Mehevi shortly after rose to depart; but before he went he spoke authoritatively to one of the natives whom he addressed as Kory-Kory; and from the little I could understand of what took place, pointed him out to me as a man whose peculiar business thenceforth would be to attend upon my person. I am not certain that I comprehended as much as this at the time, but the subsequent conduct of my trusty body-servant fully assured me that such must have been the case.

Almost frantic with rage and pain, I yelled like a bedlamite; while Toby, throwing himself into all the attitudes of a posture-master, vainly endeavoured to expostulate with the natives by signs and gestures. To have looked at my companion, as, sympathizing with my sufferings, he strove to put an end to them, one would have thought that he was the deaf and dumb alphabet incarnated. Whether my tormentor yielded to Toby’s entreaties, or paused from sheer exhaustion, I do not know; but at all once he ceased his operations, and at the same time the chief relinquishing his hold upon me, I fell back, faint and breathless with the agony I had endured.

My unfortunate limb was now left much in the same condition as a rump-steak after undergoing the castigating process which precedes cooking. My physician, having recovered from the fatigues of his exertions, as if anxious to make amends for the pain to which he had subjected me, now took some herbs out of a little wallet that was suspended from his waist, and moistening them in water, applied them to the inflamed part, stooping over it at the same time, and either whispering a spell, or having a little confidential chat with some imaginary demon located in the calf of my leg. My limb was now swathed in leafy bandages, and grateful to Providence for the cessation of hostilities, I was suffered to rest.

Mehevi shortly after rose to depart; but before he went he spoke authoritatively to one of the natives whom he addressed as Kory-Kory; and from the little I could understand of what took place, pointed him out to me as a man whose peculiar business thenceforth would be to attend upon my person. I am not certain that I comprehended as much as this at the time, but the subsequent conduct of my trusty body-servant fully assured me that such must have been the case.

Almost frantic with rage and pain, I yelled like a bedlamite; while Toby, throwing himself into all the attitudes of a posture-master, vainly endeavoured to expostulate with the natives by signs and gestures. To have looked at my companion, as, sympathizing with my sufferings, he strove to put an end to them, one would have thought that he was the deaf and dumb alphabet incarnated. Whether my tormentor yielded to Toby’s entreaties, or paused from sheer exhaustion, I do not know; but at all once he ceased his operations, and at the same time the chief relinquishing his hold upon me, I fell back, faint and breathless with the agony I had endured.

I could not but be amused at the manner in which the chief addressed me upon this occasion, talking to me for at least fifteen or twenty minutes as calmly as if I could understand every word that he said. I remarked this peculiarity very often afterwards in many other of the islanders.

Mehevi having now departed, and the family physician having likewise made his exit, we were left about sunset with the natives by signs and gestures. To have looked at my companion, as, sympathizing with my sufferings, he strove to put an end to them, one would have thought that he was the deaf and dumb alphabet incarnated. Whether my tormentor yielded to Toby’s entreaties, or paused from sheer exhaustion, I do not know; but at all once he ceased his operations, and at the same time the chief relinquishing his hold upon me, I fell back, faint and breathless with the agony I had endured.

Mehevi having now departed, and the family physician having likewise made his exit, we were left about sunset with the natives by signs and gestures. To have looked at my companion, as, sympathizing with my sufferings, he strove to put an end to them, one would have thought that he was the deaf and dumb alphabet incarnated. Whether my tormentor yielded to Toby’s entreaties, or paused from sheer exhaustion, I do not know; but at all once he ceased his operations, and at the same time the chief relinquishing his hold upon me, I fell back, faint and breathless with the agony I had endured.

Junto a una ladera del valle, y casi a media altura de la pendiente de una elevación bastante abrupta en el terreno ondulante del más rico verdor, se habían dispuesto cierto número de piedras grandes en filas sucesivas, hasta la altura de casi ocho pies, colocadas de tal modo que su superficie horizontal correspondía en forma a la habitación encerrada encima de ella. No obstante, se reservaba un estrecho espacio, en lo alto de esta pila de piedras (llamada por los indígenas un pai-pai), que, por estar rodeado por una pequeña empalizada de cañas, le daba cierto aspecto de balcón. La armazón de la casa estaba construida con grandes bambúes plantados de pie, y trabajados de vez en cuando por trevales de la ligera madera del habiscus, atados con correas de correa. La parte de atrás de la cons-
lashed with thongs of bark. The rear of the tenement—built up
with successive ranges of coconaut boughs bound one upon
another, with their leaflets cunningly woven together—inclined
a little from the vertical, and extended from the extreme edge
of the ‘pai-pai’ to about twenty feet from its surface; whence the
shelving roof—thatched with the long tapering leaves of the
palmetto—sloped steeply off to within about five feet of the
floor; leaving the eaves drooping with tassel-like appendages
over the front of the habitation. This was constructed of light
elegant canes in a kind of open screen-work, tastefully
adorned with bindings of variegated sinnate, which served to
hold together its various parts. The sides of the house were simi-
larly built; thus presenting three quarters for the circulation of
the air, while the whole was impervious to the rain.

In length this picturesque building was perhaps twelve
yards, while in breadth it could not have exceeded as many feet. So
much for the exterior; which, with its wire-like reed-twisted sides,
not a little reminded me of an immense aviary.

Stooping a little, you passed through a narrow aperture
in its front; and facing you, on entering, lay two long, perfectly
straight, and well-polished trunks of the coconaut tree, extend-
ing the full length of the dwelling; one of them placed closely
against the rear, and the other lying parallel with it some two
yards distant, the interval between them being spread with a
multitude of gaily-worked mats, nearly all of a different pattern.
This space formed the common couch and **lounging** place of
the natives, answering the purpose of a divan in Oriental countries.
Here would they slumber through the hours of the night, and
recline luxuriously during the greater part of the day. The re-
mainder of the floor presented only the cool shining surfaces of
the large stones of which the ‘pai-pai’ was composed.

From the ridge-pole of the house hung suspended a num-
ber of large packages enveloped in coarse tappa; some of which
contained festival dresses, and various other matters of the ward-
robe, held in high estimation. These were easily accessible by
means of a line, which, passing over the ridge-pole, had one end
attached to a bundle, while with the other, which led to the side
of the dwelling and was there secured, the package could be low-
ered or elevated at pleasure.

Against the farther wall of the house were arranged
in tasteful figures a variety of spears and javelins, and other
implements of savage warfare. Outside of the habitation, and
built upon the piazza-like area in its front, was a little shed
used as a sort of larder or pantry, and in which were stored
various articles of domestic use and convenience. A few yards
from the pi-pi was a large shed built of coconaut boughs, where
the process of preparing the ‘poe-poe’ was carried on, and all
culinary operations attended to.

Thus much for the house, and its *appurtenances*; and it
will be readily acknowledged that a more commodious and appro-
priate dwelling for the climate and the people could not possibly be
devised. It was cool, free to admit the air, scrupulously clean, and
elevated above the dampness and impurities of the ground.

But now to sketch the inmates; and here I claim for my
trución — construida con filas sucesivas de ramas de cocotero ata-
dadas una con otra, con las hojitas hábilmente entrelazadas—se apar-
taba un poco de la [95] vertical, extendiéndose desde el borde exter-
mo del pai-pai hasta unos veinte pies más allá de su superficie, tras
de lo cual el techo inclinado —cubierto con largas curvas hojas de
del palma— entraba en abrupto declive hasta cerca de unos cinco pies
del suelo, dejando pender las hojas con sus apéndices como borlas
por encima de la fachada de la vivienda. Esta estaba construida de
cañas ligeras y elegantes, en una especie de labor de celosía clara,
arísticamente adornada con entrelazados de abigarrado sinnate, que
servían para mantener sujetas sus diversas partes. Los costados de la
casa estaban construidos de modo semejante, presentando así tres
cuartos abiertos a la circulación del aire, mientras que el conjunto
era impenetrable a la lluvia.

De longitud, este pintoresco edificio tendría quizás doce yardas,
mientras que en anchura no excedería de otros tantos pies. Eso, en
cuanto al exterior, que con sus costados de cañas entrelazadas como
redes metálicas, me recordaba no poco un inmenso gallinero.

Agachándose un poco, uno entraba por una estrecha apertura en
su fachada: al entrar, había delante dos largos troncos, perfectamente
derechos y bien pulidos, de cocotero, extendidos en toda la longitud
de la vivienda; uno de ellos apretado firmemente contra la pared de
atrás, y el otro extendido paralelamente a éste a unos dos yardas de
distancia, con el intervalo entre ambos esparcido de una multitud de
estrellitas de alegres adornos, casi todas ellas de dibujo diferente.
Este espacio formaba la yacima común y el lugar de *ocio* de los indí-
genas, correspondiendo a la finalidad del diván en los países orien-
tales. Allí dormían durante las horas de la noche, y allí se reclinaban
ostensosamente durante la mayor parte del día. El resto del suelo
presentaba sólo las frías superficies brillantes de las amplias pie-
dras de que se componía el pai-pai.

Del travesaño central de la casa colgaba cierto número de
grandes fardos envueltos en tosca *tappa*, algunos de los cuales
contenían vestiduras de fiesta, y otros, cosas de guardarropa que
se tenían en gran estimación. Eran fácilmente alcanzables por
medio de una cuerda que, pasando por encima del travesaño,
ataba por un extremo el envoltorio, mientras por el otro, que
llegaba al costado de la casa y se ataba allí, se podía subir y
bajar a voluntad el paquete.

En la pared final de la casa estaba dispuesta, en artísticas figu-
ras, una variedad de lanzas y jabalinás y otros instrumentos indíge-

asa, de guerra. Fuera de la habitación, y construido en el terreno que
quedaba delante, como una galería, había un pequeño cobertizo donde
se vigilaban todas las operaciones culinarias.

appurtenances
accesorios, suplementos, cachivaches

En el parec final de la casa estaba dispuesta, en artísticas figu-
ras, una variedad de lanzas y jabalinás y otros instrumentos indíge-
as de guerra. Fuera de la habitación, y construido en el terreno que
quedaba delante, como una galería, había un pequeño cobertizo usado
como una especie de despensa o almacén, y en que se podían guar-
dar diversos artículos de conveniencia y uso [96] doméstico. A po-
cas yardas del pai-pai había un amplio cobertizo construido con ra-
mas de cocotero, donde tenía lugar el proceso de preparar el poi-
poi, y donde se vigilaban todas las operaciones culinarias.

Pero ahora, esbocemos a los moradores, y aquí reclamo para mi
procurador sirviente y fiel lacayo Kory-Kory la *precedencia* de una
primera descripción. Como su carácter se irá manifestando poco a
poco en el transcurso de mi relato, por ahora me contentaré con de-
linear su aspecto personal. Kory-Kory, aun siendo el criado más ape-
gado y de mejor carácter que haya en el mundo, era ¡ay! objeto ho-
Kory-Kory, with a view of improving the handiwork of nature, and perhaps prompted by a desire to add to the engaging expression of his countenance, had seen fit to embellish his face with three broad longitudinal stripes of tattooing, which, like those country roads that go straight forward in defiance of all obstacles, crossed his nasal organ, descended into the hollow of his eyes, and even skirted the borders of his mouth. Each completely flattened his physiognomy; one extending in a line with his eyes, another crossing the face in the vicinity of the nose, and the third sweeping along his lips from ear to ear. His countenance thus triply hooped, as it were, with tattooing, always reminded me of those unhappy wretches whom I have sometimes observed gazing out sentimentally from behind the grated bars of a prison window; whilst the entire body of my savage valet, covered all over with representations of birds and fishes, and a variety of most unaccountable-looking creatures, suggested to me the idea of a pictorial museum of natural history, or an illustrated copy of 'Goldsmith's Animated Nature.'

But it seems really heartless in me to write thus of the poor islander, when I owe perhaps to his unremitting attentions the very existence I now enjoy. Kory-Kory, I mean thee no harm in what I say in regard to thy outward adornings; but they were a little curious to my unaccustomed sight, and therefore I dilate upon them. But to underrate or forget thy faithful services is something I could never be guilty of, even in the giddiest moment of my life.

The father of my attached follower was a native of gigantic frame, and had once possessed prodigious physical powers; but the lofty form was now yielding to the incursions of time, though the hand of disease seemed never to have been laid upon the aged warrior. Marheyo—for such was his name—appeared to have retired from all active participation in the affairs of the valley, seldom or never accompanying the natives in their various expeditions; and employing the greater part of his time in throwing up a little shed just outside the house, upon which he was engaged to my certain knowledge for four months, without appearing to make any sensible advance. I suppose the old gentle- man was in his dotage, for he manifested in various ways the unaccountable and almost unaccounted-for expression of his countenance, had seen fit to embellish his face with a pair of horns. His beard, plucked out by the root from every other part of his face, was suffered to droop in hairy pendants, two of which garnished his under lip, and an equal number hung from the extremity of his chin.

But despite his eccentricities, Marheyo was a most paternal and warm-hearted old fellow, and in this particular not a little object to look upon. He was some twenty-five years of age, and about six feet in height, robust and well made, and of the most extraordinary aspect. His head was carefully shaved with the exception of two circular spots, about the size of a dollar, near the top of the cranium, where the hair, permitted to grow of an amazing length, was twisted up in two prominent knots, that gave him the appearance of being decorated with a pair of horns. His beard, plucked out by the root from every other part of his face, was suffered to droop in hairy pendants, two of which garnished his under lip, and an equal number hung from the extremity of his chin.
resembled his son Kory-Kory. The mother of the latter was the mistress of a country landlady at an unexpected arrival; for ever giving the young girls tasks to perform, which the little hussies as often neglected; poking into every corner, and rummaging over bundles of old tappa, or making a prodigious clatter among the calabashes. Sometimes she might have been seen squatting upon her haunches in front of a huge wooden basin, and kneading puce-poe with terrific vehemence, dashing the stone pestle about as if she would shiver the vessel into fragments; on other occasions, galloping about the valley in search of a particular kind of leaf, used in some of her recondite operations, and returning home, toiling and sweating, with a bundle of it, under which most women would have sunk.

To tell the truth, Kory-Kory’s mother was the only industrious person in all the valley of Typee; and she could not have employed herself more actively had she been left an exceedingly muscular and destitute widow, with an inordinate aye supply of young children, in the bleakest part of the civilized world. There was not the slightest necessity for the greater portion of the labour performed by the old lady: but she seemed to work from some irresistible impulse; her limbs continually swaying to and fro, as if there were some indefatigable engine concealed within her body which kept her in perpetual motion.

Never suppose that she was a termagant or a shrew for all this; she had the kindest heart in the world, and acted towards me in particular in a truly maternal manner, occasionally putting some little morsel of choice food, into my hand, some outlandish kind of savage sweetmeat or pastry, like a dotting mother petting a sickly urchin with tarts and sugar plums. Warm indeed are my remembrances of the dear, good, affectionate old Tinor!

Besides the individuals I have mentioned, there belonged to the household three young men, dissipated, good-for-nothing, roysterers of savages, who were either employed in prosecuting love affairs with the maidens of the tribe, or grew boozy on arva and tobacco, as more enlightened young ladies, substituted for these occupations with the manufacture of a fine species of tappa; but for the greater portion of the time were skipping from house to house, gadding and gossiping with their acquaintances.

From the rest of these, however, I must except the beauteous nymph Fayaway, who was my peculiar favourite. Her free plant figure was the very perfection of female grace and beauty. Her complexion was a rich and mantling olive, and when watching the glow upon her cheeks I could almost swear that beneath the transparent medium there lurked the blushes of a faint vermillion. The face of this girl was a rounded oval, and each feature as perfectly formed as the heart or imagination of man could desire. Her full lips, when parted with a smile, disclosed teeth of dazzling whiteness and when her rosy mouth opened with a burst of merriment, they looked like the milk-white seeds of the ‘arta,’ a fruit of the valley, which, when cleft in twain, shows them reposing in rows on each side, imbedded in the red and juicy pulp. Her hair of the

su hijo Kory-Kory. La madre de éste era el cabeza de familia, y ama de casa muy notable y anciana muy industriosa, por cierto. Aunque no entendía el arte de hacer confituras, mermeladas, natillas, pastas de té, y semejantes asuntos despreciables, era profundamente experta en los misterios de la preparación del amar, el poi-poi, el koku, y [98] otras cuestiones sustanciales.

Era genuinamente laboriosa, afanándose por la casa como una señora de campo ante una visita inesperada; encomendando siempre a las jóvenes tareas para realizar, que las picaruelas a menudo descuidaban; asomándose a todos los rincones, y enredando en los envoltorios de vieja tappa, o armando un prodigioso estrépito entre las calabazas. A veces se la veía en cucullas ante un gran recipiente de madera, amasando poi-poi con terrible vehemencia, y golpeando el almirez de piedra como si fuera a cascar la vasija en fragmentos; o, en otras ocasiones, galopando por el valle en busca de una determinada clase de hojas, usadas en alguna de sus recónditas operaciones, y volviendo a casa, fatigada y sudorosa, con una brazada de ellas bajo la cual se habrían hundido la mayor parte de las mujeres.

Para decir la verdad, la madre de Kory-Kory era la única persona industriosa en todo el valle de Taipi, y no se podría haber esforzado con mayor actividad si hubiera quedado como viuda abandonada, pero muy musculosa, con una provisión desmesurada de níños pequeños, en la parte más desolada del mundo civilizado. No había la más leve necesidad de la mayor parte del esfuerzo realizadado por la anciana, pero ella parecía trabajar por algún impulso irresistible, con sus miembros continuamente agitados de un lado para otro, como si tuviera algún motor incansable oculto en el cuerpo, manteniéndola en movimiento perpetuo.

Todo ello no debe hacer suponer jamás que fuera una arpa ni una fiera: tenía el corazón más bondadoso del mundo, y se comportaba conmigo en particular de un modo auténticamente maternal, poniéndome en la mano de vez en cuando algún pequeño bocado de alimento selecto, alguna exótica especie de confite o pastel salvaje, como una madre mimosa que cuida su niño enfermizo con tartas y pastelillos dulces. ¡Qué cálidos, en efecto, son mis recuerdos de la querida, buena y cariñosa vieja Tinor!

Además de los individuos que he mencionado, formaban parte de la casa tres jóvenes, tres calaveras disipados, inútiles y faraones, que siempre estaban ocupados en amoríos con las doncellas de la tribu, o en embriagarse con arva y tabaco en compañía de espiritus afines, los bribeones del valle.

Entre los moradores permanentes de la casa había igualmente varias amables damiselas, que en vez de appearar pianos y leer novelas, como señoritas más cultas, sustituyan las ocupaciones con la manufactura de una fina clase de tappa, aunque la mayor parte del tiempo estaban metiéndose de casa en casa, y charlando y cotilleando con sus amistades. [99]

Del conjunto de éstas, sin embargo, debo exceptuar a la hermosa ninfa Fayaway, que fue mi favorita personal. Su figura, libre y flexible, era la perfección misma de la gracia y la belleza femeninas. Su tez era de un color acenutado, denso y matizado, y al observar el fulgor de sus mejillas, casi hubiera jurado que bajo ese medio transparente se escondían los rubores de un leve bermejón. La cara de esta muchacha era un óvalo redondeado, con todos los rasgos tan perfectamente formados como pudiera desear el corazón o la imaginación del hombre. Sus carnosos labios, al entreabrirse en una sonrisa, revelaban dientes de blanca deslumbrante, que cuando se abría su rosada boca en una explosión de júbilo, parecían las lechosas semillas del arta, un fruto del valle, que, al partirse en dos, las muestra descansando en filas a un lado y a otro, incrustadas en la pulpa densa y jugosa. Su pelo, de la más profunda oscuridad, dividido irregu-

J. M. Valverde
deepest brown, parted irregularly in the middle, flowed in natural ringlets over her shoulders, and whenever she chanced to stoop, fell over and hid from view her lovely bosom. Gazing into the depths of her strange blue eyes, when she was in a contemplative mood, they seemed most placid yet unfathomable; but when illuminated by some lively emotion, they beam upon the beholder like stars. The hands of Fayaway were as soft and delicate as those of any countess; for an entire exemption from rude labour marks the girlhood and even prime of a Typee woman’s life. Her feet, though wholly exposed, were as diminutive and fairly shaped as those which peep from beneath the skirts of a Lima lady’s dress. The skin of this young creature, from continual ablutions and the use of mollifying ointments, was inconceivably smooth and soft.

I may succeed, perhaps, in particularizing some of the individual features of Fayaway’s beauty, but that general loveliness of appearance which they all contributed to produce I will not attempt to describe. The easy unstudied graces of a child of nature like this, breathing from infancy an atmosphere of perpetual summer, and nurtured by the simple fruits of the earth; enjoying a perfect freedom from care and anxiety, and removed effectually from all injurious tendencies, strike the eye in a manner which cannot be portrayed. This picture is no fancy sketch; it is drawn from the most vivid recollections of the person delineated.

Were I asked if the beauteous form of Fayaway was altogether free from the hideous blemish of tattooing, I should be constrained to answer that it was not. But the practitioners of the barbarous art, so remorseless in their inflictions upon the brawny limbs of the warriors of the tribe, seem to be conscious that it needs not the resources of their profession to augment the charms of the maidens of the vale.

The females are very little embellished in this way, and Fayaway, and all the other young girls of her age, were even less so than those of their sex more advanced in years. The reason of this peculiarity will be alluded to hereafter. All the tattooing that the nymph in question exhibited upon her person may be easily described. Three minute dots, no bigger than pin-heads, decorated each lip, and at a little distance were not at all discernible. Just upon the fall of the shoulder were drawn two parallel lines half an inch apart, and perhaps three inches in length, the interval being filled with delicately executed figures. These narrow bands of tattooing, thus placed, always reminded me of those stripes of gold lace worn by officers in undress, and which are in lieu of epaulettes to denote the rank.

Thus much was Fayaway tattooed. The audacious hand which had gone so far in its desecrating work stopping short, apparently wanting the heart to proceed.

But I have omitted to describe the dress worn by this nymph of the valley.

Fayaway—I must avow the fact—for the most part clung to the primitive and summer garb of Eden. But how becoming the costume! It showed her fine figure to the best possible advantage; and nothing could have been better adapted to her peculiar style of beauty. On ordinary occasions she was habituated precisely as I have described the two youthful savages whom we had met on first entering the valley. At other times, when rambling among the groves, or visiting at the houses of her acquaintances, she wore a tunic of white tappa, reaching from her waist to a little below the knees; and when exposed for any length of time to the sun, she invariably protected herself from its rays by a floating mantle of—the same material, larmente por en medio, descendía en ríos naturales sobre sus hombros, y cuando se agachaba, caía hacia delante, ocultando a la vista su delicioso seno. Mirando las profundidades de sus extraños ojos azules, cuando estaba de ánimo contemplativo, parecían muy plácidos aunque insensibles; pero cuando se iluminaban con alguna viva emoción, refulgían como estrellas hacia quien los mirara. Las mañanitas de Fayaway eran tan suaves y delicadas como las de cualquier condesa, pues la adolescencia y aun la primera juventud de las mujeres de Taipi se caracteriza por la total exención de trabajos rudos. Sus pies, aunque descubiertos por completo, eran tan diminutos y tan bellamente formados como los que se asoman bajo las faldas de una dama limeña. La piel de esta joven criatura, por las continuas abluciones y por el uso de ungüentos suavizadores, era inconcebiblemente suave y blanda.

Quizás seré capaz de detallar algunos de los rasgos personales de la belleza de Fayaway, pero no intentaré descubrir el delicioso aspecto general que todos ellos contribuían a producir. Las fáciles gracias no estudiadas de una niña en una atmósfera como ésa, respirando desde la infancia una atmósfera de perpetuo verano, y nutrida por los sencillos frutos de la tierra, disfrutando total libertad de preocupaciones y ansiedades, y eficazmente alejada de todas las tendencias dañosas, impresionan la mirada de un modo que no puede describirse. Esta imagen no es un esbozo fantástico: está dibujada conforme a los más vivos recuerdos de la persona retratada.

Si se me preguntara si la bella figura de Fayaway estaba completamente libre de la horrible mancha del tatuaje, estaría obligado a contestar que no. Pero los que ejercen ese bárbaro arte, tan inexorables en sus aplicaciones a los robustos miembros de los guerreros de la tribu, parecen darse cuenta de que no hacen falta los recursos de su profesión para aumentar los encantos de las doncellas del valle.

Las mujeres están muy poco adornadas de ese modo, y Fayaway, junto con todas las demás muchachas de su edad, lo estaba menos aún que las mujeres más avanzadas en edad. Más adelante se aludirá a la razón de esta peculiaridad. Puede describirse fácilmente todo el tatuaje que exhibía la ninfa en cuestión. Tres menudos lucra- nares, no mayores que cabezas de alfiler, decoraban cada labio, sin ser visibles en absoluto a cierta distancia. En la caída de los hombros estaban trazadas dos líneas paralelas, a media pulgada de distancia, y quizás de tres pulgadas de largo, con su intervalo lleno de figuras delicadamente ejecutadas. Esas estrechas bandas de tatuaje, así colocadas, siempre recordaba esas franjas de encaje de oro que llevan los oficiales en uniforme de diario, para indicar su rango en lugar de las charneras.

Así estaba tatuada Fayaway: la mano que había llegado hasta ahí en su tarea profanadora, se había detenido de repente, al parecer por falta de ánimo para seguir.

Pero no he descrito el atuendo que llevaba esa ninfa del valle.

Fayaway —debo confesar este hecho— en su mayor parte seguía ateniéndose al primitivo y veraniego atavío del Edén. Pero ¡qué bien le sentaba este atuendo! Mostraba su hermosura figura con la mayor ventaja posible, y nada le habría sentado mejor a su estilo personal de belleza. En ocasiones normales, iba ataviada exactamente tal como he descrito a los dos jóvenes salvajes a quienes encontramos recién entrados en el valle. En otras ocasiones, cuando vagaba por los bosques, o visitaba las casas de sus amistades, llevaba una prenda de tappa blanca, desde la cintura a un poco más abajo de las rodillas, y cuando se exponía durante algún tiempo al sol, se protegía sin falta de sus rayos con un manto flotante del mismo material, reunido holgadamente en
loosely gathered about the person. Her gala dress will be described hereafter.

As the beauties of our own land delight in bedecking themselves with fanciful articles of jewellery, suspending them from their ears, hanging them about their necks, and clasping them around their wrists; so Fayaway and her companions were in the habit of ornamenting themselves with similar appendages.

Flora was their jeweller. Sometimes they wore necklaces of small carnation flowers, strung like rubies upon a fibre of tappa, or displayed in their ears a single white bud, the stem thrust backward through the aperture, and showing in front the delicate petals folded together in a beautiful sphere, and looking like a drop of the purest pearl. Chaplets too, resembling in their arrangement the strawberry coronal worn by an English peeress, and composed of inter-twined leaves and blossoms, often crowned their temples; and bracelets and anklets of the same tasteful pattern were frequently to be seen. Indeed, the maidens of the island were passionately fond of flowers, and never wearied of decorating their persons with them; a lovely trait in their character, and one that ere long will be more fully alluded to.

Though in my eyes, at least, Fayaway was indisputably the loveliest female I saw in Typee, yet the description I have given of her will in some measure apply to nearly all the youthful portion of her sex in the valley. Judge ye then, reader, what beautiful creatures they must have been.

CHAPTER TWELVE

WHEN Mehevi had departed from the house, as related in the preceding chapter, Kory-Kory commenced the functions of the post assigned him. He brought out, various kinds of food; and, as if I were an infant, insisted upon feeding me with his own hands. To this procedure I, of course, most earnestly objected, but in vain; and having laid a calabash of kokoo before me, he washed his fingers in a vessel of water, and then putting his hands into the dish and rolling the food into little balls, put them one after another into my mouth. All my remonstrances against this measure only provoked so great a clamour on his part, that I was obliged to acquiesce; and the operation of feeding being thus facilitated, the meal was quickly despatched. As for Toby, he was allowed to help himself after his own fashion.

The repast over, my attendant arranged the mats for repose, and, bidding me lie down, covered me with a large robe of tappa, at the same time looking approvingly upon me, and exclaiming ‘Ki-ki, nuee nuee, ah! moee moee mortarkee’ (eat plenty, ah! sleep very good). The philosophy of this sentiment I did not pretend to question; for deprived of sleep for several preceding nights, and the pain of my limb having much abated, I now felt inclined to avail myself of the opportunity afforded me.
The next morning, on waking, I found Kory-Kory stretched out on one side of me, while my companion lay upon the other. I felt sensibly refreshed after a night of sound repose, and immediately agreed to the proposition of my valet that I should repair to the water and wash, although dreading the suffering that the exertion might produce. From this apprehension, however, I was quickly relieved; for Kory-Kory, leaping from the pia-pia, and then backing himself up against it, like a porter in readiness to shoulder a trunk, with loud vociferations and a superabundance of gestures, gave me to understand that I was to mount upon his back and be thus transported to the stream, which flowed perhaps two hundred yards from the house.

Our appearance upon the verandah in front of the habitation drew together quite a crowd, who stood looking on and conversing with one another in the most animated manner. They reminded one of a group of idlers gathered about the door of a village tavern when the equipage of some distinguished traveller is brought round previously to his departure. As soon as I clasped my arms about the neck of the devoted fellow, and he jogged off with me, the crowd—composed chiefly of young girls and boys—followed after, shouting and capering with infinite glee, and accompanied us to the banks of the stream.

On gaining it, Kory-Kory, wading up to his hips in the water, carried me half-way across, and deposited me on a smooth black stone which rose a few inches above the surface. The amphibious rabble at our heels plunged in after us, and climbing to the summit of the grass-grown rocks with which the bed of the brook was here and there broken, waited curiously to witness our morning ablutions.

Somewhat embarrassed by the presence of the female portion of the company, and feeling my cheeks burning with bashful timidity, I formed a primitive basin by joining my hands together, and cooled my blushed in the water it contained; then removing my frock, bent over and washed myself down to my waist in the stream. As soon as Kory-Kory comprehended from my motions that this was to be the extent of my performance, he appeared perfectly aghast with astonishment, and rushing towards me, poured out a torrent of words in eager deprecation of so limited an operation, enjoining me by unmistakable signs to immerse my whole body. To this I was forced to consent; and the honest fellow regarding me as a froward, inexperienced child, whom it was his duty to serve at the risk of offending, lifted me from the rocks, and tenderly bathed my limbs. This over, and resuming my seat, I could not avoid bursting into admiration of the scene around me.

From the verdant surfaces of the large stones that lay scattered about, the natives were now sliding off into the water, diving and zambulléndose bajo la superficie en todas direcciones: las muchachas volvían a flote con ligereza, saliendo al aire, y mostrando sus formas desinconfundibles, que sumergiera todo el cuerpo. A esto me vi obligado a consentir, y el honrado muchacho, considerándome como un niño discolo e inexperto, a quien tenía obligación de servir con riesgo de ofender, me levantó de la roca y me bañó íntegramente todo el cuerpo. Terminado eso, y volviendo a ocupar mi asiento, no pude menos de prorrumpir en admiración ante la escena que tenía a mi alrededor.

The nature of the route we now pursued struck me more forcibly than anything I had yet seen, as illustrating the indolent disposition of the islanders. The path was obviously the most beaten one in the valley, several others leading from each side into it, and perhaps for successive generations it
had formed the principal avenue of the place. And yet, until I grew more familiar with its impediments, it seemed as difficult to travel as the recesses of a wilderness. Part of it swept around an abrupt rise of ground, the surface of which was broken by frequent inequalities, and thickly strewed with projecting masses of rocks, whose summits were often hidden from view by the drooping foliage of the luxuriant vegetation. Sometimes directly over, sometimes evading these obstacles with a wide circuit, the path wound along;—one moment climbing over a sudden eminence smooth with continued wear, then descending on the other side into a steep glen, and crossing the flinty channel of a brook. Here it pursued the depths of a glade, occasionally obliging you to stoop beneath vast horizontal branches; and now you stepped over huge trunks and boughs that lay rotting across the track.

Such was the grand thoroughfare of Typee. After proceeding a little distance along it,—Kory-Kory panting and blowing with the weight of his burden—I dismounted from his back, and grasping the long spear of Mehevi in my hand, assisted my steps over the numerous obstacles of the road; preferring this mode of advance to one which, from the difficulties of the way, was equally painful to myself and my weary servitor.

Our journey was soon at an end; for, scaling a sudden height, we came abruptly upon the place of our destination. I wish that it were possible to sketch in words this spot as vividly as I recollect it.

Here were situated the Taboo groves of the valley—the scene of many a prolonged feast, of many a horrid rite. Beneath the dark shadows of the consecrated bread-fruit trees there reigned a solemn twilight—a cathedral-like gloom. The frightful genius of pagan worship seemed to brood in silence over the place, breathing its spell upon every object around. Here and there, in the depths of these awful shades, half screened from sight by masses of overhanging foliage, rose the idolatrous altars of the savages, built of enormous blocks of black and polished stone, placed one upon another, without cement, to the height of twelve or fifteen feet, and surmounted by a rustic open temple, enclosed with a low picket of canes, within which might be seen, in various stages of decay, offerings of bread-fruit and coconuts, and the putrefying relics of some recent sacrifice.

In the midst of the wood was the hallowed ‘Hoolah Hoolah’ ground—set apart for the celebration of the fantastic religious ritual of these people—comprising an extensive oblong pi-pi, terminating at either end in a lofty terraced altar, guarded by ranks of hideous wooden idols, and with the two remaining sides flanked by ranges of bamboo sheds, opening towards the interior of the quadrangle [patio] thus formed. Vast trees, standing in the middle of this space, and throwing over it an unbroken shade, had their massive trunks built round with slight stages, elevated a few feet above the ground, and railed in with canes, forming so many rustic pulpits, from which the priests harangued their devotees.

This holiest of spots was defended from profanation by the strictest edicts of the all-pervading ‘taboo’, which condemned to instant death the sacrilegious female who should enter or touch its sacred precincts, or even so much as press with her feet the ground made holy by the shadows that it cast.

Access was had to the enclosure through an embowered entrance, on one side, facing a number of towering coconut trees, planted at intervals along a level area of a hundred yards. At the further extremity of this space was to be seen a building of considerable size, reserved for the habitation of the priests and religious ba the principal avenida del lugar. Y sin embargo, hasta que tuve más familiaridad con sus impedimentos, me pareció tan difícil de seguir como las interioridades de una selva desierta. Parte de él giraba en torno a una repentina elevación del terreno, cuya superficie estaba rota por frecuentes desigualdades y densamente salpicada por masas salientes de rocas, cuyas cimas quedaban a menudo ocultas de la vista por el follaje colgante de la lujuriente vegetación. A veces paseando sobre esos obstáculos, a veces eludíándolos con un amplio rodeo, el sendero avanzaba en curvas; un momento trepando por un repentino saliente. [105] Alisado del continuo desgaste, y luego bajando al otro lado, hasta un profundo barranco, y cruzando el cauce de pedernal de un arroyo. Allí seguía las profundidades de una ciénaga, obligándole a uno de vez en cuando a agacharse bajo grandes ramas horizontales, y luego había que saltar enormes troncos y raíces que se pudrían extendidos a través del camino.

Tal era la gran carretera de Taipi. Después de seguirla durante una breve distancia —Kory—Kory jadeaba y resoplaba con el peso de su fardo,—, desmonté de sus espaldas, y empuñando la larga lanza de Mehevi, apoyé mis pasos para superar los numerosos obstáculos del camino, prefiriendo este modo de avanzar al que, por las dificultades del camino, era tan penoso para mí como para mi fatigado servidor.

Nuestro viaje terminó pronto, pues, escalando una altura repentina, llegamos de pronto al lugar de nuestro destino. Me gustaría que fuera posible esbozar en palabras el lugar de modo tan vivo como lo recuerdo.

Allí estaban situados los bosquecillos tabú del valle, la escena de muchas fiestas prolongadas, de muchos ritos horrendos. Bajo las oscuras sombras de los sagrados árboles del pan, reinaba una sombra catedralicia. El terrible genio de la adoración pagana parecía cernirse en silencio sobre aquel lugar, exhalando su hechizo sobre todos los objetos en torno. Acá y allá, en lo profundo de esas terribles sombras, y medio ocultos a la vista por masas de follaje colgante, se alzaban los altares idólatras de los salto, construidos con enormes sillas de piedra negra y pulida, colocados uno encima de otro, sin cemento, hasta la altura de doce o quince pies, y rematados por un rústico templo abierto, rodeado por una baja empalizada de cañas, en que se veían, en diversos grados de corrupción, ofrendas de frutos del árbol del pan y cocos, y los restos putrefactos de algún sacrificio reciente.

En medio del bosque estaba el sacro terreno bulo-hola, reservado para el fantástico ritual religioso de esa gente, comprendiendo un extenso pai-pai alargado, que acababa en cada extremo en un altar elevado en terrazas, guardado por filas de horribles ídolos de madera, y con los dos lados restantes flanqueados por series de cobertizos de bambú, abiertos hacia el interior del cuadrilátero formado. Enormes árboles, elevados en medio de este espacio y proyectando sobre él una densa sombra, tenían en torno de sus macizos troncos unas leves plataformas construidas a pocos pies del suelo, con barandillas de cañas formando rústicos púlpitos, desde los cuales los sacerdotes arregrían a sus devotos. [106]

Este sacratísimo lugar estaba defendido de la profanación por los más estrictos edictos del omnipresente tabú, que condenaba a muerte instantánea a la sacrílega mujer que traspasara o tocara su sagrado recinto, o incluso hollara con su pie el terreno consagrado por las sombras que proyectaba.

Se tenía acceso al recinto por una entrada cubierta de arbustos en un lado, frente a cierto número de elevados cocoteros, plantados a intervalos a lo largo de un área horizontal de unas cien yardas. En el extremo más lejano de ese espacio se veía una construcción de considerable tamaño, reservada para residencia de los sacerdotes y
In its vicinity was another remarkable edifice, built as usual upon the summit of a pi-pi, and at least two hundred feet in length, though not more than twenty in breadth. The whole front of this latter structure was completely open, and from one end to the other ran a narrow verandah, fenced in on the edge of the pi-pi with a puckered picket of canes. Its interior presented the appearance of an immense lounging place, the entire floor being strewn with successive layers of mats, lying between parallel trunks of cocoanut trees, selected for the purpose from the straightest and most symmetrical the vale afforded.

To this building, denominated in the language of the natives the ‘Ti’, Mehevi now conducted us. Thus far we had been accompanied by a troop of the natives of both sexes; but as soon as we approached its vicinity, the females gradually separated themselves from the crowd, and standing aloof, permitted us to pass on. The merciless prohibitions of the taboo extended likewise to this edifice, and were enforced by the same dreadful penalty that secured the Hoolah-Hoolah ground from the imaginary pollution of a woman’s presence.

On entering the house, I was surprised to see six muskets ranged against the bamboo on one side, from the balconies of which depended as many small canvas pouches, partly filled with powder.

Disposed about these muskets, like the cutlasses that decorate the bulkhead of a man-of-war’s cabin, were a great variety of rude spears and paddles, javelins, and war-clubs. This then, said I to Toby, must be the armoury of the tribe.

As we advanced further along the building, we were struck with the aspect of four or five hideous old wretches, whose decrepit forms time and tattooing seemed to have obliterated every trace of humanity. Owing to the continued operation of this latter process, which only terminates among the warriors of the island after all the figures stretched upon their limbs in youth have been blended together—an effect, however, produced only in cases of extreme longevity—the bodies of these men were of a uniform dull green colour—the hue which the tattooing gradually assumes as the individual advances in age. Their skin had a frightful scaly appearance, which, united with its singular colour, made their limbs not a little resemble dusty specimens of verde-antique. Their flesh, in parts, hung upon them in huge folds, like the overlapping plaits on the flank of a rhinoceros. Their heads were completely bald, whilst their countenances were puckered into a thousand wrinkles, and they presented no vestige of a beard. But the most remarkable peculiarity about them was the appearance of their feet; the toes, like the radiating lines of the mariner’s compass, pointed to every quarter of the horizon. This was doubtless attributable to the fact, that during nearly a hundred years of existence the said toes never had been subjected to any artificial confinement, and in their old age, being averse to close neighbourhood, bid one another keep open order.

These repulsive-looking creatures appeared to have lost the use of their lower limbs altogether; sitting upon the floor cross-legged in a state of torpor. They never heeded us, lost the use of their lower limbs altogether; sitting upon the floor cross-legged in a state of torpor. They never heeded us, scarcely looking conscious of our presence, while Mehevi seated us upon the mats, and Kory-Kory gave utterance to some unintelligible gibberish.

In a few moments a boy entered with a wooden trencher of poe-poec; and at the dawn of the poi-poi, by por or less of doscientos pies de longitud, aunque sólo de unos veinte de ancho. Toda la parte delantera de esta construcción estaba completamente abierta, y de un extremo a otro corrió un estrecho muro, limitado, en el borde del poi-poi, por una barandilla de cañas. Su interior presentaba el aspecto de un enorme lugar de reposo, con todo el suelo lleno de filas sucesivas de esteras, tendidas entre troncos paralelos de cocoteros elegidos con este fin entre los más derechos y simétricos que ofrecía el valle.

A ese edificio, llamado Ti en el lenguaje de los indígenas, nos llevó entonces Mehevi. Hasta allí nos había acompañado un tropel de indígenas de ambos sexos, pero en cuanto llegamos a su proximidad, las mujeres se separaron de la multitud y se quedaron a un lado, dejándonos seguir adelante. Las inexorables prohibiciones del tabú se extendían también a ese edificio, y estaban sancionadas por el mismo castigo terrible que defendía el terreno hules-hules de la imaginaria mancha que era la presencia de una mujer.

Al entrar en la casa, me sorprendió ver seis mosquetes alineados contra el bambú, a un lado, de cuyos cañones pendían unas bolsitas de lona, parcialmente llenas de pólvora.

Alrededor de esos mosquetes, como los machetes que decoran el mamparo de una cabina de barco de guerra, había una gran variedad de toscas lanzas, azagayas, jabalinas y rompecabezas.

—Esto, entonces —dije a Toby—, debe ser el armario de la tribu.

Al seguir avanzando hacia el edificio, nos sorprendió el aspecto de cuatro o cinco viejos miserables, en cuyas decrépitas figuras el tiempo y el tatuaje parecían haber borrado toda huella de humanidad. Debido a la continua operación de este último proceso, que sólo acaba en los guerreros de la isla cuando todas las figuras extendidas sobre sus miembros durante su juventud han quedado fundidas—efecto, sin embargo, que sólo se produce en casos de extremo [107] longevidad,—los cuerpos de esos hombres eran de un uniforme color verde apagado: el color que el tatuaje toma poco a poco conforme el individuo avanza en edad. Su piel tenía un espantoso aspecto de escamas, que unido a su singular color, hacía que sus miembros parecieran no poco polvorientas muestras de pátina de antigüedad. La carne, por algunas partes, les colgaba en pliegues como las láminas superpuestas en los costados de un rinoceronte. Tenían las cabezas completamente calvas, mientras que sus caras se fruncían en mil arrugas, sin presentar vestigio de barba. Pero la peculiaridad más notable en ellos era el aspecto de sus pies: los dedos, como las líneas que irradian en la brújula del marinero, apuntaban a todos los cuadrantes del horizonte. Esto se podía atribuir sin duda al hecho de que, durante casi cien años de existencia, dichos dedos jamás habían estado sujetos a encierro artificial, y en su vejez, enemigos de la vecindad inmediata, se hacían unos a otros mantener el orden abierto.

* puckered v: gather or cause to gather into wrinkles, folds, or bulges

Esos seres de repulsivo aspecto parecían haber perdido por completo el uso de sus extremidades inferiores, sentados en el suelo, con las piernas cruzadas, en estado de aislamiento. No los prestaban jamás la menor atención, dándose apenas cuenta de nuestra presencia, mientras Mehevi nos sentaba en las esteras y Kory-Kory pronunciaba un ininteligible charlateo.

Pocos momentos después, entró un muchacho con un cuenco de madera de poi-poi, y al regalarme con su contenido, me vi obligado otra vez a someterme a la intervención oficiosa de mi inatigable sirviente. Siguieron otros platos diversos, y el jefe nos importunó del modo más hospitalario apremiándonos a tomar de ellos y procurando eliminar toda timidez por nuestra parte, para lo cual dio ejem-
cable example in his own person.

The repast concluded, a pipe was lighted, which passed from mouth to mouth, and yielding to its soporific influence, the quiet of the place, and the deepening shadows of approaching night, my companion and I sank into a kind of drowsy repose, while the chief and Kory-Kory seemed to be slumbering beside us.

I awoke from an uneasy nap, about midnight, as I supposed; and, raising myself partly from the mat, became sensible that we were enveloped in utter darkness. Toby lay still asleep, but our late companions had disappeared. The only sound that interrupted the silence of the place was the asthmatic breathing of the old men I have mentioned, who reposed at a little distance from us. Besides them, as well as I could judge, there was no one else in the house.

Apprehensive of some evil, I roused my comrade, and we were engaged in a whispered conference concerning the unexpected withdrawal of the natives when all at once, from the depths of the grove, in full view of us where we lay, shots of flame were seen to rise, and in a few moments illuminated the surrounding trees, casting, by contrast, into still deeper gloom the darkness around us.

While we continued gazing at this sight, dark figures appeared moving to and fro before the flames; while others, dancing and capering about, looked like so many demons.

Regarding this new phenomenon with no small degree of trepidation, I said to my companion, ‘What can all this mean, Toby?’

‘Oh, nothing,’ replied he; ‘getting the fire ready, I suppose.’

‘Fire!’ exclaimed I, while my heart took to beating like a trip-hammer, ‘what fire?’

‘Why, the fire to cook us, to be sure, what else would the cannibals be kicking up such a row about if it were not for that?’

‘Oh, Toby! have done with your jokes; this is no time for them; something is about to happen, I feel confident.’

‘Jokes, indeed?’ exclaimed Toby indignantly. ‘Did you ever hear me joke? Why, for what do you suppose the devils have been feeding us up in this kind of style during the last three days, unless it were for something that you are too much frightened at to talk about? Look at that Kory-Kory there!—has he not been stuffing you with his confounded mushes, just in the way they treat swine before they kill them? Depend upon it, we will be eaten this blessed night, and there is the fire we shall be roasted by.’

This view of the matter was not at all calculated to allay my apprehensions, and I shuddered when I reflected that we were indeed at the mercy of a tribe of cannibals, and that the dreadful contingency to which Toby had alluded was by no means removed beyond the bounds of possibility.

‘There! I told you so! they are coming for us!’ exclaimed my companion the next moment, as the forms of four of the islanders were seen in bold relief against the illuminated background, submerging my fate!

Suddenly the silence was broken by the well-remembered tones of Mehevi, and at the kindly accents of his voice my fears were immediately dissipated. ‘Tommo, Toby, ki ki!’ (eat). He had waited to address us, until he had assured him-

Concludo el yantar, se encendió una pipa, que pasó de boca en boca, y cediendo a su influjo soporífero, a la calma del lugar, y a las crecientes sombras de la noche que se acercaba, mi compañero y yo nos hundimos en una especie de repolloso soñoliento, mientras el jefe y Kory-Kory parecían dormitar a nuestro lado.

Me desperté de una cabezada inquieta, hacia la medianoché, según supuse, y medio incorporándome en la esterilla, me di cuenta de que estábamos envueltos en absoluta oscuridad. Toby seguía dormido, pero nuestros anteriores acompañantes habían desaparecido. El único ruido que interrumpía el silencio del lugar era el respirino asmático de los viejos que he mencionado, y que reposaban a poca distancia de nosotros. Además de ellos, por lo que pude juzgar, no había nadie más en la casa.

Mientras seguíamos observando este espectáculo, figuras sombrías aparecieron moviéndose de un lado para otro ante las llamas, mientras otros, danzando y haciendo cabriolas a su alrededor, parecían demonios.

Al observar este nuevo fenómeno, con no poca agitación, dije a mi compañero:

—¿Qué puede significar todo esto, Toby?—

—Ah, nada —contestó—: supongo que preparan el fuego.—

—¡El fuego! —exclamé, mientras mi corazón empezaba a latir como un martinet de fragua.— ¿Qué fue?

—Bueno, el fuego para guisarnos, desde luego; ¿por qué otra cosa podrían estar estos canibales armando tal estrépito si no fuera por eso?

—¡Ah, Toby! Estoy harto de tus bromas, no es momento para ellas: ahora va a pasar algo, estoy seguro.

—¡Bromas, sí, sí! —exclamó Toby, indignado.— ¿Me has oído alguna vez bromear? Bueno, ¿para qué te crees que estos diablos nos han alimentado de ese modo durante estos tres días, si no fuera para algo de que te da demasiado miedo hablar? ¿Mira a ese Kory-Kory? ¿No te ha relLENADO de sus condenadas gách as, igual que se trata a los cerdos antes de la matanza? ¿Puedes estar seguro de que nos van a comer esta misma noche, y ése es el fuego con que nos van a asar.

Tal modo de ver el asunto no era el más apropiado para apaciguar mis temores, y me estremecí al reflexionar que, en efecto, estábamos a merced de una tribu de canibales, y que la terrible contingencia a que había aludido Toby no estaba nada lejos de los límites de la posibilidad.

—¿Mira! ¡Yate lo dijo! ¡Viene por nosotros! —exclamó mi compañero, un momento después, al verse las figuras de tres o cuatro íseños destacadas nítidamente sobre el fondo iluminado, subiendo al pai-pai y acercándose a nosotros.

Venían silenciosamente, más aún, furtivamente, y se deslizaban por la sombra que nos rodeaba como dispuestos a saltar sobre algún objeto que temían agitar antes de asegurárselo. ¡Dios mío! ¿Qué horribles reflexiones se agolparon en mi en ese momento! Un sudor frio invadió mi frente, y en trance de terror, guardé mi destino. [109]

De repente el silencio quedó roto por la bien recordada voz de Mehevi, y ante el benévolo acento de su voz, mis temores quedaron inmediatamente disipados.

—¡Totumo, Toby, ki ki (comer)!
self that we were both awake, at which he seemed somewhat surprised.

‘Ki ki! is it?’ said Toby in his gruff tones; ‘Well, cook us first, will you—but what’s this?’ he added, as another savage appeared, bearing before him a large trencher of wood containing some kind of steaming meat, as appeared from the odours it diffused, and which he deposited at the feet of Mehevi. ‘A baked baby, I dare say I but I will have none of it, never mind what it is. —A pretty fool I should make of myself, indeed, waked up here in the middle of the night, stuffing and guzzling, and all to make a fat meal for a parcel of booby-minded cannibals one of these mornings,—No, I see what they are at very plainly, so I am resolved to

The next morning, after being again abundantly feasted by the hospitable Mehevi, Toby and myself arose to depart. But the chief requested us to postpone our intention. ‘Abo, abo’ (Wait, wait), he said and accordingly we resumed our seats, while, assisted by the zealous Kory-Kory, he appeared to be engaged in giving directions to a number of the natives outside, who werebusily employed in making arrangements, the nature of which we could not comprehend. But we were not left long in our ignorance, for a few moments only had elapsed, when the chief beckoned us to approach, and we perceived that he had been marshalling a kind of guard of honour to escort us on our return to the house of Marheyo.

The procession was led off by two venerable-looking savages, each provided with a spear, from the end of which streamed a pennon of milk-white tapa. After them went several youths, bearing aloft calabashes of poi-poi, and followed in their turn by four stalwart fellows, sustaining long bamboo, from the tops of which hung suspended, at least twenty feet from the ground, large baskets of green bread-fruits. Then came a troop of boys, carrying bunches of ripe bananas, and baskets made of the woven leaflets of coconaut boughs, filled with the young fruit of the tree, the naked shells striped of their husks peeping forth from the verdant wicker-work that surrounded them. Last of all came a burly islander, holding over his head a wooden trencher, in which lay disposed the remnants of our midnight feast, hidden from view, however, by a covering of bread-fruit leaves.

Astonished as I was at this exhibition, I could not avoid Habia esperado a dirigirme la palabra hasta que estuvo seguro de que los dos estábamos despertados, de lo que pareció algo sorprendido.

—¿Ki, ki! ¿conque es eso? —dijo Toby, en tono gruñón:— Bueno, guisados primero, ¿no? Pero ¿qué es esto? —añadió, al aparecer otro salvaje, llevando ante sí una gran bandeja de madera, que contenía alguna clase de carne huyente, según parecía por los olores que difundía, y que depositó a los pies de Mehevi—. ¡Un niño guisado, estoy seguro! Pero no lo voy a probar, sea lo que sea. ¡Sí que haría el tonto, desde luego, despertándome a medianoche, a engullir y emborracharme, y todo para cebarme para un montón de canibales sanguinarios cualquiera de estas mañanas! No, ya veo claramente adónde van, de modo que estoy decidido a auyar hasta hacerme un montón de huesos y ternillas, y luego, si me sirve, ¡bienvenidos! Pero oye, Tommo, ¿no irás a comer de esas porquería, así, a oscuras, no? Bueno, ¿cómo puedes saber lo que es?

—Probándolo, desde luego —dijo, masticando un bocado que Kory-Kory me acababa de meter en la boca—; y muy bueno que es, además; se parece mucho a la ternera.

—¡Un niño guisado, por el alma del capitán Cook! —estalló Toby, con sorprendente vehemencia—. ¡Ternera! Vaya, jamás ha habido una ternera en esta isla, hasta que llegaste tú. ¡Te digo que te están encajando bocados de la carroña de un happar muerto, tan seguro como que estás vivo, y no hay modo de equivocarse!

—¡Puarki! —exclamó Kory-Kory, mirando al plato con complacencia; y desde aquel día nunca he olvidado que tal es la designación del puerco en el dialecto taipi. [110]

A la mañana siguiente, después de volver a ser abundantemente festeados por el hospitalario Mehevi, Toby y yo nos levantamos para marchar. Pero el jefe nos pidió que aplazáramos nuestra intención. —Abo, abo (esperar, esperar) —dijo, y por consiguiente, volvimos a ocupar nuestros asientos, mientras él, ayudado por el celoso Kory-Kory, parecía ocupado en dar instrucciones a cierto número de indígenas que había fuera, y que estaban diligentemente ocupados en hacer arreglos que no podíamos comprender. Pero no nos dejaron mucho tiempo en la ignorancia, pues sólo unos pocos momentos habían pasado cuando el jefe nos indicó que nos acercáramos, y percibimos que había estado formando una especie de guardia de honor para escoltaros en nuestro regreso a la casa de Marheyo.

Abrían la procesión dos salvajes de venerable aspecto, cada cual provisto de una azagaya, de cuyo extremo pendía un gallardete de tapa blanco como la leche. Detrás de él iban varios jóvenes, llevando en alto calabazas de poi-poi, y seguían a su vez por cuatro muchachos fornidos, que sostenían largos bárbamos, de cuyos extremos colgaban, por lo menos a veinte pies del suelo, grandes cestos de fruto del árbol del pan, aún verde. Luego venía un tropel de muchachos, llevando manojos de plátanos maduros, y cestos hechos con hojitas entretejidas de ramas de cocotero, y llenos del fruto joven de este árbol, con sus desnudas esferas, despojadas de sus cáscaras, asomando por la verde labor de cestería que los rodeaba. En último lugar iba un gordo isleño, llevando en la cabeza una bandeja de madera, en que estaban dispuestos los restos de nuestro festín de medianoche, pero ocultos de la vista por una cubierta de hojas del árbol del pan.
smiling at its grotesque appearance, and the associations it naturally called up. Mehevi, it seemed, was bent on replenishing old Marheyo’s larder, fearful perhaps that without this precaution his guests might not fare as well as they could desire.

As soon as I descended from the pi-pi, the procession formed anew, enclosing us in its centre; where I remained part of the time, carried by Kory-Kory, and occasionally relieving him from his burden by limping along with spear. When we moved off in this order, the natives struck up a musical recitative, which with various alternations, they continued until we arrived at the place of our destination.

As we proceeded on our way, bands of young girls, darting from the surrounding groves, hung upon our skirts, and accompanied us with shouts of merriment and delight, which almost drowned the deep notes of the recitative. On approaching old Marheyo’s domicile, its inmates rushed out to receive us; and while the gifts of Mehevi were being disposed of, the superannuated warrior did the honours of his mansion with all the warmth of hospitality evinced by an English squire when he regaled his friends at some fine old patrimonial mansion.

CHAPTER XIII

ATTEMPT TO PROCURE RELIEF FROM NUKUHEVA—PERVERSIVE ADVENTURE OF TOBY IN THE HAPPAI MOUNTAINS—ELOQUENCE OF KORY-KORY

AMIDST these novel scenes a week passed away almost imperceptibly. The natives, actuated by some mysterious impulse, day after day redoubled their attentions to us. Their manner towards us was unaccountable. Surely, thought I, they would not act thus if they meant us any harm. But why this excess of deferential kindness, or what equivalent can they imagine us capable of rendering them for it?

We were fairly puzzled. But despite the apprehensions I could not dispel, the horrible character imputed to these Typees appeared to be wholly undeserved.

‘Why, they are cannibals!’ said Toby on one occasion when I eulogized the tribe. ‘Granted,’ I replied, ‘but a more humane, gentlemanly and amiable set of epicures do not probably exist in the Pacific.’

But, notwithstanding the kind treatment we received, I was too familiar with the fickle disposition of savages not to feel anxious to withdraw from the valley, and put myself beyond the reach of that fearful death which, under all these smiling appearances, might yet menace us. But here was an obstacle in the way of doing so. It was idle for me to think of moving from the place until I should have recovered from the severe lameness that afflicted me; indeed my malady began seriously to alarm me; for, despite the herbal remedies of the natives, it continued to grow worse and worse. Their mild applications, though they soothed the pain, did not remove the disorder, and I felt convinced that without better aid I might anticipate long and acute suffering.

But how was this aid to be procured? From the surgeons of the French fleet, which probably still lay in the bay of Nukuheva, it might easily have been obtained, could I have made my case known to them. But how could that be effected?

At last, in the exigency to which I was reduced, I proposed de sonreír de su grotesco aspecto y los recuerdos que naturalmente evocaba. Mehevi, al parecer, estaba empeñado en restaurar la despensa del viejo Marheyo, temeroso quizá de que sin esa precaución a sus huéspedes no se les tratara tan bien como ellos podían desear.

Tan pronto como descendí del pai-pai se volvió a formar otra vez la procesión, situándonos en su centro, donde permanecí parte del tiempo, transportado por Kory-Kory, y de vez en cuando, para aliviarme de la carga, renqueando apoyado en una lanza. Cuando nos pusimos en marcha en ese orden, los indígenas emprendieron un recitativo musical que, con diversas alternativas, continuaron hasta que llegamos a nuestro lugar de destino.

Al avanzar por nuestro camino, bandadas de muchachitas, saliendo disparadas de los bosques cercanos, se nos vinieron a pegar, y nos acompañaron con [111] gritos de júbilo y placer, que casi ahogaban las notas profundas del recitativo. Al acercarnos al domicilio del viejo Marheyo, sus residentes salieron apresuradamente para recibirnos, y mientras que se hacían cargo de los regalos de Mehevi, el jubilado guerrero hizo los honores de su residencia con todo el calor de hospitalidad que muestra un hidalgo inglés al obsequiar a sus amigos en alguna hermosa y antigua mansión ancestral.

Capítulo XIII

INTENTO DE PROCURARNOS ASISTENCIA DESDE NUKUHEVA. PELIGROSA AVENTURA DE TOBY EN LA MONTAÑA HAPPAI. ELOCUENCIA DE KORY-KORY

Entre estas escenas de novedad, pasó una semana casi imperceptiblemente. Los indígenas, movidos por algún misterioso impulso, redoblaban sus atenciones hacia nosotros, día tras día. Su actitud con nosotros era inexplicable. Desde luego, pensaba yo, no obraríamos así si nos quisieran hacer daño. Pero ¿por qué ese exceso de amabilidad deferente, o qué equivalencia pueden imaginar que somos capaces de devolverles por ella?

Estábamos completamente desconcertados. Pero a pesar de los temores que no podía disipar, la horrible fama atribuida a estos taipis me parecía totalmente inmerecida.

—¡Bueno, son caníbales! —dijo Toby en una ocasión en que yo elogiaba a la tribu.

—Concedido —repliqué yo—, pero en todo el Pacífico no existe un grupo de epicúreos más humano, más caballeresco y más amable.

Sin embargo, aun con todo el benevolio trato que recibíamos, yo conocía de sobra la disposición tornadiza de los salvajes para no sentirme afanoso de marcharme del valle, poniéndome más allá del alcance de la terrible muerte que aún podían amenazarlos bajo todas esas apariencias sonrientes. Pero aquí había [113] un obstáculo en el modo de hacerlo. Era inútil que pensara en marcharme del lugar mientras no me hubiera recobrado de la grave invalidez que me afligía; en efecto, mi enfermedad empezaba a alarmarme seriamente, pues, a pesar de los remedios herbáceos de los indígenas, seguía empeorando cada vez más. Esas gratas aplicaciones, aunque suavizaban el dolor, no eliminaban el trastorno, y yo estaba convencido de que, sin mejor ayuda, podría esperar largo y agudo sufrimiento.

Pero ¿cómo se iba a obtener esta ayuda? Por los médicos de la flota francesa, que probablemente estaría todavía en la bahía de Nukuheva, se podría obtener fácilmente, si les hubiera hecho conocer mi caso. Pero ¿cómo podía hacerse?

Por fin, en el apremio a que estaba reducido, propuse a Toby que...
to Toby that he should endeavour to go round to Nukuheva, and if he
could not succeed in returning to the valley by water, in one of the
boats of the squadron, and taking me off, he might at least procure
me some proper medicines, and effect his return overland.

My companion listened to me in silence, and at first did
not appear to relish the idea. The truth was, he felt impatient to
escape from the place, and wished to avail himself of our present
high favour with the natives to make good our retreat, before we
should experience some sudden alteration in their behaviour. As he
could not think of leaving me in my helpless condition, he implored
me to be of good cheer; assured me that I should soon be better, and
enabled in a few days to return with him to Nukuheva.

Added to this, he could not bear the idea of again
returning to this dangerous place; and as for the expectation
of persuading the Frenchmen to detach a boat’s crew for the
purpose of rescuing me from the Typees, he looked upon it
as idle; and with arguments that I could not answer, urged
the improbability of their provoking the hostilities of the clan
by any such measure; especially, as for the purpose of quieting
its apprehensions, they had as yet refrained from making
any visit to the bay. ‘And even should they consent,’ said Toby,’they would only produce a commotion in the valley,
in which we might both be sacrificed by these ferocious is-
landers.’ This was unanswerable; but still I clung to the belief
that he might succeed in accomplishing the other part of my plan; and at
last I overcame his scruples, and he agreed to make the attempt.

As soon as we succeeded in making the natives understand
our intention, they broke out into the most vehement opposition to
the measure, and for a while I almost despaired of obtaining their
consent. At the bare thought of one of us leaving them, they mani-
...
It was about noon of this same day, a season which these people are wont to pass in sleep, that I lay in the house, surrounded by its slumbering inmates, and painfully affected by the strange silence which prevailed. All at once I thought I heard a faint shout, as if proceeding from some persons in the depth of the grove which extended in front of our habitation.

The sounds grew louder and nearer, and gradually the whole valley rang with wild outcries. The sleepers around me started to their feet in alarm, and hurried outside to discover the cause of the commotion. Kory-Kory, who had been the first to spring up, soon returned almost breathless, and nearly frantic with the excitement under which he seemed to be labouring. All that I could understand from him was that some accident had happened to Toby. Apprehensive of some dreadful calamity, I rushed out of the house, and caught sight of a tumultuous crowd, who, with shrieks and lamentations, were just emerging from the grove bearing in their arms some object, the sight of which produced all this transport of sorrow. As they drew near, the men redoubled their cries, while the girls, tossing their bare arms in the air, exclaimed plaintively, ‘Asha! aha! Toby mukee moe!’—Aha! alas! Toby is killed!

In a moment the crowd opened, and disclosed the apparently lifeless body of my companion home between two men, the head hanging heavily against the breast of the foremost. The whole face, neck, back, and bosom were covered with blood, which still trickled slowly from a wound behind the temple. In the midst of the greatest uproar and confusion the body was carried into the house and laid on a mat. Waving the natives off to give room and air, I bent eagerly over Toby, and, laying my hand upon the breast, ascertained that the heart still beat. Overjoyed upon the breast, ascertained that the heart still beat. Overjoyed that still—closed them again without speaking. Kory-Kory, who had been the first to open the way, and bidding me farewell, hastily descended the mountain.

In a few moments Toby revived, and opening his eyes for a second—closed them again without speaking. Kory-Kory, who had been kneeling beside me, now chafed his limbs gently with the palms of his hands, while a young girl at his head kept fanning him, and I still continued to moisten his lips and brow. Soon my poor comrade showed signs of animation, and I succeeded in making him swallow from a cocoanut shell a few mouthfuls of water.

Old Tinor now appeared, holding in her hand some simples she had gathered, the juice of which she by signs besought me to squeeze into the wound. Having done so, I thought it best to leave Toby undisturbed until he should have had time to rally his faculties. Several times he opened his lips, but faint for his safety I enjoined silence. In the course of two or three hours, however, he sat up, and was sufficiently recovered to tell me what had occurred.

‘After leaving the house with Marheyo,’ said Toby, ‘we struck across the valley, and ascended the opposite heights. Just beyond them, my guide informed me, lay the valley of Haparr, while along their summits, and skirting the head of the vale, was my route to Nukuheva. After mounting a little way up the elevation my guide paused, and gave me to understand that he could not accompany me any farther, and by various signs intimated that he was afraid to approach any nearer the territories of the enemies of his tribe. He however pointed out my path, which now lay clearly before me, and bidding me farewell, hastily descended the mountain.

way.

—Después de salir de casa con Marheyo—dijo Toby—, cruzamos el valle, y subimos a las alturas de en frente. Detrás mismo de ellas, según me informó mi guía, está el valle de Haparr, mientras que mi camino hacia Nukuheva era a lo [116] largo de sus cimas y bordeando el extremo del valle. Después de subir un poco por la elevación, mi guía se detuvo, me dio a entender que no podía seguir acompañándome, y por diversos signos me indicó que tenía miedo de acercarse más a los territorios de los enemigos de su tribu. Sin embargo, me señaló el camino, que entonces se extendía claramente ante mí, y despidiéndome, bajó apresurado por la montaña.
acclivity

Anders, who must have just come out of Happar valley, standing in the path ahead of me. They were each armed with a heavy spear, and one from his appearance I took to be a chief. They sung out something, I could not understand what, and beckoned me to come on.

Without the least hesitation I advanced towards them, and had approached within about a yard of the foremost, when, pointing angrily into the Typee valley, and uttering some savage exclamation, he wheeled round his weapon like lightning, and struck me in a moment to the ground. The blow inflicted this wound, and took away my senses. As soon as I came to myself, I perceived the three islanders standing a little distance off, and apparently engaged in some violent altercation respecting me.

My first impulse was to run for it; but, in endeavouring to rise, I fell back, and rolled down a little grassy precipice. The shock seemed to rally my faculties; so, starting to my feet, I fell down the path I had just ascended. I had no need to look behind me, for, from the yells I heard, I knew that my enemies were in full pursuit. Urged on by their fearful outcries, and heedless of the injury I had received—though the blood flowing from the wound trickled over into my eyes and almost blinded me—I rushed down the mountain side with the speed of the wind. In a short time I had descended nearly a third of the distance, and the savages had ceased their cries, when suddenly a terrific howl burst upon my ear, and at the same moment a heavy javelin darted past me as I fell, and stuck quivering in a tree close to me. Another yell followed, and a second spear and a third shot through the air within a few feet of my body, both of them piercing the ground obliquely in advance of me. The fellows gave a roar of rage and disappointment; but they were afraid, I suppose, of coming down further into the Typee valley, and so abandoned the chase. I saw them recover their weapons and turn back; and I continued my descent as fast as I could.

What could have caused this ferocious attack on the part of these Happars I could not imagine, unless it were that they had seen me ascending the mountain with Marheyo, and that the mere fact of coming from the Typee valley was sufficient to provoke them.

As long as I was in danger I scarcely felt the wound I had received; but when the chase was over I began to suffer from it. I had lost my hat in the flight, and the run scorched my bare head. I felt faint and giddy; but, fearful of falling to the ground beyond the reach of assistance, I staggered on as well as I could, and at last gained the level of the valley, and then down I sank; and I knew nothing more until I found myself lying upon these mats, and you stooping over me with the calabash of water.

Such was Toby’s account of this sad affair. I afterwards learned that, fortunately, he had fallen close to a spot where the natives go for fuel. A party of them caught sight of him as he fell, and sounding the alarm, had lifted him up; and, after ineffectually endeavouring to restore him at the brook, had hurried forward with him to the house.

This incident threw a dark cloud over our prospects. It reminded us that we were hemmed in by hostile tribes, whose territories we could not hope to pass, on our route to Nukuheva, without encountering the effects of their savage resentment. There appeared to be no avenue opened to our escape but the sea, which washed the lower extremities of the vale.

Sin la menor vacilación, avanzé hacia ellos, y me había acercado a una yarda del de delante, cuando éste, señalando iracundo al valle de Taipi, y lanzando una exclamación salvaje, hizo girar el arma como un relámpago y me derribó al suelo en un momento. El golpe me produjo esta herida, y me dejó sin sentido. Tan pronto como volví en mí, percibi que los tres isleños estaban a cierta distancia, al parecer ocupados en un violente altercado sobre mí.

Mi primer impulso fue salir corriendo, pero, al intentar levantarme, me desplomé hacia atrás, y cay rolando por un pequeño precipicio con hierba. El golpe pareció avivar mis facultades, de modo que, poniéndome de pie, hui bajando por el camino que acababa de ascender. No tenía necesidad de mirar atrás, pues, por los aullidos que oía, sabía que mis enemigos se habían lanzado en mi persecución. Apretado por sus terribles gritos, y sin hacer caso del daño que había recibido, aunque la sangre que manaba de la herida me goteara por los ojos y casi me cegaba— me precipité por la ladera abajo con la velocidad del viento. En poco tiempo había bajado casi la tercera parte de la distancia, y los salvajes habían cesado en sus gritos, cuando, de repente, un salvaje aullido me hirió el oído, y en el mismo instante una pesada jabalina pasó disparada, adelantándome en mi huida, y se clavó vibrando en un tronco cercano. Otro aullido siguió, y otra jabalina y otro tercer disparo por el aire, a pocos pies de mi cuerpo, en ambos casos clavándose oblicuamente en el suelo por delante de mí. Los hombres lanzaron un rugido de rabia y de decepción, pero supongo que todos habían descubierto que el de delante era mi enemigo. Afortunadamente, sin embargo, se retiraron, y lo que más temía, no lo supe más hasta que me encontré tendido en estas esteras, y te vi agachado sobre mí con la calabaza de agua.

Mientras estuve en peligro, apenas noté la herida que había recibido, pero cuando terminó la persecución empecé a sufrirla. Había perdido el sombrero en la huida, y el sol me abrasaba la cabeza descubierta. Me sentía débil y aturdido, pero, temiendo caer al suelo, estaba seguro de alcance de toda ayuda, avanzé tambaleándome como pude, y por fin alcancé el nivel del valle, desplomándome entonces; y no supe más hasta que me encontré tendido en estas esteras, y te vi agachado sobre mí con la calabaza de agua.

Tal fue el relato de Toby sobre este triste asunto. Después supo que, afortunadamente, había caído cerca de un lugar donde los indígenas a buscar combustible. Un grupo de ellos me observó al caer, y dando la alarma, me levantó; y, tras de intentar ineffectivamente hacerle volver en sí en el arroyo, se apresuraron con él a casa.

El incidente ponía una sombra nube sobre nuestras perspectivas. Nos recordaba que estabamos cercados por tribus hostiles, cuyos territorios no podíamos esperar pasar, de camino a Nukuheva, sin afrontar los efectos de su salvaje animosidad. No parecía quedar otro camino abierto a nuestra escapatoria sino el mar, que bañaba la extremidad inferior del valle.
Our Typee friends availed themselves of the recent disas-
ter of Toby to exhort us to a due appreciation of the blessings we
enjoyed among them, contrasting their own generous reception of
us with the animosity of their neighbours. They likewise dwelt upon
the cannibal propensities of the Happars, a subject which they were
perfectly aware could not fail to alarm us; while at the same time
they earnestly disclaimed all participation in so horrid a custom.
Nor did they omit to call upon us to admire the natural loveliness
of their own abode, and the lavish abundance with which it produced
all manner of luxuriant fruits; exalting it in this particular above
any of the surrounding valleys.

Kory-Kory seemed to experience so heartfelt a desire to in-
fuse into our minds proper views on these subjects, that, assisted in
his endeavours by the little knowledge of the language we had ac-
quired, he actually made us comprehend a considerable part of
what he said. To facilitate our correct apprehension of his meaning, he at
first condensed his ideas into the smallest possible compass.

‘Happar keeekoon nuee,’ he exclaimed, ‘nuee, nuee, ki ki
kannaka!—ah! owle mortarkee!’ which signifies, ‘Terrific fellows
those Happars!—devour an amazing quantity of men!—ah, shock-
ing bad!’ Thus far he explained himself by a variety of gestures, dur-
ing the performance of which he would dart out of the house, and
point abhorrently towards the Happar valley; running in to us again
with a rapidity that showed he was fearful he would lose one part of
his meaning before he could complete the other; and continuing his
illustrations by seizing the fleshy part of my arm in his teeth, intimat-
ing by the operation that the people who lived over in that direction
would like nothing better than to treat me in that manner.

Having assured himself that we were fully enlightened on
this point, he proceeded to another branch of his subject. ‘Ah! Typee
mortarkee!—devour an amazing quantity of men!—ah, shocking!
bad!’ Thus far he explained himself by a variety of gestures, dur-
ing the performance of which he would dart out of the house, and
point abhorrently towards the Happar valley; running in to us again
with a rapidity that showed he was fearful he would lose one part of
his meaning before he could complete the other; and continuing his
illustrations by seizing the fleshy part of my arm in his teeth, intimat-
ing by the operation that the people who lived over in that direction
would like nothing better than to treat me in that manner.

As he continued his harangue, however, Kory-Kory, in
emulating the style of the more polished orators, began to launch out rather
diffusely into other branches of his subject, enlarging probably upon
the moral reflections it suggested; and proceeded in such a strain of
unintelligible and stunning gibberish, that he actually gave me the
headache for the rest of the day.

CHAPTER XIV

A GREAT EVENT HAPPENS IN THE VALLEY—THE ISLAND
TELEGRAPH—SOMETHING BEFALLS TOBY—FAWAY
DISPLAYS A TENDER HEART—MELANCHOLY REFL-
EC TIONS—MYSTERIOUS CONDUCT OF THE ISLANDERS—
DEVO TION OF KORY-KORY—A RURAL COUCH—A
LUXURY—KORY-KORY STRIKES A LIGHT A LA TYPEE

In the course of a few days Toby had recovered from the
effects of his adventure with the Happar warriors; the wound
on his head rapidly healing under the vegetable treatment of
the good Tinor. Less fortunate than my companion however, I
still continued to languish under a complaint, the origin and
nature of which were still a mystery. Cut off as I was from all

UN GRAN ACONTECIMIENTO OCURRE EN EL VALLE. EL
TELÉGRAFO DE LA ISLA. ALGO LE PASA A TOBY. FAWAY
MUESTRA UN CORAZÓN TIerno. REFLEXIONES MELANCó-
LICAS. CONDUCTA MISTERIOSA DE LOS ISLEÑOS. DEVO-
CION DE KORY-KORY. UNA YACIJA RURAL. UN LUJO. KORY-
KORY ENCIENDE UNA LUZ A LA MANERA DE TAIP

En el transcurso de pocos días, Toby se había recuperado de
los efectos de la aventura con los guerreros Happars; la herida en
la cabeza se le curó rápidamente con el tratamiento vegetal de la
buena Tinor. Yo, menos afortunado que mi compañero, sin embargo,
continuaba sufriendo una dolencia cuyo origen y naturaleza
seguían siendo para mí un misterio. Aislado como estaba de
intercourse with the civilized world, and feeling the inefficacy of anything the natives could do to relieve me; knowing, too, that so long as I remained in my present condition, it would be impossible for me to leave the valley, whatever opportunity might present itself; and apprehensive that ere long we might be exposed to some caprice on the part of the islanders, I now gave up all hopes of recovery, and became a prey to the most gloomy thoughts. A deep dejection fell upon me, which neither the friendly remonstrances of my companion, the devoted attentions of Kory-Kory nor all the soothing influences of Fayaway could remove.

One morning as I lay on the mats in the house, plunged in melancholy reverie, and regardless of everything around me, Toby, who had left me about an hour, returned in haste, and with great glee told me to cheer up and be of good heart; for he believed, from what was going on among the natives, that there were boats approaching the bay.

These tidings operated upon me like magic. The hour of our deliverance was at hand, and starting up, I was soon convinced that something unusual was about to occur. The word ‘botee! botee!’ was vociferated in all directions; and shouts were heard in the distance, at first feebly and faintly; but growing louder and nearer at each successive repetition, until they were caught up by a fellow in a cocosnut tree a few yards off; who sounding them in turn, they were reiterated from a neighbouring grove, and so died away gradually from point to point, as the intelligence penetrated into the farthest recess of the valley. This was the vocal telegraph of the islanders; by means of which condensed items of information could be carried in a very few minutes from the sea to their remotest habitations, a distance of at least eight or nine miles. On the present occasion it was in active operation; one piece of information following another with inconceivable rapidity.

The greatest commotion now appeared to prevail. At every fresh item of intelligence the natives betrayed the liveliest interest, and redoubled the energy with which they employed themselves in collecting fruit to sell to the expected visitors. Some were tearing off the husks from cocoanuts; some perched in the trees were throwing down bread-fruit to their companions, who gathered them into leafen baskets in which to carry the fruit.

There were other matters too going on at the same time. Here you would see a stout warrior polishing his spear with a bit of tappa, or adjusting the folds of the girdle about his waist; and there you might despy a young damsels decorating herself with flowers, as if having in her eye some maidenly conquest; while, as in all cases of hurry and confusion in every part of the world, a number of individuals kept hurrying to and fro, with amazing vigour and perseverance, doing nothing themselves, and hindering others.

Never before had we seen the islanders in such a state of agitation and excitement; and the scene furnished abundant evidence of the fact—that it was only at long intervals any such events occur.

When I thought of the length of time that might intervene before a similar chance of escape would be presented, I bitterly lamented that I had not the power of availing myself effectually of the present opportunity.

From all that we could gather, it appeared that the natives were fearful of arriving too late upon the beach, unless they made extraordinary exertions. Sick and lame as I was, I would have started with Toby at once, had not Kory-Kory not only refused to carry me, but manifested the most invincible repugnance to our leaving the neighbourhood of the house. The rest of the savages were equally opposed to our wishes, and seemed grieved and astonished at the earnestness of my solicitations. I clearly perceived that while my attendant avoided all appearance of constraining my movements, toda comunicación con el mundo civilizado, sintiendo la inutilidad de todo lo que pudieran hacer los indígenas para aliviarme; sabiendo además que mientras permaneciera en la situación presente me sería imposible dejar el valle, cualquiera que fuera la oportunidad que se presentara, y temiendo que no tardaríamos en quedar expuestos a algún capricho por parte de los isleños, renuncié entonces a toda esperanza de recobrarle, y fui presa de los más sombríos pensamientos. Cayó sobre mí un profundo abatimiento, que no pudieron disipar ni las amistosas protestas de mi compañero, ni las de votas atenciones de Kory-Kory, ni todas las influencias suavizadoras de Fayaway. [120]

Una mañana en que yo estaba tendido en la esterillas, en casa, sumergido en melancólica meditación y sin darme cuenta de nada de lo que me rodeaba, Toby, que me había dejado hacia una hora, volvió apresurado y con gran júbilo me dijo que me animara y tuviera buen ánimo, pues creía, por lo que pasaba entre los indígenas, que había unos botes acercándose a la bahía.

Eras noticias actuaron en mí como algo mágico. La hora de nuestra liberación estaba cerca, y poniéndome en pie de un salto, pronto me convení de que iba a pasar algo insólito. La palabra ¡boli, boli! se vociferaba en todas direcciones, y se oían gritos a distancia, al principio débiles y flojos, pero haciéndose más sonoros y cercanos a cada repetición, hasta que fueron captados por un muchacho subido a un hocote, a pocas yardas, quien los volvió a lanzar a su vez, siendo repetidos desde un bosque cercano, y exiguándose poco a poco de un punto a otro, al penetrar la noticia en las más profundas interioridades del valle. Tal era el telégrafo vocal de los isleños, por cuyo medio se podían transmitir informaciones resumidas, en muy pocos minutos, desde el mar hasta sus habitantes más remotos, a distancia de ocho o nueve millas por lo menos. En la ocasión presente, fue una operación de gran actividad: una noticia sucedía a la otra con rapidez inconcebible.

La mayor connoción pareció dominar entonces. A cada nueva noticia, los indígenas mostraban el más vivo interés, y redoblaban la energía con lo que se dedicaban a recoger fruta para vender a los visitantes esperados. Unos arrancaban las cáscaras de unos cocos, otros se encaramaban a los árboles a tirar frutos del árbol del pan a sus compañeros, que los reunían en montones al caer; mientras, otros movían los dedos rápidamente tejiendo cestos de hojas con que llevar la fruta.

Había también otros asuntos en marcha al mismo tiempo. Acá se veía un resistente guerrero puliendo la lanza con un trozo de tappa vieja, o ajustándose a la cintura los pliegues del taparrabos; allá se observaba a una joven damisela adomándose con flores, como si llevara miras de alguna conquista doncellil, mientras que, como en todos los casos de prisa y confusión en cualquier parte del mundo, muchos indíviduos no dejaban de correr de un lado para otro, con sorprendente vigor y perseverancia, sin hacer nada y estorbando a los demás.

Nunca jamás habíamos visto a los isleños en tal estado de agitación y excitación, y la escena proporcionaba abundante evidencia del hecho de que tales excitación acontecimientos ocurrian sólo de tarde en tarde. [121]

Cuando pensé en la duración de tiempo que podría transcurrir antes que volviera a presentarse semejante ocasión de escapatoria, lamenté amargamente no tener la capacidad de aprovecharme eficazmente de la presente oportunidad.

Por todo lo que pudimos inferir, resultaba que los indígenas tenían miedo de llegar demasiado tarde a la playa, a no ser que se esforzaran extraordinariamente. Enfermo e inválido como yo estaba, me habría puesto en marcha con Toby en seguida, de no ser porque Kory-Kory no sólo rehusó llevarme, sino que manifestó la más invencible repugnancia a que dejáramos las proximidades de la casa. El resto de los salvajes se opusieron igualmente a nuestros deseos, y parecieron asombrados y ofendidos ante el empeño de mis solicitudes. Percibi claramente que, aunque mi criado evi-
he was nevertheless determined to thwart my wishes. He seemed to me on this particular occasion, as well as often afterwards, to be executing the orders of some other person with regard to me, though at the same time feeling towards me the most lively affection.

Toby, who had made up his mind to accompany the islanders if possible, as soon as they were in readiness to depart, and who for that reason had refrained from showing the same anxiety that I had done, now represented to me that it was idle for me to entertain the hope of reaching the beach in time to profit by any opportunity that might then be presented.

‘Do you not see,’ said he, ‘the savages themselves are fearful of being too late, and I should hurry forward myself at once did I not think that if I showed too much eagerness I should destroy all our hopes of reaping any benefit from this fortunate event. If you will only endeavour to appear tranquil or unconcerned, you will quiet their suspicions, and I have no doubt they will then let me go with them to the beach, supposing that I merely go out of curiosity. Should I succeed in getting down to the boats, I will make known the condition in which I have left you, and measures may then be taken to secure our escape.’

In the expediency of this I could not but acquiesce; and as the natives had now completed their preparations, I watched with the liveliest interest the reception that Toby’s application might meet with. As soon as they understood from my companion that I intended to remain, they appeared to make no objection to his proposition, and even hailed it with pleasure. Their singular conduct on this occasion not a little puzzled me at the time, and imparted to subsequent events an additional mystery.

The islanders were now to be seen hurrying along the path which led to the sea. I shook Toby warmly by the hand, and gave him my Payta hat to shield his wounded head from the sun, as with a determined look he moved forward. He cordially returned the pressure of my hand, and solemnly promising to return as soon as the boats should leave the shore, sprang from my side, and the next minute disappeared in a turn of the grove.

In spite of the unpleasant reflections that crowded upon my mind, I could not but be entertained by the novel and animated sight which by now met my view. One after another the natives came hurrying along the path, which led to and fro with the rocking gait at which they proceeded. Here ran one, who, after ineffectually endeavouring to appear tranquil or unconcerned, you will quiet their suspicions, and I have no doubt they will then let me go with them to the beach, supposing that I merely go out of curiosity. Should I succeed in getting down to the boats, I will make known the condition in which I have left you, and measures may then be taken to secure our escape.

In a short time the last straggler was seen hurrying on his way, and the faint shouts of those in advance died insensibly upon the ear. Our part of the valley now appeared nearly deserted by its inhabitants, Kory-Kory, his aged father, and a few decrepit old people, being all that were left.

Towards sunset the islanders in small parties began to return from the beach, and among them, as they drew near to the house, I sought to descry the form of my companion. But one after another they passed the dwelling, and I caught no glimpse of him. Supposing, however, that he

tabla toda apariencia de obligarme, estaba sin embargo decidido a frustrar mi deseo. Me pareció, en esta ocasión como en muchas otras posteriores, que ejecutaba las órdenes de alguna otra persona respecto a mí, aunque al mismo tiempo sentía por mí el más vivo afecto.

Toby, que había decidido acompañar a los isleños si era posible, tan pronto como estuvieran preparados, y que por esa razón había procurado no mostrar la misma ansiedad que yo, me hizo ver entonces que era oscioso que yo abrigara la esperanza de alcanzar la playa a tiempo de aprovechar cualquier oportunidad que se presentara.

—¿No ves? —dijo—: los mismos salvajes tienen miedo de llegar tarde, y yo me echaría a correr allá en seguida si no pensara que si miuesto demasiado empeñaría destruir todas nuestras esperanzas de obtener algún beneficio de este suceso afortunado. Basta que intentes parecer tranquilo o indiferente, y aquí-tarás sus sospechas; y no dudo que me dejarán ir con ellos a la playa, suponiendo que voy por mera curiosidad. Si logro llegar hasta los botes, haré saber en qué situación te he dejado, y entonces se podrán tomar medidas para lograr tu escatoparia.

No pude menos de asentir a la oportunidad de esto, y como los indígenas habían completado ya sus preparativos, observé con el más vivo interés el recibimiento que hallaría el intento de Toby. Tan pronto como supieron por mi compañero que yo me había decidido a quedarme, parecieron no objetar a su propuesta, e incluso la recibieron con placer. Su conducta singular en esta ocasión no dejó de intrigarme entonces, y comunicó mayor misterio a los acontecimientos siguientes.

Entonces se veía a los isleños apresurándose por el camino que llevaba al mar. Estrechó calídateamente la mano a Toby, y le dijo mi sombrero de Payta para [122] defender del sol su cabeza herida, ya que él había perdido el suyo. Me devolvió cordialmente el apretón de mano, y me prometió solemnemente volver tan pronto como los botes se alejaran de la orilla; se apartó de mí un salto, y un momento después desapareció en un recodo en el bosque.

A pesar de las desagradables reflexiones que se agolpaban en mi mente, no pude menos de complacerme en el nuevo y animado espectáculo que se presentaba ante mi vista. Uno tras otro, los indígenas se agolpaban por el estrecho sendero, cargados con todas las variedades de fruta. Acá, se veía a uno que, después de intentar sin éxito convenecer a un malhumorado puerco para que se dejara guiar con unas ruedas, se veía obligado al fin a tomar en brazos al perverso animal, y llevárselo cargado de fuerza contra su ocho desmunto y gruñendo sin interrupción. Allí iban dos a quienes, a cierta distancia, se habría tomado por los espías hebreos que volvieron a Moisés con el espléndido racimo de uvas. Uno trotaba ante otro a la distancia de un par de yardas, mientras que entre ellos, de un palo apoyado en sus hombros, colgaba una gran piña de plátanos, que se mecía de un lado a otro con el paso oscilante que avanzaban. Allí corría otro, sudando de esfuerzo, y llevando por delante una gran cantidad de cocos, pero, con miedo de llegar tarde, no se fijaba en la fruta que se le caía del cesto, y parecía sólo empeñado en llegar a su destino, sin preocuparse de cuántos de sus cocos le siguieran acompañando.

En poco tiempo, se vio al último rezagado apresurándose por el camino, y los débiles gritos de los que iban en vanguardia se extinguieron insensiblemente en el oído. Nuestra parte del valle pareció entonces casi abandonada por sus habitantes, ya que sólo quedaban Kory-Kory, su anciano padre, y unos pocos viejos decrepitos.

Hacia el ocaso, empezaron a volver de la playa los isleños en grupos, y entre ellos, al acercarse a la casa, traté de observar la figura de mi compañero. Pero uno tras otro pasaban ante la vivienda y no observé atisbo de él. Suponiendo, sin embargo, que pronto apa-
would soon appear with some of the members of the household, I quieted my apprehensions, and waited patiently to see him advancing in company with the beautiful Fayaway. At last, I perceived Tinor coming forward, followed by the girls and young men who usually resided in the house of Marheyo; but with them came not my comrade, and, filled with a thousand alarms, I eagerly sought to discover the cause of his delay.

My earnest questions appeared to embarrass the natives greatly. All their accounts were contradictory: one giving me to understand that Toby would be with me in a very short time; another that he did not know where he was; while a third, violently inveighing, against him, assured me that he had stolen away, and would never come back. It appeared to me, at the time, that in making these various statements they endeavoured to conceal from me some terrible disaster, lest the knowledge of it should overpower me.

Fearful lest some fatal calamity had overtaken him, I sought out young Fayaway, and endeavoured to learn from her, if possible, the truth.

This gentle being had early attracted my regard, not only from her extraordinary beauty, but from the attractive cast of her countenance, singularly expressive of intelligence and humanity. Of all the natives she alone seemed to appreciate the effect which the peculiarity of the circumstances in which we were placed had produced upon the minds of my companion and myself. In addressing me—especially when I lay reclining upon the mats suffering from pain—there was a tenderness in her manner which it was impossible to misunderstand or resist. Whenever she entered the house, the expression of her face indicated the liveliest sympathy for me; and moving towards the place where I lay, with one arm slightly elevated in a gesture of pity, and her large glistening eyes gazing intently into mine, she would murmur plaintively, ‘Awha! awha! Tommo,’ and seat herself mournfully beside me.

Her manner convinced me that she deeply compassed my situation, as being removed from my country and friends, and placed beyond the reach of all relief. Indeed, at times I was almost led to believe that her mind was swayed by gentle impulses hardly to be anticipated from one in her condition; that she appeared to be conscious there were ties rudely severed, which had once bound us to our homes; that there were sisters and brothers anxiously looking for our return, who were, perhaps, never more to behold us.

In this amiable light did Fayaway appear to my eyes; and repos- ing full confidence in her candour and intelligence, I now had recourse to her, in the midst of my alarm, with regard to my companion.

My questions evidently distressed her. She looked round from one to another of the bystanders, as if hardly knowing what answer to give me. At last, yielding to my importunities, she overcame her scruples, and gave me to understand that Toby had gone away with the boats which had visited the bay, but had promised to return at the expiration of three days. At first I accused him of perfidiously deserting me; but as I grew more composed, I upbraided myself for imputing so cowardly an action to him, and tranquillized myself with the belief that he had availed himself, of the opportunity to go round to Nukuheva, in order to make some arrangement by which I could be removed from the valley. At any rate, thought I, he will return with the medicines I require, and then, as soon as I recover, there will be no difficulty in the way of our departure.

Consoling myself with these reflections, I lay down that night in a happier frame of mind than I had done for some time. The next day passed without any allusion to Toby on the part of the natives, who seemed desirous of avoiding all reference to the subject. This raised some apprehensions in my breast; but when night came, I congratulated myself that the second day had now gone by, recería con alguno de los que vivían en la casa, tranquillé mis temores, y esperé pacientemente verle avanzar en compañía de la bella Fayaway. Al fin, al ver que venía Tinor, seguida de las muchachas y los jóvenes que solían vivir en la casa de Marheyo, pero sin mi compañero, me llené de mil alarmas y traté ansiosamente de descubrir la causa de su tardanza.

Temeroso de que le hubiera ocurrido alguna desgracia fatal a Toby, busqué a la joven Fayaway, y traté de saber de ella la verdad, si era posible.

Este amable ser había atraído desde muy pronto mi estimación, no sólo por su extraordinaria belleza, sino por el atractivo aire de su rostro, singularmente expresivo de inteligencia y humanidad. De todos los indígenas, sólo ella parecía apreciar el efecto que la peculiaridad de las circunstancias en que nos encontrábamos había producido en mí ánimo y en el de mi compañero. Al dirigirse a mí, sobre todo cuando estaba tendido en las esteras sufriendo dolores, había una ternura en sus maneras que era imposible malentender o resistir. Siempre que entraba en la casa, la expresión de su rostro indicaba la más viva simpatía por mí, y acercándose a donde yo estaba tendido, con un brazo ligeramente elevado en gesto de compasión, y con sus grandes ojos resplandecientes mirando atentamente a los míos, murmuraba plácidamente:

—¡Aujá, aujá, Tommo! —y se sentaba lúgubremente a mi lado.

Sus maneras me convencieron de que compadecía profundamente mi situación, por estar apartado de mi país y de los míos, más allá del alcance de todo alivio. Incluso, a veces casi me sentía llevado a creer que su ánimo era movido por amables impulsos difíciles de esperar en nadie de su condición: que parecía darse cuenta de que había vínculos rudamente cortados, que nos habían ligado antes a nuestras patrias; que había hermanas y hermanos que aguardaban ansiosamente nuestro regreso, y que quizá no volverían a vernos nunca.

Bajo esa amable luz aparecía a mis ojos, y yo, poniendo plena confianza en su franqueza e inteligencia, recurrí entonces a ella, en medio de mi alma, con respecto a mi compañero.

Consolándome con esas reflexiones, me acosté esa noche en un estado de ánimo más contento que desde hacía bastante tiempo. El día siguiente pasó sin ninguna alusión a Toby por parte de los indígenas, que parecían deseosos de evitar toda referencia al tema. Esto despertó algún temor en mí ánimo, pero cuando llegó la noche, me felicité porque había pasado ya el segundo día, y porque al otro
and that on the morrow Toby would again be with me. But the morrow came and went, and my companion did not appear. Ah! thought I, he reckons three days from the morning of his departure,—to-morrow he will arrive. But that weary day also closed upon me, without his return. Even yet I would not despair; I thought that something detained him—that he was waiting for the sailing of a boat, at Nukuheva, and that in a day or two at farthest I should see him again. But day after day of renewed disappointment passed by; at last hope deserted me, and I fell a victim to despair.

Yes; thought I, gloomily, he has secured his own escape, and cares not what calamity may befall his unfortunate comrade. Fool that I was, to suppose that any one would willingly encounter the perils of this valley, after having once got beyond its limits! He has gone, and has left to me to combat alone all the dangers by which I am surrounded. Thus would I sometimes seek to derive a desperate consolation from dwelling upon the perfidy of Toby: whilst at other times I sunk under the bitter remorse which I felt as having by my own imprudence brought upon myself the fate which I was sure awaited me.

The conduct of the islanders appeared inexplicable. All reference to my lost comrade was carefully evaded, and if at any time they were forced to make some reply to my frequent inquiries on the subject, they would uniformly denounce him as an ungrateful runaway, who had deserted his friend, and taken himself off to that vile and detestable place Nukuheva.

But whatever might have been his fate, now that he was gone the natives multiplied their acts of kindness and attention towards myself, treating me with a degree of deference which could hardly have been surpassed had I been some celestial visitant. Kory-Kory never for one moment left my side, unless it were to execute my wishes. The faithful fellow, twice every day, in the cool of the morning and in the evening, insisted upon carrying me to the stream, and bathing me in its refreshing water.

Frequently in the afternoon he would carry me to a particular part of the stream, where the beauty of the scene produced a soothing influence upon my mind. At this place the waters flowed between grassy banks, planted with enormous bread-fruit trees, whose vast branches interlacing overhead, formed a leafy canopy; near the stream were several smooth black rocks. One of these, projecting several feet above the surface of the water, had upon its summit a shallow cavity, which, filled with freshly-gathered leaves, formed a delightful couch.

Here I often lay for hours, covered with a gauze-like veil of tappa, while Fayaway, seated beside me, and holding in her hand a fan woven from the leaflets of a young cocoanut bough, brushed aside the insects that occasionally lighted on my face, and Kory-Kory, with a view of chasing away my melancholy, performed a thousand antics in the water before us.

As my eye wandered along this romantic stream, it would fall upon the half-immersed figure of a beautiful girl, standing in the transparent water, and catching in a little net a species of diminutive shell-fish, of which these people are extraordinarily fond. Sometimes a chattering group would be seated upon the edge of a
low rock in the midst of the brook, busily engaged in thinning and polishing the shells of cocoanuts, by rubbing them briskly with a small stone in the water, an operation which soon converts them into a light and elegant drinking vessel, somewhat resembling goblets made of tortoise shell.

But the tranquilizing influence of beautiful scenery, and the exhibition of human life under so novel and charming an aspect were not my only sources of consolation.

Every evening the girls of the house gathered about me on the mats, and after chasing away Kory-Kory from my side—who nevertheless, retired only to a little distance and watched their proceedings with the most jealous attention—would anoint my whole body with a fragrant oil, squeezed from a yellow root, previously pounded between a couple of stones, and which in their language is denominated ‘aka’. And most refreshing and agreeable are the juices of the ‘aka’, when applied to ones, limbs by the soft palms of sweet nymphs, whose bright eyes are beaming upon you with kindness; and I used to hail with delight the daily recurrence of this luxurious operation, in which I forgot all my troubles, and buried for the time every feeling of sorrow.

Sometimes in the cool of the evening my devoted servitor would lead me out upon the pi-pi in front of the house, and seating me near its edge, protect my body from the annoyance of the insects which occasionally hovered in the air, by wrapping me round with a large roll of tappa. He then bustled about, and employed himself at least twenty minutes in adjusting everything to secure my personal comfort.

Having perfected his arrangements, he would get my pipe, and, lighting it, would hand it to me. Often he was obliged to strike a light for the occasion, and as the mode he adopted was entirely different from what I had ever seen or heard of before I will describe it.

A straight, dry, and partly decayed stick of the Hibiscus, about six feet in length, and half as many inches in diameter, with a small, bit of wood not more than a foot long, and scarcely an inch wide, is as invariably to be met with in every house in Typee as a box of lucifer matches in the corner of a kitchen cupboard at home.

The islander, placing the larger stick obliquely against some object, with one end elevated at an angle of forty-five degrees, mounts astride of it like an urchin about to gallop off upon some object, with one end elevated at an angle of forty-five degrees, mounts astride of it like an urchin about to gallop off upon a cane, and then grasping the smaller one firmly in both hands, he rubs its pointed end slowly up and down the extent of a few inches on the principal stick, until at last he makes a narrow groove in the wood, with an abrupt termination at the point furthest from him, where all the dusty particles which the friction creates are accumulated in a little heap.

At first Kory-Kory goes to work quite leisurely, but gradually quickens his pace, and waxing warm in the employment, drives the perspiration starting from every pore. As he approaches the climax of his effort, he pants and gasps for breath, and with amazing rapidity, the violence of his exertions with the most jealous attention—would anoint my whole body the molluscous particles which the friction creates are accumulated in a little heap.

del arroyo, afanosamente atareado en adelgazar y pulir las esferas de unos cocos, a fuerza de frotrarlos agilmente con una piedrecita en el agua, operación que pronto los convierte en una ligera y elegante vasija para el agua, un tanto parecida a los cuencos que se hacen de carey.

Pero el influjo calmatante de la hermosa escena, y la exhibición de la vida humana bajo un aspecto tan nuevo y encantador no eran mis únicas fuentes de consuelo.

Todos los anocheceres, las muchachas de la casa se reúnan a mi alrededor en las esteras, y después de echar de mi lado a Kory-Kory—quien, sin embargo, tan sólo se retiraba a poca distancia y observaba su actividad con la más celosa atención—, unían todo mi cuerpo con un aceite fragante, exprimido de una raíz [126] amarilla, que machacaban previamente entre un par de picaras, y que en su idio
toma se llama aka. Y bien refrescante y agradable que es el jugo del aka, cuando se lo aplican a uno al cuerpo las suaves palmas de dulces ninfas, cuyos claros ojos resplandecen afectuosamente; yo solía saludar con deleite la diaria repetición de esta maravillosa práctica, en que olvidaba todas mis penas y se prolongaba por el momento todo sentimiento de tristeza.

A veces, en el frescor del atardecer, mi devoto servidor me precedía saliendo al pai-pai delante de la casa, y sentándome en su borde, protegía mi cuerpo de las molestias de los insectos que de vez en cuando revoloteaban por el aire, y entonces, agarrando el Palo más pequeño con los dos manos, frota su lado punteado, de arriba a abajo, lentamente, unas pocas pulidas, hasta que por fin hace un estrecho surco en la madera, con una terminación brusca en la punta más lejana, donde se acumulan en un montoncito todas las partículas de polvillo que crea la fricción.

El isleño, colocando el palo más grande oblicuamente contra algo objeto, y elevándolo por un extremo en un ángulo de cuarenta y cinco grados, se sube a horcachazas en él, como un niño que galopa en un bastón, y entonces, agarroando el trozo más pequeño con los dos manos, frota su lado punteado, de arriba a abajo, lentamente, unas pocas pulidas por el palo más grande, hasta que por fin hace un estrecho surco en la madera, con una terminación brusca en la punta más lejana, donde se acumulan en un montoncito todas las partículas de polvillo que crea la fricción.

Kory-Kory empieza su trabajo con mucha lentitud, pero poco a poco aviva el paso, y calentándose con el esfuerzo, empuja furiosamente el palo por el surco humeante, moviendo las manos de un lado a otro con sorprendente rapidez, y echando sudor por cada poro. Al acercarse al punto crítico de su esfuerzo, jada y se ahoga respirando, y los ojos casi se le salen de las órbitas, por la violencia del esfuerzo. Esa es la etapa crítica de la operación: todos sus esfuerzos anteriores son vanos si no es capaz de mantener la rapidez del movimiento hasta que se [127] produce la reacia chispa. De repente, se detiene y queda completamente inmóvil. Sus manos siguen agarroando el palo más pequeño, que se aprieta convulsivamente contra el extremo del surco, entre el polvillo allí acumulado, como si acabara de perforar a alguna pequeña víbora que se retorciera y luchara por escapar de su presa. Un momento después, una delicada guirnalda de humo se riza y sube en espiral por el aire, el montón de partículas de polvo refleja encendido, y Kory-
This operation appeared to me to be the most laborious species of work performed in Typee; and had I possessed a sufficient intimacy with the language to have conveyed my ideas upon the subject, I should certainly have suggested to the most influential of the natives the expediency of establishing a college of vestals to be centrally located in the valley, for the purpose of keeping alive the indispensable article of fire; so as to supersede the necessity of such a vast outlay of strength and good temper, as were usually squandered on these occasions. There might, however, be special difficulties in carrying this plan into execution.

What a striking evidence does this operation furnish of the wide difference between the extreme of savage and civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectable civilized life. A gentleman of Typee can bring up a numerous family of children and give them all a highly respectful...
From the extravagant value placed upon the article, I verily believe, that with a bushel of common Liverpool salt all the real estate in Typee might have been purchased. With a small pinch of it in one hand, and a quarter section of a bread-fruit in the other, the greatest chief in the valley would have laughed at all luxuries of a Parisian table.

The celebrity of the bread-fruit tree, and the conspicuous place it occupies in a Typee bill of fare, induces me to give at some length a general description of the tree, and the various modes in which the fruit is prepared.

The bread-fruit tree, in its glorious prime, is a grand and towering object, forming the same feature in a Marquesan landscape that the patriarchal elm does in New England scenery. The latter tree it not a little resembles in height, in the wide spread of its stalwart branches, and in its venerable and imposing aspect.

The leaves of the bread-fruit are of great size, and their edges are cut and scolloped as fantastically as those of a lady’s lace collar. As they annually tend towards decay, they almost rival in brilliant variety of their gradually changing hues the fleeting shades of the expiring dolphin. The autumnal tints of our American forests, glorious as they are, sink into nothing in comparison with this tree.

The leaf, in one particular stage, when nearly all the prismatic colours are blended on its surface, is often converted by the natives into a superb and striking head-dress. The principal fibre traversing its length being split open a convenient distance, and the elastic sides of the aperture pressed apart, the head is inserted between them, the leaf drooping on one side, with its forward half turned jauntily up on the brows, and the remaining part spreading laterally behind the ears.

The fruit somewhat resembles in magnitude and general appearance one of our citron melons of ordinary size; but, unlike the citron, it has no sectional lines drawn along the outside. Its surface is dotted all over with little conical prominences, looking not unlike the knobs, on an antiquated church door. The rind is perhaps an eighth of an inch in thickness; and denuded of this at the time when it is in the greatest perfection, the fruit presents a beautiful globe of white pulp, the whole of which may be eaten, with the exception of a slender core, which is easily removed.

The bread-fruit, however, is never used, and is indeed altogether unfit to be eaten, until submitted in one form or other to the action of fire.

The most simple manner in which this operation is performed, and I think, the best, consists in placing any number of the freshly plucked fruit, when in a particular state of greenness, among the embers of a fire, in the same way that you would roast a potato. After the lapse of ten or fifteen minutes, the green rind embrows and cracks, showing through the fissures in its sides the milk-white interior. As soon as it cools the rind drops off, and you then have the soft round pulp in its purest and most delicious state. Thus eaten, it has a mild and pleasing flavour.

Sometimes after having been roasted in the fire, the natives snatch it briskly from the embers, and permitting it to slip out of the yielding rind into a vessel of cold water, stir up the mixture, which they call ‘bo-a-sho’. I never could endure this compound, and indeed the preparation is not greatly in vogue among the more polite Typees.
There is one form, however, in which the fruit is occasionally served, that renders it a dish fit for a king. As soon as it is taken from the fire the exterior is removed, the core extracted, and the remaining part is placed in a sort of shallow stone mortar, and briskly worked with a pestle of the same substance. While one person is performing this operation, another takes a ripe coconut, and breaking it in halves, which they also do very cleverly, proceeds to grate the juicy meat into fine particles. This is done by means of a piece of mother-of-pearl shell, lashed firmly to the extreme end of a heavy stick, with its straight side accurately \textit{notched} like a saw. The stick is sometimes a grotesquely-formed limb of its tree, with three or four branches twisting from its body like so many shapeless legs, and sustaining it two or three feet from the ground.

\textit{notch} (in wood, metal) muesca; \textit{notch up} (colloq.) [\textit{cortar notch} (colloq.)] \textit{notarse top notch} de primera categoría \textit{top notch} de primera clase

The native, first placing a calabash beneath the nose, as it were, of his curious-looking log-steed, for the purpose of receiving the grated fragments as they fall, mounts astride of it as if it were a hobby-horse, and twirling the inside of his hemispheres of coconut around the sharp teeth of the mother-of-pearl shell, the pure white meat falls in snowy showers into the receptacle provided. Having obtained a quantity sufficient for his purpose, he places it in a bag made of the net-like fibrous substance attached to all coconut trees, and compressing it over the bread-fruit, which being now sufficiently pounded, is put into a wooden bowl—extracts a thick creamy milk. The delicious liquid soon bubbles round the fruit, and leaves it at last just peeping above its surface.

\textit{luscious} adj. 1 a) richly sweet in taste or smell; b) coloq. delicious. 2 (of literary style, music, etc.) over-rich in sound, imagery, or voluptuous suggestion, voluptuous, pleasurable.

This preparation is called ‘koko’, and is a most \textit{luscious} preparation it is. The horse-horse and the pestle and mortar were in great requisition during the time I remained in the house of Marheyo, and Kory-Kory had frequent occasion to show his skill in their use.

But the great staple articles of food into which the bread-fruit is converted by these natives are known respectively by the names of Amar and Poe-Poe.

At a certain season of the year, when the fruit of the hundred groves of the valley has reached its maturity, and hangs in golden spheres from every branch, the islanders assemble in harvest groups, and \textit{garner} in the abundance which surrounds them.

\textit{garner} 1 a) to gather into storage b) to depot as in \textit{garner volumes} in which he has garnered the truth of his métier labors — \textit{Refrain} Nukuperi 2 a) to acquire by effort: \textit{garner}—\textit{accumulate}, \textit{collect}

The trees are stripped of their nodding burdens, which, easily freed from the rind and core, are gathered together in capacious wooden vessels, where the pulpy fruit is soon worked by a stone pestle, vigorously applied, into a blended mass of a doughy consistency, called by the natives ‘Tutao’. This is then divided into separate parcels, which, after being made up into stout packages, enveloped in successive folds of leaves, and bound round with tongs of bark, are stored away in large receptacles hollowed in the earth, from whence they are drawn as occasion may require. In this condition the Tutao sometimes remains for years, and even is thought to improve by age. Before it is fit to be eaten, however, it has to undergo an additional process. A primitive oven is scooped in the ground, and its bottom being loosely covered with stones, a large fire is kindled within it. As soon as the requisite degree of heat is attained, the embers are removed, and the surface of the stones being covered with thick layers of leaves, one of the large packages of Tutao is deposited upon them and overspread with another layer of leaves. The whole is then quickly heaped up with earth, and forms a sloping mound.

The Tutao thus baked is called ‘Amar’; the action of the oven having converted it into an amber-coloured caky substance, a Hay, sin embargo, una forma en que se sirve a veces el fruto, y que lo hace plato digno de un rey. Tan pronto como se saca del fuego, se le quita el exterior, se le saca el núcleo, y lo que queda se pone en una especie de mortero poco profundo de piedra, macha-cándolo fuertemente con una mano de almirez de la misma materia. Mientras una persona hace esta operación, otra toma un coco maduro, y rompiéndolo por la mitad, lo que ellos saben hacer tan bien muy [131] hábilmente rallá la jugosa pulpa en particulares finas. Esto se hace por medio de un trozo de concha de madreperla, atado fuertemente al extremo de un pesado palo, y con su lado recto cuidadosamente \textit{dentado} como una sierra. Este palo es a veces una rama de árbol con grotescas formas y tres o cuatro ramas saliendo retorcidas de su cuerpo, como patas informes que lo sostienen a tres o cuatro pies del suelo.

El indígena, poniendo primero una calabaza debajo, por decirlo así, de la nariz de su curioso corcel de palo, con el propósito de recibir los fragmentos rallados al caer, se sube a horcajadas en él como si fuera un caballo de juguete, y al hacer girar el interior de uno de sus hemisferios de coco en torno a los agudos dientes de la concha madreperla, la pura y blanca pulpa cae en niples chaparrones dentro del receptáculo preparado. Obtenida una cantidad suficiente para su propósito, la pone en una bolsa hecha de una sustancia fibrosa, como una red, que está pegada a todos los cocoteros, y apretándola dentro del fruto del árbol del pan —que, ahora, suficientemente machacado, se ha puesto en un cuenco de madera—, extrae una densa leche cremosa. El delicioso liquido pronto burbujea en torno al fruto, y lo deja por fin asomando a ras de su superficie.

Este preparado se llama \textit{koku}, y es realmente \textit{delicioso}. El cabillo de madera, y el mortero con su mano, anduvieron en gran uso durante el tiempo que permaneci en casa de Marheyo, y Kory-Kory tuvo ocasión frecuente de mostrar su habilidad en su uso.

Pero los grandes artículos básicos de alimentación en que convierten los indígenas el fruto del árbol del pan, se conocen por los respectivos nombres de \textit{amar} y \textit{poi-poi}.

En ciertas épocas del año, cuando el fruto de cientos de bosquichos del valle ha alcanzado la madurez y cuelga de cada rama en doradas esferas, los isleños se reúnen en grupos de cosechadores, y \textit{almacenan} la abundancia que les rodea.

Los árboles son despojados de sus cargas oscilantes, que fácilmente liberadas de su corteza y núcleo se reúnen en amplias vasijas de madera, donde el pulposo fruto es tratado pronto por una mano de almirez de piedra, vigorosamente aplicada, convirtiéndose en una masa fundida de consistencia pastosa, que los indígenas llaman \textit{tutao}. Esta se divierte luego en partes separadas, que tras de arreglarse en robustos paquetes, y de envolverse en sucesivas capas de hojas, y de atarse con correas de corteza, se almacenan en grandes receptáculos excavados en tierra, de donde se sacan según lo requiera la ocasión. [132] En esta forma, el \textit{tutao} permanece a veces durante años, e incluso se considera que mejora con la edad. Sin embargo, antes de estar dispuesto para ser comido, ha de someterse a un proceso adicional. Se ahueca en el suelo un primitivo horno, y cubriendo el fondo con una capa ligera de piedras, se enciende un gran fuego en él. Tan pronto como se alcanza el grado necesario de calor, se sacan las ascasas, y cubriendo la superficie de las piedras con densas capas de hojas, se pone sobre ellas uno de los paquetes grandes de \textit{tutao}, que se recubre con otra capa de hojas. Luego se echa rápidamente un montón de tierra sobre todo ello, formando una pequeña colina.

\textit{tutao} así cocido se llama \textit{amar}: la acción del horno lo convierte en una sustancia como pastel de color de ámbar, un poco agria,
SITUACIÓN MELANCÓLICA. SUCESO EN EL TI. ANÉCDOTA DE MARHEYO. AFEITADO DE LA CABEZA DE UN GUERRERO

Volviendo la mirada hacia aquella época, y evocando las innumerables pruebas de bondad y respeto que recibí de los indígenas, apenas puedo comprender cómo fue que, en medio de tantas circunstancias consoladoras, mi ánimo siguiera consumido por los presentimientos más lúgubres, y continuara siendo presa de la más profunda melancolía. Es cierto que las circunstancias sospechosas que habían acompañado a la desaparición de Toby eran suficientes para provocar desconfianza respecto a los sal- vajes en cuyo poder comprendía yo que estaba puesto por entero, sobre todo si a eso se añadía el saber que esos mismos hombres, aun siendo tan amables y respetuosos conmigo, no eran, después de todo, sino una partida de caníbales.

Pero mi principal motivo de preocupación, que envenenaba todo disfrute temporal, era la misteriosa enfermedad de mi pierna, que permanecía en el mismo estado. Todas las aplicaciones de Tinor, unidas con el severo disciplina del viejo curandero y a los afectuosos cuidados de Kory-Kory, habían sido inútiles para aliviarme. Yo era casi un inválido, y el dolor que sufría a veces era angustioso. La inexplicable enfermedad no mostraba señales de mejorar; al contrario, su violencia aumentaba de día en día, y amenazaba tener el resultado [134] más fatal, a no ser que se emplearan medios poderosos para contrarrestarla. Parecía como si me encontrara destinado a hundirme bajo esa dolorosa aflicción, o al menos, como si ésta me hubiera de impedir aprovechar cualquier oportunidad de escaparme del valle.

Ocurrió un incidente, según mis cálculos, unas tres semanas después de la desaparición de Toby, que me convenció de que los indígenas, por alguna razón, interpondrían todos los obstáculos posibles para que no les abandonara.

Una mañana, la gente de alrededor de mi vivienda mostró no poca excitación, que pronto descubrí que procedía de un vago informe de que se habían visto lanchas a gran distancia, acercándose a la bahía. Inmediatamente, todo fue estrépito y animación. Acertó a ocurrir ese día que el dolor que sufría había disminuido algo, y sintiéndome de mucho mejor humor que de costumbre, había acept-
Kory-Kory’s invitation to visit the chief Mehevi at the place called the “Ti”, which I have before described as being situated within the precincts of the Taboo Groves. These sacred recesses were at no great distance from Marheyo’s habitation, and lay between it and the sea; the path that conducted to the beach passing directly in front of the Ti, and thence skirting along the border of the groves.

I was reposing upon the mats, within the sacred building, in company with Mehevi and several other chiefs, when the announcement was first made. It sent a thrill of joy through my whole frame;—perhaps Toby was about to return. I rose at once to my feet, and my instinctive impulse was to hurry down to the beach, equally regardless of the distance that separated me from it, and of my disabled condition. As soon as Mehevi noticed the effect the intelligence had produced upon me, and the impatience I betrayed to reach the sea, his countenance assumed that inflexible rigidity of expression which had so awed me on the afternoon of our arrival at the house of Marheyo. As I was proceeding to leave the Ti, he laid his hand upon my shoulder, and said gravely, ‘abo, abo’ (wait, wait). Solely intent upon the one thought that occupied my mind, and heedless of his request, I was brushing past him, when suddenly he assumed a tone of authority, and told me to ‘moece’ (sit down). Though struck by the alteration in his demeanour, the excitement under which I laboured was too strong to permit me to obey the unexpected command, and I was still limping towards the edge of the pi-pi with one arm in my hand, when the natives around started to their feet, ranged themselves along the open front of the building, while Mehevi looked at me scowlingly, and reiterated his commands still more sternly.

It was at this moment, when fifty savage countenances were glaring upon me, that I first truly experienced I was indeed a captive in the valley. The conviction rushed upon me with staggering force, and I was overwhelmed by this confirmation of my worst fears. I saw at once that it was useless for me to resist, and sick at heart, I reseated myself upon the mats, and for the moment abandoned myself to despair.

I now perceived the natives one after the other hurrying past the Ti and pursuing the route that conducted to the sea. These savages, thought I, will soon be holding communication with some of my own countrymen perhaps, who with ease could restore me to liberty did they know of the situation I was in. No language can describe the wretchedness which I felt; and in the bitterness of my soul I imprecated a thousand curses on the perfidious Toby, who had thus abandoned me to destruction. It was in vain that Kory-Kory tempted me with food, or lighted my pipe, or sought to attract my attention by performing the uncouth antics that had sometimes diverted me. I was fairly knocked down by this last misfortune, which, much as I had feared it, I had never before had the courage calmly to contemplate.

Regardless of everything but my own sorrow, I remained in the Ti for several hours, until shouts proceeding at intervals from the groves beyond the house proclaimed the return of the natives from the beach.

Whether any boats visited the bay that morning or not, I never could ascertain. The savages assured me that there had not—but I was inclined to believe that by deceiving me in this particular they sought to alloy the violence of my grief. However that might be, this incident showed plainly that the Typees intended to hold me a prisoner. As they still treated me with the same sedulous attention as before, I was utterly at a loss how to account for their singular conduct. Had I been in a situation to instruct them in any of the rudiments of the mechanic arts, or had I manifested a disposition to render myself in any way useful among them, their conduct might have been attributed to some adequate motive, but as it was, the tado la invitación de Kory-Kory para que visitara al cacique Mehevi en el lugar llamado el Ti, que antes he descrito como situado en el recinto de los bosques tabá. Esos terrenos sagrados no estaban muy lejos de donde vivía Marheyo, y quedaban entre la casa de éste y el mar: el sendero que llevaba a la playa pasaba por delante mismo del Ti, y desde ahí se enfrentaba por el límite de los bosques.

Estaba yo tendido en las esteras, en el edificio sagrado, en compañía de Mehevi y de varios otros jefes, cuando se dio el anuncio. Todo mi cuerpo se estremeció de alegría: quizá iba a volver Toby. En seguida me puse de pie, y mi impulso instintivo fue bajar apresuradamente a la playa, sin tener en cuenta la distancia que me separaba de ella ni mi situación inválida. Tan pronto como Mehevi notó el efecto que había producido en mí la información, y la impaciencia que mostraba por alcanzar el mar, su rostro asumió la inflexible rigidez de expresión que tanto me había intimidado la tarde de nuestra llegada a casa de Marheyo. Cuando yo me disponía a salir del Ti, me puso la mano en el hombro, y dijo gravemente: Abo, abo (esperar, esperar). Concentrado en el único pensamiento que llenaba mi ánimo, y sin fijarme en su indicación, yo me apartaba ya para pasar adelante, cuando de pronto asumió un tono de autoridad, y me dijo mol (sentarse). Aunque impresionado por la alteración de su actitud, la excitación que me invadió era demasiado fuerte para permitirme obedecer el inesperado mandato, y todavía seguía renqueando hacia el borde del pi-pi, con Kory-Kory agarrado a un brazo en su esfuerzo por [135] sujetarme, cuando los indígenas a mi alrededor se pusieron en pie de un salto, y se alinearon a lo largo de la fachada abierta del edificio, mientras que Mehevi me miraba reprensivamente y repetía su orden con mayor severidad.

En ese momento, con cincuenta rostros salvajes mirándose centelleantes, fue cuando por primera vez noté de veras que no era más que un cautivo en el valle. Esa convicción me invadió con tal fuerza que me hizo tambalearme, y quedé abrumado por esa confirmación de mis peores temores. De repente vi que era inútil que me resistiera, y con ánimo desfallecido, volví a sentarme en las esteras, y por el momento me entregué a la desesperación.

Observé entonces que los indígenas pasaban rápidamente, uno tras otro, por delante del Ti, siguiendo la ruta que llevaba al mar. «Eso salvajes —pensé yo— pronto estarán en comunicación quizá con compatriotas míos, que con facilidad podrían devolverme la libertad si supieran en qué situación estoy.» No hay lenguaje que pueda describir la situación misera en que me sentí, y en la amargura de mi alma, lancé mil maldiciones contra el perfido Toby, que me había abandonado así a la destrucción. Fue vano que Kory-Kory me tentara con alimento, y me encendiera la pipa, y tratara de llamar mi atención ejecutando las toascas pantomimas que a veces me habían divertido. Estaba absolutamente derrumbado por esa última desgracia; que, por mucho que hubiera temido, jamás había tenido valor para prever con calma.

Sin considerar otra cosa que mi pena, permanecí en el Ti durante varias horas, hasta que los gritos que llegaban de vez en cuando desde los bosques de más allá de la casa proclamaron el regreso de los indígenas desde la playa.

Jamás pude averiguar si habían llegado lanzas a la playa aquella mañana. Los salvajes me aseguraron que no, pero yo me inclinaba a creer que, engañándome en ese aspecto, trataban de disminuir la violencia de mi dolor. Comoquiera que fuera, este incidente me mostró claramente que los taipis pensaban retenerme como prisionero. Pero dado que me siguieron tratando con la misma atención asidua que antes, yo estaba completamente desconcertado sobre cómo explicar su singular conducta. Si hubiera estado en condiciones de instruirles sobre rudimentos de algunas artes mecánicas, o si hubiera manifestado disposiciones para hacerme útil entre ellos de algún modo, su conducta se podría haber atribuido a algún motivo sensato, pero tal como...
During my whole stay on the island there occurred but two or three instances where the natives applied to me with the view of availing themselves of my superior information; and these now appear so ludicrous that I cannot forbear relating them.

The few things we had brought from Nukuheva had been done up into a small bundle which we had carried with us in our descent to the valley. This bundle, the first night of our arrival, I had used as a pillow, but on the succeeding morning, opening it for the inspection of the natives, they gazed upon the miscellaneous contents as though I had just revealed to them a casket of diamonds, and they insisted that so precious a treasure should be properly secured. A line was accordingly attached to it, and the other end being passed over the ridge-pole of the house, it was hoisted up to the apex of the roof, where it hung suspended directly over the mats where I usually reclined. When I desired anything from it I merely raised my finger to a bamboo beside me, and taking hold of the string which was there fastened, lowered the package. This was exceedingly handy, and I took care to let the natives understand how much I applauded the invention. Of this package the chief contents were a razor with its case, a supply of needles and thread, a pound of tobacco, and a few yards of bright-coloured calico.

I should have mentioned that shortly after Toby’s disappearance, perceiving the uncertainty of the time I might be obliged to remain in the valley—if, indeed, I ever should escape from it—considering that my whole wardrobe consisted of a shirt and a pair of trousers, I resolved to doff [lift, remove] these garments at once, in order to preserve them in a suitable condition for wear should I again appear among civilized beings. I was consequently obliged to assume the Typee costume, a little altered, however, to suit my own views of propriety, and in which I have no doubt I appeared to as much advantage as a senator of Rome enveloped in the folds of his toga. A few folds of yellow tappa tucked about my waist, descended to my feet in the style of a lady’s petticoat, only I did not have recourse to those voluminous paddings in the rear with which our gentle damsies are in the habit of augmenting the sublime rotundity of their figures. This usually comprised my in-door dress; whenever I walked out, I superadded to it an ample robe of the same material, which completely enveloped my person, and screened it from the rays of the sun.

One morning I made a rent in this mantle; and to show the islanders with what facility it could be repaired, I lowered my bundle, and taking from it a needle and thread, proceeded to stitch up the opening. They regarded this wonderful application of science with intense admiration; and whilst I was stitching away, old Marheyo, who was one of the lookers-on, suddenly clapped his hand to his forehead, and rushing to a corner of the house, drew forth a soiled and tattered strip of faded calico which he must have procured some time or other in traffic on the beach—and besought me eagerly to exercise a little of my art upon it. I willingly complied, though certainly so stumpy a needle as mine never took such gigantic strides off calico before. The repairs completed, old Marheyo gave me a paternal hug; and divesting himself of his ‘maro’ (girdle), swathed the calico about his loins, and slipping the belted ornaments into his ears, grasped his spear and sallied out of the house, like a valiant Templar arrayed in a new and costly suit of armour.

I never used my razor during my stay in the island, but although a very subordinate affair, it had been vastly admired by the Typees; and Narmoni, a great hero among them, who was exceedingly precise in the arrangements of his toilet and the general adjustment of his person, being the most accurately tattooed and laboriously horrified individual in all the valley, thought it would be a great advance...
tage to have it applied to the already shaven crown of his head.

The implement they usually employ is a shark’s tooth, which is about as well adapted to the purpose as a one-pronged fork for pitching hay. No wonder, then, that the acute Narmonie perceived the advantage my razor possessed over the usual implement. Accordingly, one day he requested as a personal favour that I would just run over his head with the razor. In reply, I gave him to understand that it was too dull, and could not be used to any purpose without being previously sharpened. To assist my meaning, I went through an imaginary honing process on the palm of my hand. Narmonie took my meaning in an instant, and running out of the house, returned the next moment with a huge rough mass of rock as big as a millstone, and indicated to me that that was exactly the thing I wanted. Of course there was nothing left for me but to proceed to business, and I began scraping away at a great rate. He writhed and wriggled under the infliction, but, fully convinced of my skill, endured the pain like a martyr.

Though I never saw Narmonie in battle I will, from what I then observed, stake my life upon his courage and fortitude. Before commencing operations, his head had presented a surface of short bristling hairs, and by the time I had concluded my unskilful operation it resembled not a little a stubble field after being gone over with a harrow. However, as the chief expressed the liveliest satisfaction at the result, I was too wise to dissent from his opinion.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN

IMPROVEMENT IN HEALTH AND SPIRITS—FELICITY OF THE TYPEES—THEIR ENJOYMENTS COMPARED WITH THOSE OF MORE ENLIGHTENED COMMUNITIES—COMPARATIVE WICKEDNESS OF CIVILIZED AND UNENLIGHTENED PEOPLE—A SKIRMISH IN THE MOUNTAIN WITH THE WARRIORS OF HAPPAR

DAY after day wore on, and still there was no perceptible change in the conduct of the islanders towards me. Gradually I lost all knowledge of the regular recurrence of the days of the week, and sunk insensibly into that kind of apathy which ensues after some violent outburst of despair. My limb suddenly healed, the swelling went down, the pain subsided, and I had every reason to suppose I should soon completely recover from the affliction that had so long tormented me.

As soon as I was enabled to ramble about the valley in company with the natives, troops of whom followed me whenever I sallied out of the house, I began to experience an elasticity of mind which placed me beyond the reach of those dismal forebodings to which I had so lately been a prey. Received wherever I went with the most deferent amability; ministered to by dark-eyed nymphs, and enjoying besides all the services of the devoted Kory-Kory, I thought that, for a sojourn among cannibals, no man could have been placed in a more agreeable one.

To be sure there were limits set to my wanderings. Towards the sea my progress was barred by an express prohibition of the savages, and after having made two or three ineffectual attempts to reach it, as much to gratify my curiosity as anything else, I gave up the idea. It was in vain to think of reaching it by stealth, since the natives escorted me in numbers wherever I went, and not for one single moment that I can recall to mind was I ever permitted to be alone.

As long as I was enabled to go where I pleased, I enjoyed besides all the services of the devoted Kory-Kory, and after having made two or three ineffectual attempts to reach the sea my progress was barred by an express prohibition of the savages; and after having made two or three ineffectual attempts to reach the sea my progress was barred by an express prohibition of the savages; and after having made two or three ineffectual attempts to reach the sea my progress was barred by an express prohibition of the savages.

CAPÍTULO XVII

MEJORÍA DE SALUD Y DE ÁNIMOS. FELICIDAD DE LOS TAIPIS. SUS DIVERSIONES, COMPARADAS CON LAS DE COMUNIDADES MÁS CULTAS. PERVERSIDAD RELATIVA DE LA GENTE CIVILIZADA Y LA INICALTA. UNA ESCARAMUZA EN LA MONTAÑA CON LOS GUERREROS DE HAPPAR

Pasaba un día tras otro, y seguía sin haber cambio perceptible en la conducta de los isleños hacia mí. Poco a poco, perdí todo conocimiento sobre la reiteración regular de los días de la semana, y caí insensiblemente en esa especie de apatía que sucede a una violenta crisis de desesperación. La pierna se me curó de repente, bajó la hinchazón, disminuyó el dolor, y tuve todos los motivos para suponer que pronto me recobraría completamente de la aflicción que durante tanto tiempo me había atormentado.

Tan pronto como pude vagabundear por el valle en compañía de los indígenas, que me seguían en tropel en cuanto salía de la casa, empecé a experimentar una elasticidad de ánimo que me puso por encima del alcance de esos lúgubres presentimientos de que había sido presa últimamente. Recibido, dondequiera que fuera, con la amabilidad más deferente; obsequiado perpetuamente con los más deliciosos frutos; servido por ninfas de oscuros ojos, y disfrutando además de todos los servicios del devoto Kory-Kory, pensé que, para ser una estancia entre caníbales, no podría haber quien tuviera otra más agradable. [139]

Desde luego, había limites puestos a mis vagabundeados. Había el mar, mi avance estaba cortado por una prohibición expresa de los salvajes, y después de hacer dos o tres intentos inútiles de llegar a él, más que nada para satisfacer mi curiosidad, reanudé a la idea. Era vano pensar en alcanzarlo furtivamente, puesto que los indígenas me escoltaban en gran número a dondequiera que fuera, y ni por un momento puedo recordar que me dejaran estar solo.
I could have stolen away from the thousand eyes of the savages.

The naked wretch who shivers beneath the bleak skies, and starves among the inhospitable wilds of Tierra-del-Fuego, might indeed be made happier by civilization, for it would alleviate his physical wants. But the voluptuous Indian, with every desire supplied, whom Providence has bountifully provided with all the sources of pure and natural enjoyment, and from whom are removed so many of the ills and pains of life—what has he to desire at the hands of Civilization? She may ‘cultivate his mind’—may elevate his thoughts.’—these I believe are the established phrases—but will he be the happier? Let the once smiling and populous Hawaiian islands, with their now diseased, starving, and dying natives, answer the question. The missionaries may seek to disguise the matter as they will, but the facts are incontrovertible; and the devoutest Christian who visits that group with an unbiased mind, must go away mournfully asking—‘Are these, alas! the fruits of twenty-five years of enlightening?’

In a primitive state of society, the enjoyments of life, though few and simple, are spread over a great extent, and are unalloyed; but Civilization, for every advantage she imparts, holds a hundred evils in reserve;—the heart-burnings, the jealousies, the social rivalries, the family dissensions, and the thousand self-inflicted discomforts of refined life, which make up in units the swelling aggregate of human misery, are unknown among these unsophisticated people.

But it will be urged that these shocking unprincipled wretches are cannibals. Very true; and a rather bad trait in their character it must be allowed. But they are such only when they seek to gratify the passion of revenge upon their enemies; and I ask whether the mere eating of human flesh so very far exceeds in barbarity that custom which only a few years since was practised in enlightened England:—a convicted traitor, perhaps a man found guilty of honesty, patriotism, and suchlike heinous crimes, had his head chopped off with a huge axe, his bowels dragged out and thrown into a fire; while his body, carved into four quarters, was with his head exposed upon pikes, and permitted to rot and fester among the public haunts of men! The fiend-like skill we display in the invention of all man-killing engines, the vindictiveness with which we carry on our wars, and the misery and desolation that follow in their train, are enough of themselves to distinguish the white civilized man as the most ferocious animal on the face of the earth. His remorseless cruelty is seen in many of the institutions of our own favoured land. There is one in particular lately adopted in one of the States of the Union, which purports to have been dictated by the most merciful considerations. To destroy our malefactors piece-meal, drying up in their veins, drop by drop, the blood that me pudiera evadir de los mil ojos de los salvajes.

But these reflections now seldom obtruded upon me; I gave myself up to the passing hour, and if ever disagreeable thoughts arose in my mind, I drove them away. When I looked around the verdant recess in which I was buried, and gazed up to the summits of the lofty eminence when they sought me in, I was well disposed to think that I was in the ‘Happy Valley’, and that beyond those heights there was naught but a world of care and anxiety. As I extended my wanderings in the valley and grew more familiar with the habits of its inmates, I was fain to confess that, despite the disadvantages of its condition, the Polynesian savage, surrounded by all the luxurious provisions of nature, enjoyed an infinitely happier state than the self-complacent European.

The desnudo miserable que tritura bajo los cielos desolados y se muere de hambre en los inhospitarios desiertos de Tierra de Fuego, podría llegar, desde luego, a ser más feliz con la civilización, pues aliviaria sus necesidades físicas. Pero el voluptuoso indio, con todos los deseos cubiertos, y a quien la Providencia ha provisto abundantemente de todas las fuentes del placer puro y natural, alejándole también de muchos de los males y dolores de la vida, ¿qué tiene que desear de manos de la civilización? Ésta podría ‘cultivar su mente’, podría ‘elevar sus pensamientos’—creo que son éstas las frases establecidas—, pero ¿le haría más feliz? Que contesten a la pregunta las islas Hawai antaño sonrientes y populosas, y hoy con sus indígenas enfermos y muriéndose de hambre. Los misioneros quizá traten de disfrazar el asunto como quieran, pero los hechos son incontrovertibles, y el más devoto cristiano que visite ese archipiélago con ánimo imparcial, se marchará preguntando fúgubremente: ‘¿Son éso, ¡ay!, los frutos de veinticinco años de Ilustración?’ [140]

En un estado primitivo de la sociedad, los golpes de la vida, aunque pocos y sencillos, están difundidos en gran medida, y no se han bastardreado; pero la civilización, por cada ventaja que comunica, guarda cien males en reserva; las pasiones, los celos, las rivalidades sociales, las disensiones familiares y las mil incomodidades que se infligen a sí misma la vida refinada, y que forman en su conjunto el creciente agregado de la miseria humana, se desconocen entre esa gente ingenua.

Pero se apremiará que esos desgraciados miserables sin principios son caníbales. Es verdad, y debe confesarse que es un rasgo tan común a todo el carácter humano, que los indios lo consignan en sus ritos y ceremonias; y lo hacen con tal convicció que el indio tiene el honor de ser el que más sacrifica a la venganza de sus enemigos; y me pregunto si sólo el comer carne humana excede tanto en barbarie a la costumbre que hasta hace pocos años se practicaba en la civilizada Inglaterra: a un traidor convicto, quizá un hombre que resultaba culpable de honradez, patriotismo y semejantes delitos horribles, se le cortaba la cabeza con una gran hach, se le sacaban las entrañas y se echaban a una hoguera; mientras el cuerpo, partido en cuatro partes, se exponía en palos, junto con la cabeza, y se le dejaba pudrirse y deshacerse entre los sitios que solían frecuentar los hombres.

La demoniaca habilidad que exhibimos en la invención de toda clase de ingenios para manejar la muerte, la vengatividad con que llevamos a cabo nuestras guerras, y la miseria y la desolación que dejamos detrás de nosotros, son bastantes, por sí mismas, para distinguir al hombre blanco civilizado como el animal más feroz sobre la faz de la tierra.

Su crueldad sin remordimientos se ve en muchas instituciones de nuestro favorecido país. Hay una, en particular, recientemente adoptada en uno de los Estados de nuestra Nación, que pretende estar dictada por las intenciones más menesterosas. Destruir a nuestros malhechores por partes, resecándoles en las venas, gota a gota, también en Europa: la obra de Amed de Vigy Stello; las consultas del Doctor Negro hipocríta que combate el «doctor negro», símbolo de la realidad de la vida.

(*) La melancolía, los blues; el azul era el color del spleen [melancholia] romántico, se publicó también con el título S., o los diablos azules, por ser azules los diablos.
we are too chicken-hearted to shed by a single blow which would at once put a period to their sufferings, is deemed to be infinitely preferable to the old-fashioned punishment of gibbeting—much less annoying to the victim, and more in accordance with the refined spirit of the age; and yet how feeble is all language to describe the horrors we inflict upon these wretches, whom we mason up in the cells of our prisons, and condemn to perpetual solitude in the very heart of our population.

But it is needless to multiply the examples of civilized barbarity; they far exceed in the amount of misery they cause the crimes which we regard with such abhorrence in our less enlightened fellow-creatures.

The term ‘Savage’ is, I conceive, often misapplied, and indeed, when I consider the vices, cruelties, and enormities of every kind that spring up in the tainted atmosphere of a feverish civilization, I am inclined to think that so far as the relative wickedness of the parties is concerned, four or five Marquesan Islanders sent to the United States as Missionaries might be quite as useful as an equal number of Americans despatched to the Islands in a similar capacity.

I once heard it given as an instance of the frightful depravity of a certain tribe in the Pacific that they had no word in their language to express the idea of virtue. The assertion was unfounded; but were it otherwise, it might be met by stating that their language is almost entirely destitute of terms to express the delightful ideas conveyed by our endless catalogue of civilized crimes.

In the altered frame of mind to which I have referred, every object that presented itself to my notice in the valley struck me in a new light, and the opportunities I now enjoyed of observing the manners of its inmates, tended to strengthen my favourable impressions. One peculiarity that fixed my admiration was the perpetual hilarity reigning through the whole extent of the vale. There seemed to be no cares, griefs, troubles, or vexations, in all Typee. The hours tripped along as gaily as the laughing couples down a country dance.

There were none of those thousand sources of irritation that the ingenuity of civilized man has created to mar his own felicity. There were no foreclosures of mortgages, no protested notes, no bills payable, no debts of honour in Typee; no unreasonable tailors and shoemakers perversely bent on being paid; no duns of any description and battery attorneys, to foment discord, backing their clients up to a quarrel, and then knocking their heads together; no poor relations, everlasting occupancy of the spare bed-chamber, and diminishing the elbow room at the family table; no destitute widows with their children starving on the cold charities of the world; no beggars; no debtors’ prisons; no proud and hearted nabobs in Typee; or to sum up all in one word—no Money! ‘That root of all evil’ was not to be found in the valley.

In this secluded abode of happiness there were no cross old women, no cruel step-dames, no withered spinsters, no lovesick maidens, no sour old bachelors, no inattentive husbands, no melancholy young men, no blubbering youngsters, and no squalling brats. All was mirth, fun and high good humour. Blue devils, hypochondria, and doleful dumps, went and hid themselves among the nooks and crannies of the rocks.

Here you would see a parcel of children frolicking together the live-long day, and no quarrelling, no contention, among them. The same number in our own land could not have played together for the space of an hour without biting or scratching one another.

Pero es innecesario multiplicar los ejemplos de la barbarie civilizada: exceden con mucho, en la suma de miserias que causan, a los delitos que consideramos con tal aborrecimiento en nuestros menos ilustrados semejantes.

El término «salvaje» me parece que a menudo se aplica mal. En efecto, cuando considero los vicios, las crueldades y las enormidades de toda especie que surgen en la ciciada atmósfera de una civilización febril, me inclino a pensar que, en lo que toca a la perversidad relativa de una y otra parte, cuatro o cinco isleños de las Marquesas enviados como misioneros a Estados Unidos podrían ser tan útiles como igual número de americanos desechados a las islas en semejante condición.

Una vez oí decir, como ejemplo de la espantosa deprivation de cierta tribu del Pacífico, que no tenían palabra en su idioma para expresar la idea de virtud. La aserción era infundada, pero, aunque no lo fuera, se podría haber replicado afirmando que su lenguaje está casi por completo desprovisto de términos para expresar las deliciosas ideas que ofrece nuestro incesante catálogo de delitos civilizados.

En el alterado estado de ánimo a que me he referido, todos los objetos que se presentaban a mi atención en el valle me impresionaban bajo una nueva luz, y las oportunidades que ahora disfrutaba de observar las costumbres de sus habitantes tendían a reforzar mis impresiones favorables. Una peculiaridad que captó mi admiración era la perpetua hilariad que reinaba en toda la extensión del valle. No parecía haber en todo Taipi preocupaciones, dolores, apuros ni molestias. Las horas se deslizaban tan alegremente como las risueñas parejas que se suceden en una contradanza.

No había ninguna de esas mil causas de irritación que el ingenio del hombre civilizado ha creado para estropear su propia felicidad. No había en Taipi juicios hipotecarios, ni letras protestadas, ni cuentas que pagar, ni deudas de honor; no había sastres ni zapateros irrazonables, perversamente empeñados en que se les pague; no había acreedores de ninguna clase; no había abogados de juicios de faltas, para fomentar la discordia, respaldando a sus clientes para llegar a pleito, y luego derribándolos a todos juntos; no había parientes pobres, ocupando eternamente la alcoba de reserva, y disminuyendo la holura en la mesa familiar; no había viudas pobres con sus hijos muriéndose de hambre con las frías caridades del mundo; no había mendigos, ni prisiones para deudores; no había orgullosos nababs de duro corazón, en [142] Taipia. Para resumirlo todo en una sola palabra, ¡no había dinero! Esa «raza de todos los males» no se encontraba en el valle.

En esa apartada residencia de la felicidad no había viejas malhumoradas, ni madrastas crueles, ni solteronas agradables, ni doncellas enfermas de amor, ni solterones agrios, ni maridos desatentos, ni jóvenes melancólicos, ni jovencetes gitoteantes, ni chiquillos bereantes. Todo era júbilo, broma y buen humor. Los diablos azules, la hipochondria, la melancolia lastimera, se habían ido a ocultar entre los rincones y grietas de las rocas.

Aquí se veía un montón de niños juguetando todo el santo día, sin riñas ni peleas entre ellos. El mismo número de ellos, en nuestro país, no podrían haber jugado juntos durante una hora sin morderse o arañarse unos a otros. Allá
There you might have seen a throng of young females, not filled
with environs of each other’s charms, nor displaying the ridiculous
affects of gentility, nor yet moving in whalebone corsets, like so
many automatons, but free, inartificially happy, and uncon-
stained.

There were some spots in that sunny vale where they would
frequently resort to decorate themselves with garlands of flowers.
To have seen them reclining beneath the shadows of one of the
beautiful groves; the ground around them strewed with freshly gath-
ered buds and blossoms, employed in weaving chaplets and neck-
laces, one would have thought that all the train of Flora had gath-
ered together to keep a festival in honour of their mistress.

Where the young men there seemed almost always some
matter of diversion or business on hand that afforded a constant
variety of enjoyment. But whether fishing, or carving canoes, or
polishing their ornaments, never was there exhibited the least sign
of strife or contention among them.

As for the warriors, they maintained a tranquil dignity of
demeanour, journeying occasionally from house to house, where
they were always sure to be received with the attention bestowed
upon distinguished guests. The old men, of whom there were many
in the vale, seldom stirred from their mats, where they would re-
cline for hours and hours, smoking and talking to one another with
all the garrulity of age.

But the continual happiness, which so far as I was able to
judge appeared to prevail in the valley, sprang principally from that
all-pervading sensation which Rousseau has told us be at one time
experienced, the mere buoyant sense of a healthful physical exist-
ence. And indeed in this particular the Typees had ample reason to
felicitate themselves, for sickness was almost unknown.

During the whole period of my stay I saw but one invalid
among them; and on their smooth clear skins you observed no blem-
ish or mark of disease.

The general repose, however, upon which I have just been
descanting, was broken in upon about this time by an event which
proved that the islanders were not entirely exempt from those oc-
currences which disturb the quiet of more civilized communities.

Having now been a considerable time in the valley, I be-
gan to feel surprised that the violent hostility subsisting between its
inhabitants, and those of the adjoining bay of Happar, should never
have manifested itself in any warlike encounter. Although the val-
iant Typees would often by gesticulations declare their undying ha-
tred against their enemies, and the disgust they felt at their cannibal
propensities; although they dilated upon the manifold injuries they
had received at their hands, yet with a forbearance truly commend-
able, they appeared to sit down under their grievances, and to re-
frain from making any reprisals. The Happars, entrenched behind
their mountains, and never even showing themselves on their sum-
mits, did not appear to me to furnish adequate cause for that excess
of animosity evinced towards them by the heroic tenants of our vale,
and I was inclined to believe that the deeds of blood attributed to
them had been greatly exaggerated.

On the other hand, as the clamours of war had not up to
this period disturbed the serenity of the tribe, I began to distrust the
truth of those reports which ascribed so fierce and belligerent a char-
acter to the Typee nation. Surely, thought I, all these terrible stories
I have heard about the inveteracy with which they carried on the
feud, their deadly intensity, of hatred and the diabolical malice with

Había algunos lugares en el soleado valle donde frecuentemente
acudían ellas a decorarse con guirnaldas de flores. Al verlas recli-
nadas a la sombra de uno de esos hermosos bosquecillos, con el
suelo a su alrededor salpicado de capullos y brotes recién arranca-
dos, y dedicadas a tejer guirnaldas y collares, uno habría pensado
que todo el cortejo de Flora se había reunido para hacer un festival
en honor de su señora.

Entre los jóvenes, siempre parecía haber algún motivo de diver-
sión, o alguna tarea a mano que ofrecía constante variedad de dis-
frute. Pero, lo mismo si pescaban, que si tallaban canoas, o si pulían
sus ornamentos, jamás se mostraba entre ellos el menor signo de
pelea o discusión.

En cuanto a los guerreros, mantenían una tranquila dignidad en
su actitud, pasando de vez en cuando de casa en casa, donde siem-
pre estaban seguros de ser recibidos con la atención reservada a los
visitantes distinguidos. Los viejos, de los que había muchos en el
valle, raramente se movían de sus esteras, donde permanecían recli-
nados horas y horas, fumando y charlando con toda la garrulería de
la vejez.

Pero la continua felicidad que, en lo que yo podía observar, pa-
recía dominar en el valle, procedía principalmente de esa sensación
omnipresente que Rousseau nos ha contado que experimentó una
vez: la mera sensación flotante de una existencia física saludable. Y
desde luego, en ese aspecto, los taipis tenían [143] amplios motivos
para felicitarles, pues la enfermedad era casi desconocida.

Durante todo el período de mi estancia, vi sólo entre ellos un
invalido; y todos ellos, en su piel suave y clara, no mostraban estig-
ma ni marca de enfermedad.

Sin embargo, el reposo general que acabo de exaltar, quedó roto
hacia aquella época por un acontecimiento que demostró que los
isleños no estaban enteramente exentos de esos sucesos que trastor-
nan la calma de comunidades más civilizadas.

Llevando ya un tiempo considerable en el valle, empecé a sen-
tirme sorprendido de que las violentas hostilidades que siempre ha-
bía entre sus habitantes y los de la vecina bahía de Happar, no se
hubieran manifestado jamás en encuentros bélicos. Aunque los va-
lientes taipis declaraban a menudo con gestos su inextinguible odio
contra sus enemigos, y el horror que sentían de sus inclinaciones
canibalescas, y aunque se extendían en las múltiples injurias que
habían recibido de manos de ellos, no obstante, con indulgencia
de veras plausible, parecían aguantar con paciencia sus agravios, y con-
tenerse de toda represalia. Los Happars, atrincherrados detrás de sus
montañas, y sin mostrarse jamás en sus cimas, no me parecían pro-
porcionar causa adecuada para ese exceso de animosidad mostrado
hacia ellos por los heroicos residentes de nuestro valle, y yo me
inclinaba a creer que se habían exagerado mucho las hazañas san-
grientas que se les atribuían.

Por otro lado, como los clamores de guerra no habían perturba-
do hasta entonces la serenidad de la tribu, empecé a desconfiar de la
veracidad de esos informes que atribuían tan feroz y belicoso carác-
ter a la nación taipi. «Seguramente —pensé— todas esas historias
terribles que he oído contar sobre la obstinación con que continúan su
enemistad, la intensidad mortal de su odio, y la diabólica malicia
which they glutted their revenge upon the inanimate forms of the slain, are nothing more than fables, and I must confess that I experienced something like a sense of regret at having my hideous anticipations thus disappointed. I felt in some sort like a 'prentice boy, who, going to the play in the expectation of being delighted with a cut-and-thrust tragedy, is almost moved to tears of disappointment at the exhibition of a genteel comedy.

I could not avoid thinking that I had fallen in with a greatly traduced people, and I moralized not a little upon the disadvantage of having a bad name, which in this instance had given a tribe of savages, who were as pacific as so many lambkins, the reputation of a confederacy of giant-killers.

But subsequent events proved that I had been a little too premature in coming to this conclusion. One, day about noon, happening to be at the Ti, I had lain down on the mats with several of the chiefs, and had gradually sunk into a most luxurious siesta, when I was awakened by a tremendous outcry, and starting up beheld the natives seizing their spears and hurrying out, while the most puissant of the chiefs, grasping the six muskets which were ranged against the bamboos, followed after, and soon disappeared in the groves. These movements were accompanied by wild shouts, in which 'Happar, Happar,' greatly predominated. The islanders were now seen running past the Ti, and striking across the valley to the Happar side.

Presently I heard the sharp report of a musket from the adjoining hills, and then a burst of voices in the same direction. At this the women who had congregated in the groves, set up the most violent clamours, as they invariably do here as elsewhere on any occasion of excitement and alarm, with a view of tranquillizing their own minds and disturbing other people. On this particular occasion they made such an outrageous noise, and continued it with such perseverance, that for awhile, had entire volleys of musketry been fired off in the neighbouring mountains, I should not have been able to have heard them.

When this female commotion had a little subsided I listened eagerly for further information. At last bang went another shot, and then a second volley of yells from the hills. Again all was quiet, and continued so for such a length of time that I began to think the contending armies had agreed upon a suspension of hostilities; when pop went a third gun, followed as before with a yell. After this, for nearly two hours nothing occurred worthy of comment, save some straggling shouts from the hillside, sounding like the halloos of a parcel of truant boys who had lost themselves in the woods.

During this interval I had remained standing on the piazza of the 'Ti,' which directly fronted the Happar mountain, and with no one near me but Kory-Kory and the old superannuated savages I have described. These latter never stirred from their mats, and seemed altogether unconscious that anything unusual was going on.

As for Kory-Kory, he appeared to think that we were in the midst of great events, and sought most zealously to impress me with a due sense of their importance. Every sound that reached us conveyed some momentous item of intelligence to him. At such times, as if he were gifted with second sight, he would go through a variety of pantomimic illustrations, showing me the precise manner in which the redoubtable Typees were at that very moment chastising the insolence of the enemy. 'Mehevi Hanna pippee nee Happar,' he exclaimed every five minutes, giving me to understand that under that distinguished captain the warriors of his nation were performing prodigies of valour.

Having heard only four reports from the muskets, I was led to believe that they were worked by the islanders in the same manner as the Sultan Solymán's ponderous artillery at the siege of Byzantium, one of con que sacian su venganza con los cuerpos inanimados de los muertos, no son nada más que fábulas.» Y debo confesar que experimenté algo como una sensación de decepción al ver tan desengañadas mis horribles previsiones. En cierto modo me sentía como el aprendiz que, yendo al teatro con la esperanza de ser complacido con una tragedia de mucha sangre, casi se siente movido a lágrimas de decepción al ver representar una comedia bien educada.

No pude menos de pensar que había caído entre un pueblo muy calumniado, y moralicé no poco sobre la desventaja de tener mala fama, que en este caso había dado reputación de ser una alianza de matasies a una tribu de salvajes tan pacíficos como borregos. [144]

Pero los acontecimientos posteriores demostraron que me había precipitado un poco al llegar a tal conclusión. Una vez, hacia mediodía, estando por casualidad en el Ti, me había tendido en las esterillas con varios jefes, y poco a poco había caído en la más delicada siesta, cuando me despertó un tremendo clamor. Al levantar los ojos, observé que los indígenas empuñaban las lanzas y salían apresuradamente, mientras el más potente de los jefes, echando mano a los seis mosquetes que estaban alineados contra los bálsamos, salía tras ellos y desaparecía pronto en los bosques. Ese movimiento fue acompañado por salvajes gritos en que predominaba mucho «Happar, Happar». Se vio entonces que pasaban corriendo los isleños ante el Ti, y avanzaban el valle hacia el lado de Happar. Al fin, oí el brusco disparo de un mosquete desde las colinas cercanas, y luego una explosión de voces en la misma dirección. Al oírlo, las mujeres, que se habían reunido en el bosquecillo, elevaron los clamores más violentos, como hacen siempre, allí como en cualquier otro sitio, en cualquier ocasión de agitación y alarma para tranquilizar sus ánimos y perturbar a los demás. En esta determinada ocasión hicieron tan horrible ruido, y lo continuaron con tal perseverancia, que, mientras tanto, aunque se hubieran disparado salvas completas de mosquetería en las montañas cercanas, yo no habría sido capaz de escucharlas.

Cuando disminuyó un poco esa agitación femenina, escuché ansiosamente por si había más información. Al fin, resonó otro disparo, y luego una segunda salva de aullidos desde las colinas. De nuevo todo quedó en silencio, y siguió así tanto tiempo, que empecé a pensar que los ejércitos contendientes habían acordado una suspensión de hostilidades, cuando en esto se oyó el estampido de un tercer mosquete, seguido de un aullido como antes. Después de eso, durante cerca de dos horas no ocurrió nada digno de comentario, salvo algunos gritos dispersos desde la ladera, que sonaban como las llamadas de un grupo de muchachos traviesos que se han perdido en los bosques.

Durante este intervalo, me había quedado quieto en la galería del Ti, que daba directamente frente a la montaña happar, y sin nadie junto a mí sòno Kory-Kory y los viejos salvajes jubilados que antes he descrito. Éstos no se movieron jamás de sus esteras, y se muevan totalmente inconscientes de que ocurriera nada extraordinario.

En cuanto a Kory-Kory, parecía pensar que estábamos en medio de grandes acontecimientos, y trataba celosamente de infundirme una sensación adecuada de su importancia. Todo sonido que nos llegaba, transmitía para él alguna información importante. En tales ocasiones, como si estuviera dotado de doble [145] vista, realizaba variedad de ilustraciones pantomímicas, mostrándome la manera exacta como los temibles taipis castigaban en ese preciso instante la insolencia del enemigo. —Mehevi Hanna pippee nuu Happar— exclamaba cada cinco minutos, dándome a entender que, bajo ese distinguido capitán, los guerreros de su nación realizaban prodigios de valor.

Por haber oído sólo cuatro disparos de mosquetes, me incliné a creer que los isleños los manejaban del mismo modo que la pesada artillería del sultán Solimán en el sitio de Bizanzo, en que cada cañón
them taking an hour or two to load and train. At last, no sound whatever proceeding from the mountains, I concluded that the contest had been determined one way or the other. Such appeared, indeed, to be the case, for in a little while a courier arrived at the ‘Ti’, almost breathless with its exertions, and communicated the news of a great victory having been achieved by his countrymen: ‘Happar poo arva!—Happar poo arva!’ (the cowards had fled). Kory-Kory was in ecstasies, and commenced a vehement harangue, which, so far as I understood it, implied that the result exactly agreed with his expectations, and which, moreover, was intended to convince me that it would be a perfectly useless undertaking, even for an army of fire-eaters, to offer battle to the irresistible heroes of our valley. In all this I of course acquiesced, and looked forward with no little interest to the return of the conquerors, whose victory I feared might not have been purchased without cost to themselves.

But here I was again mistaken; for Mehevi, in conducting his warlike operations, rather inclined to the Fabian than to the Bonapartean tactics, husbanding his resources and exposing his troops to no unnecessary hazards. The total loss of the victors in this obstinately contested affair was, in killed, wounded, and missing—one forefinger and part of a thumb-nail (which the late proprietor brought along with him in his hand), a severely contused arm, and a considerable effusion of blood flowing from the thigh of a chief, who had received an ugly thrust from a Happar spear. What the enemy had suffered I could not discover, but I presume they had succeeded in taking off with them the bodies of their slain.

Such was the issue of the battle, as far as its results came under my observation: and as it appeared to be considered an event of prodigious importance, I reasonably concluded that the wars of the natives were marked by no very sanguinary traits. I afterwards learned how the skirmish had originated. A number of the Happars had been discovered prowling for no good purpose on the Typee side of the mountain; the alarm sounded, and the invaders, after a protracted resistance, had been chased over the frontier. But why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar? Why had he not made a descent into the hostile vale, and why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar? Why had he not made a descent into the hostile vale, and why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar? Why had he not made a descent into the hostile vale, and why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar? Why had he not made a descent into the hostile vale, and why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar? Why had he not made a descent into the hostile vale, and why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar? Why had he not made a descent into the hostile vale, and why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar? Why had he not made a descent into the hostile vale, and why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar? Why had he not made a descent into the hostile vale, and why had not the intrepid Mehevi carried the war into Happar?

For two or three days the late event was the theme of general comment; after which the excitement gradually wore away, and the valley resumed its accustomed tranquility.

For two or three days the late event was the theme of general comment; after which the excitement gradually wore away, and the valley resumed its accustomed tranquility.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN


RETURNING health and peace of mind gave a new interest to everything around me. I sought to diversify my time by as many enjoyments as lay within my reach. Bathing in company with troops of girls formed one of my chief amusements. We sometimes enjoyed the recreation in the waters of a miniature lake, to which the central stream of the valley expanded. This lovely sheet of water was almost circular in figure, and about three hundred yards across. Its beauty was indescribable. All around its banks waved luxuriant masses of tropical foli-

Durante dos o tres días, el reciente acontecimiento fue el tema de comentario general, tras de lo cual la excitación se disipó gradualmente, y el valle recobró su tranquilidad acostumbrada. [147]
age, roaring high above which were seen, here and there, the symmetrical shaft of the coconuts tree, surmounted by its tufts of graceful branches, dropping in the air like so many waving ostrich plumes.

The ease and grace with which the maidens of the valley propelled themselves through the water, and their familiarity with the element, were truly astonishing. Sometimes the might be seen gliding along just under the surface, without apparently moving hand or foot—then throwing themselves on their sides, they darted through the water, revealing glimpses of their forms, as, in the course of their rapid progress, they shot for an instant partly into the air—at one moment they dived deep down into the water, and the next they rose bounding to the surface.

I remember upon one occasion plunging in among a parcel of these river-nymphs, and counting vainly on my superior strength, sought to drag some of them under the water, but I quickly repented my temerity. The amphibious young creatures swarmed about me like a shoal of dolphins, and seizing hold of my devoted limbs, tumbled me about and ducked me under the surface, until from the strange noises which rang in my ears, and the supernatural visions dancing before my eyes, I thought I was in the land of the spirits. I stood indeed as little chance among them as a cumbersome whale attacked on all sides by a legion of swordfish. When at length they relinquished their hold of me, they swam away in every direction, laughing at my clumsy endeavours to reach them.

There was no boat on the lake; but at my solicitation and for my special use, some of the young men attached to Marheyo’s household, under the direction of the indefatigable Kory-Kory, brought up a light and tastefully carved canoe from the sea. It was launched upon the sheet of water, and floated there as gracefully as a swan. But, melancholy to relate, it produced an effect I had not anticipated. The sweet nymphs, who had sported with me before on the lake, now all fled its vicinity. The prohibited craft, guarded by the edicts of the ‘taboo,’ extended the prohibition to the waters in which it lay. The prop of my object; but I was not to be repulsed; and accordingly I consulted the chief Mehevi, who endeavoured to dissuade me from my object, and thereby to test the resolution of the young ladies.
me: partly, perhaps, because I could not comprehend a word that he uttered; but chiefly, that for the life of me I could not understand why a woman would not have as much right to enter a canoe as a man. At last he became a little more rational, and intimated that, out of the abundant love he bore me, he would consult with the priests and see what could be done.

How it was that the priesthood of Typee satisfied the affair with their consciences, I know not; but so it was, and Fayaway dispensation from this portion of the taboo was at length procured. Such an event I believe never before had occurred in the valley; but it was high time the islanders should be taught a little gallantry, and I trust that the example I set them may produce beneficial effects. Ridiculous, indeed, that the lovely creatures should be obliged to paddle about in the water, like so many ducks, while a parcel of great strapping fellows skimmed over its surface in their canoes.

The first day after Fayaway’s emancipation, I had a delightful little party on the lake—the damsels’ Kory-Kory, and myself. My zealous body-servant brought from the house a calabash of poe-poe, half a dozen young coconuts—stripped of their husks—three pipes, as many yams, and me on his back a part of the way. Something of a load; but Kory-Kory was a very strong man for his size, and by no means brittle in the spine. We had a very pleasant day; my trusty valet plied the paddle and swept us gently along the margin of the water, beneath the shades of the overhanging thickets. Fayaway and I reclined in the stern of the canoe, on the very best terms possible with one another; the gentle nymph occasionally placing her pipe to her lip, and exhaling the mild fumes of the tobacco, to which her rosy breath added a fresh perfume. Strange as it may seem, there is nothing in which a young and beautiful female appears to more advantage than in the act of smoking. How captivating is a Peruvian lady, swinging in her gaily-woven hammock of grass, extended between two orange-trees, and inhaling the fragrance of a choice cigarro!

But Fayaway, holding in her delicately formed olive hand the long yellow reed of her pipe, with its quaintly carved bowl, and to and fro at the mouth and nostrils, looked still more engaging.

We floated about thus for several hours, when I looked up to the warm, glowing, tropical sky, and then down into the transparent depths below; and when my eye, wandering from the bewitching scenery around, fell upon the grotesquely-tattooed form of Kory-Kory, and finally, encountered the pensive gaze of Fayaway, I thought I had been transported to some fairy region, so unreal did everything appear.

This lovely piece of water was the coolest spot in all the valley, and I now made it a place of continual resort during the hottest period of the day. One side of it lay near the termination of a long gradually expanding gorge, which mounted to the heights that enwirned the vale. The strong trade wind, met in its course by these elevations, circled and eddied about their summits, and was sometimes driven down the steep ravine and swept across the valley, ruffling in its passage the otherwise tranquil surface of the lake.

One day, after we had been paddling about for some time, I disembarked Kory-Kory, and paddled the canoe to the windward side of the lake. As I turned the canoe, Fayaway, who was with me, seemed all at once to be struck with some happy idea. With a wild exclamation of delight, she disengaged from her person the ample robe of tappa which was knotted over her shoulder (for the purpose of shielding her from the sun), and spreading it out like a sail, stood erect with upraised arms in the head of the canoe. We American sailors pride ourselves upon our straight, clean spars, but a prettier little mast than Fayaway made was never shipped aboard of any craft. porque no pude entender ni una palabra de las que pronunció, pero sobre todo, porque, ni aunque me fuera en ello la vida, no podía entender por qué una mujer no iba a tener tanto derecho a entrar en una canoa como un hombre. Por fin, se puso un poco más razonable, e insinuó que, por el mucho cariño que me tenía, consultaría con los sacerdotes a ver qué se podía hacer.

Yo no sé cómo fue que el sacerdote de Taipe arreglo el asunto en sus conciencias, pero así ocurrió, y por fin se obtuvo la dispensa para Fayaway en esta parte del tabú. Creo que jamás había ocurrido en el valle semejante acontecimiento, pero ya era hora de que a los isleños se les enseñara un poco de galeranía, y confío en que el ejemplo que di produzca efectos beneficiosos. Es ridículo, efectivamente, que las delicosas criaturas estén obligadas a bracer el agua, como patos, mientras que un montón de muchachotes rollizos se deslizan sobre la superficie en sus canoas.

El primer día después de la emancipación de Fayaway, hice una deliciosa excursioncita por el lago: la damisela, Kory-Kory y yo. Mi celoso sirviente personal había traído de casa una calabaza de poi-poi, media docena de cocos tiernos, pelados de su cáscara, tres pipas, otros tantos flanes; y a mí, a sus espaldas, parte del camino. Buena canoa, pero Kory-Kory era muy fuerte, y nada frágil de espinazo. Pasamos un día muy agradable: mi zielo lucayó manejó el remo y nos hizo deslizar suavemente a lo largo de la orilla del agua, a la sombra de las espesuras salvajes. Fayaway y yo, nos reclamamos en la popa de la canoa, en los mejores términos posibles entre nosotros: la gentil ninfa de vez en cuando se llevaba a los labios su pipa, y exhalaba el suave humo del tabaco, al que su aliento de rosa añadiá [150] un nuevo perfume. Por extraño que parezca, no hay cosa en que una joven hermosa se luzca más que en el acto de fumar. ¿Qué cautivadora es una dama peruana, meciéndose en su hamaca de hierba de alegres adornos, extendida entre dos naranjos, y exhalando la fragancia de un cigarro selecto!

Pero Fayaway, sosteniendo en su acertada mano, delicadamente formada, la larga caña amarilla de su pipa, con la cazoleta extrañamente esculpidita, y a cada pocos instantes lanzando languideantemente leves volutas de vapor por su boca y nariz, tenía un aspecto aún más seductor.

Dimos vueltas flotando así durante varias horas: yo miraba en lo alto el cálido y refulgente cielo tropical, y allá abajo las transparentes profundidades, y entonces, cuando mis ojos se apartaban en su vagar del embruajador escenario que me rodeaba y caía en la figura de Kory-Kory, grotescamente tatuado, y encontraba por fin la pensativa mirada de Fayaway, me parecía haber sido trasladado a alguna región de hadas, de tan irreel como todo resultaba.

Aquello delicioso fragmento de agua era el lugar más fresco de todo el valle, y entonces era el lugar a donde acudir continuamente en el período más caluroso del día. Una de sus orillas quedaba junto a la terminación de una larga garganta que se ensanchaba poco a poco, bajando desde las alturas que rodeaban el valle. El fuerte viento alisio, al encontrar en su camino esas elevaciones, daba la vuelta y se arremolinaba en torno a sus cimas, y a veces se veía obligado a bajar por el abrupto barranco, barriendo el valle y agitando a su paso la superficie del lago, de otro modo tranquila.

Un día, después de haber remado durante algún tiempo, desembarqué a Kory-Kory, y llevé remando la canoa al lado de barlovento del lago. Al dar la vuelta a la canoa, a Fayaway, que estaba conmigo, pareció de repente que se le había ocurrido una feliz idea. Con una loca exclamación de deleite, desprendió de su persona el amplio manto de tappa que llevaba anudado al hombro, con el fin de defenderla del sol, y extendiéndolo como una vela, se rigió con los brazos levantados en la proa de la canoa. Nosotros, los marineros americanos, nos enorgullecimos de nuestras vergas rectas y limpias, pero jamás se embarcó a bordo de ningún barco un pequeño mástil más bonito que el que hacía Fayaway.
In a moment the tappa was distended by the breeze—the long brown tresses of Fayaway streamed in the air—and the canoe glided rapidly through the water, and shot towards the shore. Seated in the stern, I directed its course with my paddle until it dashed up the soft sloping bank, and Fayaway, with a light spring alighted on the ground; whilst Kory-Kory, who had watched our manoeuvres with admiration, now clapped his hands in transport, and shouted like a madman. Many a time afterwards was this feat repeated.

If the reader has not observed ere this that I was the declared admirer of Miss Fayaway, all I can say is that he is little conversant with affairs of the heart, and I certainly shall not trouble myself to enlighten him any further. Out of the calico I had brought from the ship I made a dress for this lovely girl. In it she looked, I must confess, something like an opera-dancer.

The drapery of the latter damsel generally commences a little above the elbows, but my island beauty’s began at the waist, and terminated sufficiently far above the ground to reveal the most bewitching ankle in the universe.

My worthy old friend evidently expected that this ingenuity would produce a great effect upon me, and for a time he stood earnestly regarding me, as if curious to see how I should conduct myself, but as I remained perfectly unmoved, the old gentleman darted out of the house again, in as great a hurry as when he entered.

'Marnoo, Marnoo,' cogitated I, 'I have never heard that name before. Some distinguished character, I presume, from the prodigious riot the natives have. That tumultuous noise drawing nearer and nearer every moment, while 'Marnoo!—Marnoo!' was shouted by every tongue.

The day that Fayaway first wore this robe was rendered memorable by a new acquaintance being introduced to me. In the afternoon I was lying in the house when I heard a great uproar outside; but being by this time pretty well accustomed to the wild halloos which were almost continually ringing through the valley, I paid little attention to it, until old Marheyo, under the influence of some strange excitement, rushed into my presence and communicated the astounding tidings, 'Marnoo pemi!' which being interpreted, implied that an individual by the name of Marnoo was approaching.

The stranger could not have been more than twenty-five years of age, and was a little above the ordinary height; had he a single hair’s breadth taller, the matchless symmetry of his form would have been destroyed. His unclad limbs were beautifully formed; whilst the elegant outline of his figure, together with his beardless cheeks, might have entitled him to the distinction of standing for the statue of the Polynesian Apollo; and indeed the oval of his countenance and the regularity of every feature reminded one of that I ever beheld.

The stranger could not have been more than twenty-five years of age, and was a little above the ordinary height; had he a single hair’s breadth taller, the matchless symmetry of his form would have been destroyed. His unclad limbs were beautifully formed; whilst the elegant outline of his figure, together with his beardless cheeks, might have entitled him to the distinction of standing for the statue of the Polynesian Apollo; and indeed the oval of his countenance and the regularity of every feature reminded one of an antique bust. But the marble repose of art was supplied by a warmth and liveliness of expression only to be seen in the South Sea Islander under the most favourable developments of nature. The hair of Marnoo was a rich curling brown, and twined about his temples and neck in little close curling ringlets, which danced up and down continually, when he was animated in conversation. His

En seguida, el viento hinchó la tappa, con las largas trencas oscuras de Fayaway tendidas al viento, y la canoa se deslizó rápidamente por el agua, dispara hacia la orilla. Sentado en la popa, yo goberné su rumbo con el canalete hasta que se embarcó en la orilla de suave pendiente, y Fayaway, con un ligero salto, se posó en el suelo, mientras que Kory-Kory, que había observado nuestras [151] maniobras con admiración, palmeó en éxtasis y gritó como un loco. Esta hazaña se repitió después muchas veces.

Si el lector no se ha dado cuenta ya de que yo era el galanteador reconocido de la señora Fayaway, lo único que puedo decir es que entiende muy poco de asuntos del corazón, y desde luego no me toma-re la molestia de darle mayores explicaciones. Con la india que había traído del barco, le hice un traje a esa delicosa muchacha. Con él, debo confesarle, parecía algo así como una bailarina de ópera.

El atuendo de una bailarina suele comenzar un poco por encima de los codos, pero el de mi belleza isleña empezaba en la cintura, y terminaba lo suficientemente lejos del suelo como para revelar el tobillo más hechicero del universo.

El primer día que Fayaway se puso ese vestido se hizo memorable por un nuevo conocido que me presentaron. A primera hora de la tarde, estaba yo tendido en casa, cuando oí fuera un gran alboroto, pero como para entonces estaba bastante acostumbrado a los salvajes gritos que continuamente resonaban por el valle, le presté poca atención, hasta que el viejo Marheyo, bajo el influjo de una extraña excitación, se precipitó a mi presencia y me comunicó noticias asombrosas:

—¡Marnu pemi! —que, una vez traducido, indicaba que se acercaba un individuo llamado Marnu.

Mi digno y anciano amigo esperaba evidentemente que esa información produjera en mí un gran efecto, y se quedó un buen rato mirándome gravemente, como con curiosidad de ver qué modo me comportaría, pero en vista de que yo permanecía absolutamente impertérito, el viejo caballero volvió a salir disparado de la casa, con tanta prisa como cuando entró.

El recién llegado no podría tener más de veinticinco años, y es- tale yo tendido en casa, cuando oí fuera un gran alboroto, pero como para entonces estaba bastante acostumbrado a los salvajes gritos que continuamente resonaban por el valle, le presté poca atención, hasta que el viejo Marheyo, bajo el influjo de una extraña excitación, se precipitó a mi presencia y me comunicó noticias asombrosas:

—¡Marnu pemi! —que, una vez traducido, indicaba que se acercaba un individuo llamado Marnu.

Imagínate que algún guerrero salvaje de cierta importancia, que todavía no había disfrutado del honor de una audiencia, deseaba presentarme sus respetos en esta ocasión. Tan vanidoso me habla vuelto con la prodigialidad de atenciones a que me habían acostumbrado, que casi me sentía inclinado, en castigo por tal descuido, a recibir con frialdad a ese Marnu, cuando en esto la excitada multitud llegó a la vista, acompañando a una de las más sorprendentes muestras de humanidad que he visto jamás. [152]

El recién llegado no podría tener más de veinticinco años, y estaba un poco por encima de la altura ordinaria: si hubiera sido un pelo más alto, la inigualable simetría de su forma habría quedado destruida. Sus miembros desnudos estaban bellamente configurados, mientras la elegante silueta de su figura, así como sus mejillas imberbes, le habrían hecho acreditar a la distinción de posar para la estatua del Apolo polinesio; y, en efecto, el ovalo de su rostro y la regularidad de todos sus rasgos me recordaban un busto antiguo. Pero el reposo marmóreo del arte estaba sustituido por un calor y viveza de expresión que sólo se ve en los isleños del Mar del Sur en los más favorables desarrollos de la naturaleza. El pelo de Marnu era ensortijado y de un matizado color oscuro, y se desplegaba en sus sierras y cuello en pequeños rizos apretados, que danzaban continua-
which the stranger might be, who now engrossed the attention of every one. Expressions of curiosity and regard. The singularity of his conduct, had prepared me to anticipate from every newcomer the same extravagant did at this unexpected slight.

In the existence, the stranger passed on, utterly regardless of me, and flung notice the civility, or even the more incontrovertible fact of my ex- nates in general, I involuntarily rose as he entered the house, and appearance, so unlike that of the shaven-crowned and face-tattooed which appeared to convulse them with uncontrollable mirth. Every moment he turned good-humouredly on the throng around

He advanced surrounded by the islanders, carrying under one arm a small roll of native cloth, and grasping in his other hand a long and richly decorated spear. His manner was that of a traveller conscious that he is approaching a comfortable stage in his journey. Every moment he turned good-humouredly on the throng around him, and gave some dashing sort of reply to their incessant queries, which appeared to convulse them with uncontrollable mirth.

Struck by his demeanour, and the peculiarity of his appearance, so unlike that of the shaven-crowned and face-tattooed natives in general, I involuntarily rose as he entered the house, and proffered him a seat on the mats beside me. But without deigning to notice the civility, or even the more incontrovertible fact of my existence, the stranger passed on, utterly regardless of me, and flung himself upon the further end of the long couch that traversed the sole apartment of Marheyo’s habitation.

Had the belle of the season, in the pride of her beauty and power, been cut in a place of public resort by some supercil- ious exquisitite, she could not have felt greater indignation than I did at this unexpected slight.

I was thrown into utter astonishment. The conduct of the savages had prepared me to anticipate from every newcomer the same extravagant expressions of curiosity and regard. The singularity of his conduct, however, only raised my desire to discover who this remarkable personage might be, who now engrossed the attention of every one.

Regale (to) es regular, en el sentido de agasajar, banquetearse, tratar a cuerpo de rey, y además deleitar, entretenere. El uso común de regular es to give [un regalo] y, en sentido figurado, to flatter, caress; el reflexivo regalarse es to indulge oneself.

Tinor placed before him a calabash of poi-poi, from which the stranger regaled himself, alternating every mouthful with some rapid exclamation, which was eagerly caught up and echoed by the crowd that completely filled the house. When I observed the striking devotion of the natives to him, and their temporary with- drawal of all attention from myself, I felt not a little piqued. The glory of Tommo is departed, thought I, and the sooner he removes from the valley the better. These were my feelings at the moment, and they were prompted by that glorious principle inherent in all heroic natures—the strong-rooted determination to have the big- gest share of the pudding or to go without any of it.

Marnoo, that all-attractive personage, having satisfied his hunger and inhaled a few whiffs from a pipe which was handed to Sus mejillas eran de suavidad femenina, y su rostro estaba libre del menor estigma de tatuaje, aunque el resto de su cuerpo estaba todo él dibujado con figuras fantásticas, que, a diferencia del inconexo trazado usual entre aquellos indígenas, parecía haber sido desarro- llado de acuerdo con un diseño general.

El tatuaje de su espalda fue lo que más atrajo mi atención. El artista empleado, desde luego, debía haber sobresalido en su profe- sión. Siguiendo el curso del espinazo, se delineaba con exactitud la copa del árbol aru, esbelta, adelgazada y con facetas de brillante. Arran- cando del tronco, a un lado y a otro, en disposición alternativa, estaban las gracias ramas, inclinadas con sus hojas, todas ellas correctamente trazadas y elaboradamente acabadas. Desde luego, este ejemplar de ta- tuaje era el mejor ejemplar de las Bellas Artes jamás visto en Taipi. La vista posterior del visitante habría sugerido la idea de una vid extendi- da, adherida a un muro de jardín. En su pecho, brazos y piernas, se exhibían infinidad de figuras, cada una de las cuales, sin embargo, pa- recía tener en cuenta el efecto general que se trataba de producir. El tatuaje que me descrito era del azul más claro, y al contrastar con el claro color aceitunado de la piel, producía un efecto único e incluso elegante. Un ligero taparrabos de tapa, de apenas dos pulgadas de anchura, pero colgando por delante y por detrás en flecos dispersos, componía toda la vestimenta del recién llegado.

Avanzaba rodeado de los isleños, llevando bajo un brazo un pe- queño rollo de tejido indígena, y empuñando en la otra mano una larga lanza, ricamente decorada. Su actitud era la de un viajero cons- ciente de que se acerca a una etapa cómoda en su camino. A cada momento se volvía a la multitud que le rodeaba, y [153] daba una especie de respuesta rápida a sus incesantes preguntas, que parecía convulsionarles con regocijo incontenible.

Impresionado por su actitud y por la peculiaridad de su aspecto, tan diverso de los indígenas en general, con sus coronillas afei- tadas y sus caras tatuadas, me levanté involuntariamente cuando entró en la casa y le ofrecí asiento en las esteras, ante mí. Pero el recién llegado, sin dignarse advertir la cortesía, ni aun el hecho más indis- cutible de mi existencia, pasó adelante, sin hacerme el menor caso, y se dejó caer al otro extremo de la larga yacita, que atravesaba la única habitación de la casa de Marheyo.

Si la gran belleza de una temporada, en todo el orgullo de su hermo- sura y su poderío, hubiera sido pasada por alto por alguna exquisita desafortunada, en un lugar frecuentado por la gente, no habría podido sen- tir mayor indignación que yo ante este inesperado desprecio.

Cai en completo pasmo. La conducta de los salvajes me había pre- parado para esperar de todo recién llegado las mismas expresiones ex- trabajantes de curiosidad y respeto. No obstante, la singularidad de su conducta no hizo más que excitar mi deseo de descubrir quién podía ser ese notable personaje que ahora absorbía la atención de todos.

Tinor le puso delante una calabaza de poi-poi, con que el recién llegado se regaló, alternando cada bocado con alguna rápida excla- mación que era ávidamente recogida y repetida por la multitud que llenaba por completo la casa. Cuando observé la impresionante de- voción que le tenían los indígenas, y cómo me habían retirado tem- poralmente toda su atención, me sentí no poco picado. «La gloria de Tommo ha terminado —pensé—, y cuanto antes me marche del va- lle, mejor.» Esos eran mis sentimientos del momento, y me los su- gería el glorioso principio propio de toda naturaleza heroica—la decisión bien arreglada de recibir la mejor parte del pastel, o de pasarme sin ninguna.

Marnoo, el personaje de toda atracción, una vez que satisfujo su hambre y aspiró unas pocas bocanadas de una pipa que le dieron, se
him, launched out into an harangue which completely encha\n
Little as I understood of the language, yet from his animated gestures and the varying expression of his features—reflected as from so many mirrors in the countenances around him, I could easily dis\n
cover the nature of those passions which he sought to arouse. From the frequent recurrence of the words ‘Nukuheva’ and ‘Frannee’ (French), and some others with the meaning of which I was acquainted, he ap\n
Never, certainly, had I beheld so powerful an exhibition of natural eloquence as Marnoo displayed during the course of his ora\n
tion. The grace of the attitudes into which he threw his flexible fig\n
But it soon appeared that Marnoo’s powers were as versa\n
tile as they were extraordinary. As soon as he had finished his vehe\n
He had a word for everybody; and, turning rapidly from one to another, gave utterance to some hasty witticism, which was sure\n
to be followed by peals of laughter. To the females as well as to the men, he addressed his discourse. Heaven only knows what he said to them, but he caused smiles and blushes to mantle their in\n
genuous faces. I am, indeed, very much inclined to believe that Marnoo, with his handsome person and captivating manners, was a sad deceiver among the simple maidens of the island.

During all this time he had never, for one moment, deigned to regard me. He appeared, indeed, to be altogether unconscious of my presence. I was utterly at a loss how to account for this extraor\ndinary conduct. I easily perceived that he was a man of no little consequence among the islanders; that he possessed uncommon tal\nts; and was gifted with a higher degree of knowledge than the inmates of the valley. For these reasons, I therefore greatly feared ap\npearance not a little supported. But, if a native of that region, I could not account for his friendly reception at the hands of the Typees.

Poca entendi del idioma, pero por sus animados gestos y la variable expresión de sus rasgos —reflejada, como en otros tan\nespejos, en los rostros que le rodeaban—, fácilmente pude descubrir el carácter de las pasiones que trataba de excitar. Por la frecuente repetición de las palabras Nukuheva y frani (fran\cés), y algunas otras cuyo significado conocía, parecía relatar a los oyentes acontecimientos que habían ocurrido recientemente en las bahías vecinas. Pero no pude [154] comprender cómo ha\n
Nunca, ciertamente, había observado yo tan poderosa exhibición de elocuencia natural como desplegó Marnu a lo largo de su discur\no. La gracia de las actitudes que hacía tomar a su flexible figura, los impresionantes gestos de sus brazos desnudos y, sobre todo, el fuego que desprendían sus brillantes ojos, comunicaban un efecto a los acentos, continuamente cambiantes, de su voz, de que habría estado orgulloso el más cumplido orador. En un momento dado, re\n
El efecto que produjo en su público fue eléctrico: como un solo hombre, permanecieron quietos mirándole con ojos chispeantes y miembros temblorosos, como si escucharan la voz inspirada de un profeta.

Pero pronto resultó que las capacidades de Marnu eran tan tan\nversáteles como extraordinarias. Tan pronto como acabó su arenga vehemente, volvió a tenderse en las esteras, y señalando uno a uno a varios de los presentes, les llamó por sus nombres, en una sort\nter hace de llegar de Nukuheva; suposición que parecía apoyar no p\noco aparente sus riñas con los franceses, en los barcos grandes de guerra y centenares de hombres, no se habían atrevido a atacar a los desnudos guerrerros de su valle.

Duerte todo ese tiempo, jamás, ni por un momento, se dignó observarme. Incluso parecía no darse cuenta en absoluto de mi pre\n
Tuvo una palabra para cada cual, y pasando rápidamente de uno a otro, lanzaba alguna rápida ingeniosidad, que no dejaba de ir se\nguida por grandes carcajadas. Dirigía también su conversación a las mujeres, lo mismo que a los hombres. Sólo Dios sabe qué les decía, pero hizo que sus ingenuas caras se revistieran de sonrisas y rubo\nres. Desde luego, me inclino mucho a creer que Marnu, con su her\nmosa persona y sus modales cautivadores, era un engañoso seduc\tor entre las sencillas doncellas de la isla. [155]
It seemed evident that he was not a permanent resident of the vale, and yet, whence could he have come? On all sides the Typees were girt in by hostile tribes, and how could he possibly, if belonging to any of these, be received with so much cordiality?

The person appearance of the enigmatic stranger suggested additional perplexities. The face, free from tattooing, and the unshaven crown, were peculiarities I had never before remarked in any part of the island, and I always heard that the contrary were considered the indispensable distinction of a Marquesan warrior. Altogether the matter was perfectly incomprehensible to me, and I awaited its solution with no small degree of anxiety.

At length, from certain indications, I suspected that he was making me the subject of his remarks, although he appeared cautiously to avoid either pronouncing my name, or looking in the direction where I lay. All at once he rose from the mats where he had been reclining, and, still conversing, moved towards me, his eye purposefully evading mine, and seated himself within less than a yard of me. I had hardly recovered from my surprise, when he suddenly turned round, and, with a most benign countenance extended his right hand gracefully towards me. Of course I accepted the courteous challenge, and, as soon as our palms met, he bent towards me, and murmured in musical accents—'How do you?' 'How long you been in this bay?' 'You like this bay?'

Had I been pierced simultaneously by three Happar spears, I could not have started more than I did at hearing these simple questions. For a moment I was overwhelmed with astonishment, and then answered something I know not what; but as soon as I regained my self-possession, the thought darted through my mind that from this individual I might obtain that information regarding Toby which I suspected the natives had purposely withheld from me. Accordingly I questioned him concerning the disappearance of my companion, but he denied all knowledge of the matter. I then inquired from whence he had come? He replied, from Nukuheva. When I expressed my surprise, he looked at me for a moment, as if enjoying my perplexity, and then with his strange vivacity, explained,—'Ah! me taboo,—me go Nukuheva,—me go Tior,—me go Taipi,—me go Typee,—me go everywhere,—nobody harm me,—me taboo.'

This explanation would have been altogether unintelligible to me, had it not recalled to my mind something I had previously heard concerning a singular custom among these islanders. Though the country is possessed by various tribes, whose mutual hostilities almost wholly preclude any intercourse between them; yet there are instances where a person having ratified friendly relations with some individual belonging longing to the valley, whose inmates are at war with his own, may, under particular restrictions, venture with impunity into the country of his friend, where, under other circumstances, he would have been treated as an enemy. In this light are personal friendships regarded among them, and the individual so protected is said to be 'taboo', and his person, to a certain extent, is held as sacred. Thus the stranger informed me he had access to all the valleys in the island.

Curious to know how he had acquired his knowledge of English, I questioned him on the subject. At first, for some reason or other, he evaded the inquiry, but afterwards told me that, when a boy, he had been carried to sea by the captain of a trading vessel, with whom he had stayed three years, living part of the time with him at Sidney in Australia, and that at a subsequent visit to the island, the captain had, at his own request, permitted him to remain among his countrymen. The natural quickness of the savage had been wonderfully improved by his intercourse with the white men, and I awaited its solution with no small degree of anxiety.

Al fin, por ciertos síntomas, sospeché que me tomaba por tema de sus observaciones, aunque parecía evitar cuidadosamente pronunciar mi nombre o mirar en dirección hacia donde yo estaba tendido. De repente, se levantó de las esteras en que había estado tendido, y, sin dejar de conversar, se acercó, con su mirada eludiendo intencionadamente la mía, y se sentó a un par de pasos de mí. Apenas me había recobrado de mi sorpresa, cuando de repente se volvió, y, con rostro muy amable, me extendió la mano derecha. Desde luego, aceptó el cortés ofrecimiento, y tan pronto como se encontraron nuestras palmas, se inclinó hacia mí, y murmuró, con acentos musicales, en inglés:

—¿Cómo está usted? ¿Cuánto tiempo lleva en esta bahía? ¿Le gusta la bahía?

Si me hubieran atravesado a la vez tres lanzas happars, no me habría sobresaltado más que al oír esas tres sencillas preguntas. Por un momento, quedé abrumado de asombro, y luego contesté no sé qué; pero tan pronto como recuperé el dominio de mí mismo, me cruzó por la mente, como un relámpago, la idea de que por aquel individuo podría obtener la información sobre Toby que sospechaba que los indígenas me rehusaban adrede. Por tanto, le pregunté sobre la desaparición de mi compañero, pero él negó todo conocimiento del asunto. [156] Entonces le pregunté de dónde había venido. Contestó que de Nukuheva. Cuando expresé mi sorpresa, me miró un momento, como disfrutando con mi perplejidad, y luego, con su extraña vivacidad, exclamó:

—Ah, yo tabú!, yo ir Nukuheva; yo ir Tior; yo ir Taipi; yo ir todas partes; nadie hacerme daño; ¡yo tabú!

La explicación hubiera sido completamente ininteligible, de no haberme recordado algo que había oído antes sobre una costumbre singular que hay entre esos isleños. Aunque el país está dominado por varias tribus, cuyas hostilidades mutuas impiden casi por completo toda comunicación entre ellas, sin embargo, hay casos en que una persona que ha establecido relaciones políticas con algún individuo perteneciente al valle cuyos habitantes están en guerra con el suyo, puede atreverse, dentro de especiales restricciones, a entrar en el país de su amigo, donde, en otras circunstancias, se le habría tratado como enemigo. Bajo esa luz se consideran entre ellos las amistades personales, y el individuo así protegido se dice que es tabú, y su persona se considera sagrada hasta cierto punto. Así el visitante me informó de que tenía acceso a todos los valles de la isla.

Con curiosidad de saber cómo había adquirido su conocimiento del inglés, le pregunté sobre ese tema. Al principio, no sé por qué, eludió responder, pero luego me dijo que, siendo muchacho, se le había llevado al mar el capitán de un barco mercante, con quien había permanecido tres años, viviendo parte de ese tiempo con él en Sidney, en Australia, y que en una visita posterior a la isla, el capitán le había permitido, por su propia petición, que se quedara entre sus paisanos. La natural viveza del salvaje se había mejorado maravillosamente con su trato con los
Marnoo now sought to learn my version of the story as to how I came to be an inmate of the Typee valley. When I related to him the circumstances under which Toby and I had entered it, he listened with evident interest; but as soon as I alluded to the absence, yet unaccounted for, of my comrade, he endeavoured to change the subject, as if it were something he desired not to agitate. It seemed, indeed, as if everything connected with Toby was destined to beget distrust and anxiety in my bosom. Notwithstanding Marnoo’s denial of any knowledge of his fate, I could not avoid suspecting that he was deceiving me; and this suspicion revived those frightful apprehensions with regard to my own fate, which, for a short time past, had subsided in my breast.

Influenced by these feelings, I now felt a strong desire to avail myself of the stranger’s protection, and under his safeguard to return to Nukuheva. But as soon as I hinted at this, he unhesitatingly pronounced it to be entirely impracticable; assuring me that the Taipis would never consent to my leaving the valley. Although what he said merely confirmed the impression which I had before entertained, still it increased my anxiety to escape from a captivity which, however endurable, nay, delightful it might be in some respects, involved my issues a fate marked by the most frightful contingencies.

I could not conceal from my mind that Toby had been treated in the same friendly manner as I had been, and yet all their kindness terminated with his mysterious disappearance. Might not the same fate await me?—a fate too dreadful to think of. Stimulated by these considerations, I urged anew my request to Marnoo; but he only set forth in stronger colours the impossibility of my escape, and repeated his previous declaration that the Taipis would never be brought to consent to my departure.

When I endeavoured to learn from him the motives which prompted them to hold me a prisoner, Marnoo again presumed that mysterious tone which had tormented me with apprehension when I had questioned him with regard to the fate of my companion.

Thus repulsed, in a manner which only served, by arousing the most dreadful forebodings, to excite me to renewed attempts, I conjured him to intercede for me with the natives, and endeavour to procure their consent to my leaving them. To this he appeared strongly averse; but, yielding at last to my importunities, he addressed several of the chiefs, who with the rest had been eyeing me intently during the whole of our conversation. His petition, however, was at once met with the most violent disapprobation, manifesting itself in angry glances and gestures, and a perfect torrent of passionate words, directed to both him and myself. Marnoo, evidently repenting the step he had taken, earnestly deprecated the resentment of the crowd, and, in a few moments succeeded in pacifying to some extent the clamours which had broken out as soon as his proposition had been understood.

With the most intense interest had I watched the reception his intercession might receive; and a bitter pang shot through my heart at the additional evidence, now furnished, of the un-
the events up to the most desponding reflections. I watched his receding figure until it was lost in the obscurity of the grove, and then gave myself the path which led from the house. I watched his receding figure grasping his spear, he advanced to the front of the pi-pi, and any regret at this movement, so seizing his roll of tappa, and foiled in his efforts, he rose gravely to depart. No one expressed attempts were not so successful as they had previously been, and, amusing with his pleasantries the crowd about him; but his lively and resentment which he felt.

peculiarly stern expression I have before described, and took care accordingly, great as was the effort to suppress my feelings, I going on, that the injunction of Marnoo was not to be rashly slighted; and accordingly, great as was the effort to suppress my feelings, I accosted Mehevi in a good-humoured tone, with a view of dissipating the disorder he felt. Mehevi, at the other extremity of the house, apparently had startled me during the scene at the Ti. They glanced their eyes suspiciously from Marnoo to me, as if distrusting the nature of an oral language are more than compensated for by the nervous eloquence of their looks and gestures. I could plainly trace, in every varying expression of their faces, all those passions which had been thus unexpectedly aroused in their bosoms.

It required no reflection to convince me, from what was going on, that the injunction of Marnoo was not to be rashly slighted; and accordingly, great as was the effort to suppress my feelings, I accosted Mehevi in a good-humoured tone, with a view of dissipating any ill impression he might have received. But the irritable, angry chief was not so easily mollified. He rejected my advances with that peculiarly stern expression I have before described, and took care by the whole of his behaviour towards me to show the displeasure and resentment which he felt.

Marnoo, at the other extremity of the house, apparently desirous of making a diversion in my favour, exerted himself to amuse with his pleasanties the crowd about him; but his lively attempts were not so successful as they had previously been, and, foiled in his efforts, he rose gravely to depart. No one expressed any regret at this movement, so seizing his roll of tappa, and grasping his spear, he advanced to the front of the pi-pi, and waving his hand in adieu to the now silent throng, cast upon me a glance of mingled pity and reproach, and flung himself into the path which led from the house. I watched his receding figure until it was lost in the obscurity of the grove, and then gave myself up to the most desponding reflections.

CHAPTER NINETEEN

REFLECTIONS AFTER MARNOO’S DEPARTURE-BATTLE OF THE POP-GUNS—STRANGE CONCEIT OF MARHEYO—PROCESS OF MAKING TAPPA

The knowledge I had now obtained as to the intention of the savages deeply affected me.

Marnoo, I perceived, was a man who, by reason of his superior acquirements, and the knowledge he possessed of the events
Mugidos del toro. Falaris, complacido, probó ante todo el suplicio con su inventor. Inventó un suplicio consistente en un toro de bronce en que se metía a los condenados a muerte, calentándolo hasta el rojo, para que sus aullidos imitaran los aullidos de los cerdos.

How strongly rooted, then, must be the determination of the Typees with regard to me, and how suddenly could they display the strangest passions! The mere suggestion of my departure had estranged me from the time at least, Mehevi, who was the most influential of all the chiefs, and who had previously exhibited so many instances of his; friendly sentiments. The rest of the natives had likewise evinced their strong repugnance to my wishes, and even Kory-Kory himself seemed to share in the general disapprobation bestowed upon me.

In vain I racked my invention to find out some motive for them, but I could discover none.

But however this might be, the scene which had just occurred admonished me of the danger of trifling with the wayward and passionate spirits against whom it was vain to struggle, and might even be fatal to do go. My only hope was to induce the natives to believe that I was reconciled to my detention in the valley, and by assuming a tranquil and cheerful demeanour, to allay the suspicions which I had so unfortunately aroused. Their confidence revived, they might in a short time remit in some degree their watchfulness over my movements, and I should then be the better enabled to avail myself of any opportunity which presented itself for escape. I determined, therefore, to make the best of a bad bargain, and to bear up manfully against whatever might betide. In this endeavour, I succeeded beyond my own expectations. At the period of Marnoo’s visit, I had been in the valley, as nearly as I could conjecture, some two months. Although not completely recovered from my strange illness, which still lingered about me, I was free from pain and able to take exercise. In short, I had every reason to anticipate a perfect recovery. Freed from apprehension on this point, and resolved to regard the future without flinching, I flung myself anew into all the social pleasures of the valley, and sought to bury all regrets, and all remembrances of my previous existence in the wild enjoyments it afforded.

In my various wanderings through the vale, and as I became better acquainted with the character of its inhabitants, I was more and more struck with the light-hearted joyousness that everywhere prevailed. The minds of these simple savages, unoccupied by matters of graver moment, were capable of deriving the utmost delight from circumstances which would have passed unnoticed in more intelligent communities. All their enjoyment, indeed, seemed to be made up of the little trifling incidents of the passing hour; but these diminutive items swelled altogether to an amount of happiness seldom experienced by more enlightened individuals, whose pleasures are drawn from more elevated but rarer sources.

What community, for instance, of refined and intellectual mortals would derive the least satisfaction from shooting pop-guns? The mere supposition of such a thing being possible would excite their indignation, and yet the whole population of Typee did little else for ten days but occupy themselves with that childish amusement, fairly screaming, too, with the delight it afforded them.

One day I was frolicking with a little spirited urchin, some six years old, who chased me with a piece of bamboo about three feet long, with which he occasionally belaboured me. Seizing the

¿Qué reciamente arraigada, pues, debía estar la decisión de los taipis respecto a mí, y qué repentinamente podían mostrar las más poderosas pasiones! La mera sugerencia de mi marcha había distanciado de mí, al menos por el [161] momento, a Mehevi, que era el más influyente de todos los jefes, y que antes me había dado tantos ejemplos de sus sentimientos amistosos. El resto de los indígenas, asimismo, había mostrado su fuerte oposición a mis deseos, y hasta el propio Kory-Kory parecía participar de la general desaprobación que me infligían.

En vano removí mi inventiva para hallar algún motivo del extraño deseo de retenerme que manifestaba esa gente: no pude descubrir ninguno.

Pero, comoquiera que fuese, la escena que acababa de ocurrir me avisó que era peligroso juguetear con los voluntarios y apasionados espíritus contra quienes eran vano luchar, y que quizá sería fatal hacerlo así. Mi única esperanza estaba en inducir a los nativos a que creyeran que me había reconciliado con mi permanencia en el valle, y asumiendo una actitud tranquila y alegre, ansiar las sospechas que había existido tanto infortunadamente. Reanimada su confianza, en poco tiempo quizá disminuirían su vigilancia sobre mis movimientos, y entonces me sería más fácil valerme de cualquier oportunidad que se presentara para escapar. Por consiguiente, decidí sacar el mejor partido de una mala situación, y aguantar valientemente lo que ocurriera. En este intento tuve un éxito que superó mis propias esperanzas. En la época de la visita de Marnu, llevaba yo en el valle unos dos meses, en lo que puedo conjurar. Aunque no completamente recuperado de mi extraña enfermedad, que todavía no me dejaba del todo, estaba libre de dolor y capaz de hacer ejercicio. En resumen, tenía todos los motivos para prever un total restablecimiento. Liberado de temores en este punto, y decidido a considerar el futuro sin desánimo, me volví a lanzar a todos los placeres de la compañía en el valle, y traté de sepultar toda pesadumbre y todo recuerdo de mi existencia anterior, en los locos disfrutes que ofrecía.

En mis diversos vagabundeos por el valle, y conforme conoci mejor el carácter de sus habitantes, me impresionó cada vez más la alegría de ánimo ligero que prevalía en todas partes. Las mentes de esos sencillos salvajes, no ocupadas por asuntos de grave importancia, eran capaces de sacar el mayor deleite de circunstancias que hubieran pasado inadvertidas en comunidades más inteligentes. Todos sus goces, desde luego, parecían estar hechos de los pequeños incidentes triviales de la hora pasajera, pero esos asuntos diminutos se hincaban por completo hasta formar una suma de felicidad raramente experimentada por individuos más ilustrados, cuyos placeres proceden de fuentes más elevadas pero más raras. [162]
stick from him, the idea happened to suggest itself, that I might make for the youngster, out of the slender tube, one of those nursery muskets with which I had sometimes seen children playing.

Accordingly, with my knife I made two parallel slits in the cane several inches in length, and cutting loose at one end the elastic strip between them, bent it back and slipped the point into a little notch made for the purse. Any small substance placed against this would be projected with considerable force through the tube, by merely springing the bent strip out of the notch.

Had I possessed the remotest idea of the sensation this piece of ordnance was destined to produce, I should certainly have taken out a patent for the invention. The boy scampered away with it, half delirious with ecstasy, and in twenty minutes afterwards I might have been seen surrounded by a noisy crowd—venerable old greybeards—responsible fathers of families—valiant warriors—matrons—young men—girls and children, all holding in their hands bits of bamboo, and each clamouring to be served first.

For three or four hours I was engaged in manufacturing pop-guns, but at last made over my good-will and interest in the concern to a lad of remarkably quick parts, whom I soon initiated into the art and mystery.

Pop, Pop, Pop, Pop! green guavas, seeds, and berries were flying about in every direction, and during this dangerous state of affairs I was half afraid that, like the man and his brazen bull, I should fall a victim to my own ingenuity. Like everything else, however, the excitement gradually wore away, though ever after occasionally pop-guns might be heard at all hours of the day.

It was towards the close of the pop-gun war, that I was infinitely diverted with a strange freak of Marheyo’s.

I had worn, when I quitted the ship, a pair of thick pumps, which, from the rough usage they had received in scaling precipices and sliding down gorges, were so dilapidated as to be altogether unfit for use—so, at least, would have thought the generality of people, and so they most certainly were, when considered in the light of shoes. But things unservicable in one way, may with advantage be applied in another, that is, if one have genius enough for the purpose. This genius Marheyo possessed in a superlative degree, as he abundantly evinced by the use to which he put those sorely bruised and battered old shoes.

Every article, however trivial, which belonged to me, the natives appeared to regard as sacred; and I observed that for several days after becoming an inmate of the house, my pumps were suffered to remain, untouched, where I had first happened to throw them. I remembered, however, that after awhile I had missed them from their accustomed place; but the matter gave me no concern, supposing that Tinor—like any other tidy housewife, having come across them in some of her domestic occupations—had pitched the useless things out of the house. But I was soon undeceived.

One day I observed old Marheyo bustling about me with the bastón, me se presentó por sí sola la idea de que con ese delgado tubo podía hacerle al niño uno de esos mosquetes de juego con que había visto a veces a los chicos divertirse.

Sí yo hubiera tenido la más remota idea de la sensación que iba a producir ese artificio, desde luego que habría sacado patente de la invención. El niño se escapó corriendo con él, medio delirante de éxtasis, y veinte minutos después, me vi rodeado de una ruidosa multitud: venerables barbudos canosos, responsables padres de familia, valientes guerreros, matronas, jóvenes, muchachas y niños, todos trayendo en la mano trozos de bambú, y gritando por ser servidos antes.

Durante tres o cuatro horas estuve ocupado en fabricar cerbatanas, pero por fin traspasé mi buena voluntad y mi participación en el negocio a un muchacho de notable inteligencia, a quien pronto inicié en ese arte y misterio.

¡Tac, tac, tac!* resonó entonces por todo el valle. Duelos, escaramuzas, batallas campales, y combates generales se veían por todas partes. Acá, cuando uno andaba por un sendero a través de una espesa, caía en una emboscada artemosamente tendida, convertido en blanco de un grupo de mosqueteros cuyos miembros tatuados apenas se veían a través del follaje. Allá, uno era atacado por la intrépida guarnición de una casa, que le apuntaba con sus rifles de bambú por medio de las cañas verticales que componían sus tabiques. Más allá, disparaaba un destacamento de cazadores desde lo alto de un pai-pai. [163]

Hacia la conclusión de la guerra de las cerbatanas, me divertí infinitamente con un extraño capricho de Marheyo.

Cuando salí del barco, llevaba yo unos escarpines gruesos, que, por el rudo trato que habían recibido al subir precipicios y resbalar por gargantas, estaban tan destrozados que no servían en absoluto para el uso, o al menos, así lo había pensado la mayor parte de la gente, y así ocurría con toda seguridad si se consideraban en cuanto calzado. Pero las cosas inútiles en un sentido pueden aplicarse ven-tajosamente en otro sentido; esto es, si uno tiene suficiente genio para ello. Este genio, Marheyo lo poseía en grado superlativo, como lo evidenció de sobra por la utilidad que dio a esos viejos zapatos lamentablemente desgastados y maltratados.

Todo artículo que me perteneciera, por trivial que fuera, los indígenas parecían considerarlo como sagrado, y observé que durante varios días después de convertirme en habitante de la casa, se consentía que mis escarpines permanecieran sin tocar donde los eché la primera vez por casualidad. Recordé, sin embargo, que el cabo de algún tiempo los eché de menos en su lugar acostumbrado, pero el asunto no me preocupó, suponiendo que Tinor—como cualquier otra alma de casa pulera—al encontrárselos por delante en alguna de sus ocupaciones domésticas, había tirado de la casa aquellas cosas inútiles. Pero pronto salí de mi error.

Un día observé al viejo Marheyo afanándose a mi alrededor con
unusual activity, and to such a degree as almost to supersede Kory-Kory in the functions of his office. One moment he volunteered to trot off with me on his back to the stream; and when I refused, noways daunted by the repulse, he continued to frisk about me like a superannuated house-dog. I could not for the life of me conjecture what possessed the old gentleman, until at once, availing himself of the temporary absence of the household, he went through a variety of uncouth gestures, pointing eagerly down to my feet, then up to a little bundle, which swung from the ridge pole overhead. At last I caught a faint idea of his meaning, and motioned him to lower the package. He executed the order in the twinkling of an eye, and unrolling a piece of tappa, displayed to my astonished gaze the identical pumps which I thought had been destroyed long before.

I immediately comprehended his desire, and very generously gave him the shoes, which had become quite mouldy, wondering for what earthly purpose he could want them. The same afternoon I described the venerable warrior approaching the house, with a slow, stately gait, ear-rings in ears, and spear in hand, with this highly ornamental pair of shoes suspended from his neck by a strip of bark, and swinging backwards and forwards on his capacious chest. In the gala costume of the tasteful Marheyo, these calf-skin pendants ever after formed the most striking feature.

But to turn to something a little more important. Although the whole existence of the inhabitants of the valley seemed to pass away exempt from toil, yet there were some light employments which, if not exactly agreeable, were at all events a source of amusement. One of these, which I believe to have been the daily occupation of the headman, was the making of the native cloth, —tappa,— a kind of paper, much used in the islands. It is made thus.

In the manufacture of the beautiful white tappa generally worn on the Marquesan Islands, the preliminary operation consists in gathering a certain quantity of the young branches of the cloth-tree. The exterior green bark being pulled off as worthless, there remains a slender fibrous substance, which is carefully stripped from the stick, to which it closely adheres. When a sufficient quantity of it has been collected, the various strips are enveloped in a covering of large leaves, which the natives use precisely as we do wrapping-paper, and which are then laid in the bed of some running stream, with a heavy stone upon them, to press them down to the bottom. After a short time, to the action of the air, every distinct piece being attentively inspected, with a view of ascertaining whether it has yet been sufficiently affected by the operation. This is repeated again and again, until the desired result is obtained.

When the substance is in a proper state for the next process, it betrays evidences of incipient decomposition; the fibres are relaxed and softened, and rendered perfectly malleable. The different strips are now extended, one by one, in successive layers, upon some smooth surface—generally the prostrate trunk of a cocoanut tree—and the heap thus formed is subjected, to the action of the air, every distinct piece being attentively inspected, with a view of ascertaining whether it has yet been sufficiently affected by the operation. This is repeated again and again, until the desired result is obtained.

En la manufactura de la hermosa tappa blanca, usada generalmente en las Islas Marquesas, la operación preliminar consiste en reunir una cierta cantidad de ramas jóvenes del árbol del paño. Se arranca la corteza verde exterior por no tener valor, y queda una leve sustancia fibrosa, que se desprende cuidadosamente del tallo, al que se adhiere estrechamente. Cuando se reúne suficiente cantidad de ella, se envuelven todas las tiras en una cubierta de anchas hojas, que los indígenas usan exactamente igual que nosotros el papel de envolver, y que se sujetan con unas pocas vueltas de cuerda pasadas alrededor. Luego se pone el paquete en el cauce de algún arroyo que corra, con una pesada piedra encima, para evitar que se lo lleve el agua. Después de permanecer dos o tres días en ese estado, se retira y se expone, durante un breve tiempo, a la acción del aire, con el fin de comprobar si ya está suficientemente afectado por la operación. Eso se repite una y otra vez, hasta que se obtiene el resultado deseado. [165]

Cuando la sustancia está en estado apropiado para la etapa siguiente, muestra evidencias de una incipiente descomposición: las fibras están relajadas y ablandadas, y se han vuelto perfectamente flexibles. Entonces se extienden las diferentes tiras, una por una, en sucesivas capas, sobre alguna superficie lisa —generalmente, el tronco caído de un coco— y el montón así formado se somete, a cada nuevo aumento, a un moderado golpeo, con una especie de mazo de madera, aplicado con calma. Este mazo está hecho de una madera dura y pesada parecida al ébano; tiene doce pulgadas de largo, y quizá dos de ancho, con un mango redondeado en un extremo, y en su forma es un exacto equivalente de uno de nuestros suavizadores de navajas, con cuatro lados. Las superficies planas del instrumento están marcadas por paralelos surcos someros, que
adapted to the several stages of the operation. These marks produce the corduroy sort of stripes discernible in the tappa in its finished state. After being beaten in the manner I have described, the material soon becomes blended in one mass, which, moistened occasionally with water, is at intervals hammered out, by a kind of gold-beating process, to any degree of thinness required. In this way the cloth is easily made to vary in strength and thickness, so as to suit the numerous purposes to which it is applied.

When the operation last described has been concluded, the new-made tappa is spread out on the grass to bleach and dry, and soon becomes of a dazzling whiteness. Sometimes, in the first stages of the manufacture, the substance is impregnated with a vegetable juice, which gives it a permanent colour. A rich brown and a bright yellow are occasionally seen, but the simple taste of the Typee people inclines them to prefer the natural tint.

The notable wife of Kamehameha, the renowned conqueror and king of the Sandwich Islands, used to pride herself in the skill she displayed in dyeing her tappa with contrasting colours disposed in regular figures; and, in the midst of the innovations of the times, was regarded, towards the decline of her life, as a lady of the old school, clinging as she did to the national cloth, in preference to the frippery of the European calicoes. But the art of printing the tappa is unknown upon the Marquesan Islands. In passing along the valley, I was often attracted by the noise of the mallet, which, when employed in the manufacture of the cloth produces at every stroke of its hard, heavy wood, a clear, ringing, and musical sound, capable of being heard at a great distance. When several of these implements happen to be in operation at the same time, near one another, the effect upon the ear of a person, at a little distance, is really charming.

The history of a day is the history of a life. I will, therefore, as briefly as I can, describe one of our days in the valley. To begin with the morning. We were not very early risers—the sun would be shooting its golden spikes above the Happar mountain, ere I threw aside my tappa robe, and girding my long tunic about my waist, sallied out with Fayaway and Kory-Kory, and the rest of the household, and bent my steps towards the stream. Here we found congregated all those who dwelt in our section of the valley; and here we bathed with them. The fresh morning air and the cool flowing waters put both soul and body in a glow, and after a half-hour employed in this recreation, we sauntered back to the house—Tinor and Marheyo gathering dry sticks by the way for fire-wood; some of the young men laying the cocoanut trees under contribution as they passed beneath them; while Kory-Kory played his outlandish pranks for my particular diversion, and Fayaway and I, not arm in arm to be sure, but sometimes hand in hand, strolled along, with feelings of perfect charity for all the world, and especial good-will towards each other.

Our morning meal was soon prepared. The islanders are somewhat abstemious at this repast; reserving the more powerful efforts of their appetite to a later period of the day. For my own part, with the assistance of my valet, who, as I have before stated, varian en profundidad en sus diversos lados, para adaptarse a las diversas fases de la operación. Esas marcas producen esa especie de rayas de pana que se observan en la tappa en su estado acabado. Después de ser golpeado del modo que he descrito, el material pronto queda mezclado en una masa, que humedece de vez en cuando con agua, se martilla poco a poco por una especie de proceso de batihojas, hasta cualquier grado de delgadez requerido. De ese modo se hace fácilmente que la tela varie en resistencia y espesor, para adaptarse a los numerosos propósitos a que se aplica.

La notable esposa de Kammahamnaha, el famoso conquistador y rey de las Islas Sandwich, solía enorgullecerse de la habilidad que desplegaba al teñir su tappa en colores contrastados dispuestos en figuras regulares, y en medio de las innovaciones de los tiempos, fue considerada, hacia el ocaso de su vida, como una dama de la antigua escuela, por aferirse al paño nacional en preferencia a las fruslerías de las indígenas europeas. Pero el arte de estampar la tappa es desconocido en las Islas Marquesas. Al pasar por el valle, muchas veces me atraía el ruido del mazo, que, cuando se usa en la manufactura de la tela, produce, a cada golpe de su madera dura y pesada, un sonido claro, vibrante y musical, capaz de ser oído a gran distancia. Cuando ocurre que varios de esos instrumentos están en uso al mismo tiempo, unos cerca de otros, es realmente cantador el efecto que producen en el oído de una persona, a corta distancia. [166]

Nada puede ser más uniforme y sin diversidad que la vida de los taipis: un tranquilo día de comodidad y felicidad sucede a otro en semejante sucesión; y con estos salvajes sin complicaciones, la narración de un día es la narración de la vida. Por consiguiente, describiré uno de nuestros días en el valle, con tanta brevedad como pueda.

Empecemos con la mañana. No madrugábamos mucho: el sol dispersaba sus duras lanzas por encima de la montaña happeanantes que yo echara a un lado mi curtienda de tappa, y ciñéndome a la cinturita mis larga túnica, saliera con Fayaway, Kory-Kory y el resto de la casa, dirigiendo mis pasos hacia el arroyo. Allí encontrábamos reunidos a todos los que vivían en nuestra parte del valle, y allí nos bañábamos con ellos. El fresco aire de la mañana y las frescas aguas fluyentes hacían resplandecer el alma y el cuerpo, y al cabo de media hora empleada en este recreo, volvíamos paseando a la casa: Tinor y Marheyo recogiendo por el camino palos secos para hacer fuego; algunos de los jóvenes sometiendo a contribución a los cotecitos al paso bajo ellos, mientras Kory-Kory hacía sus extrañas pantomimas para mi personal diversión, y Fayaway y yo les [167] seguíamos despacio, no del brazo, desde luego, pero a veces de la mano, con sentimientos de completo afecto para el mundo entero, y especialmente buena voluntad recíproca.

Nuestra comida matinal se preparaba pronto. Los isleños son un tanto frugalos en esta comida, reservando los más poderosos esfuerzos de su apetito para una hora posterior del día. Por mi parte, con ayuda de mi sirviente, que, según he declarado ya, siempre actuaba...
always officiated as spoon on these occasions, I ate sparingly from one of Tinor’s trenchers, of poe-poé; which was devoted exclu-

sively for my own use, being mixed with the milky meat of ripe cocoanut. A section of a roasted bread-fruit, a small cake of ‘Amar,’ or a mess of ‘Cokoo,’ two or three bananas, or a mammee-apple; an annuee, or some other agreeable and nutritious fruit served by day to day to diversify the meal, which was finished by tossing off the liquid contents of a young cocoanut or two.

While partaking of this simple repast, the inmates of Marheyo’s house, after the style of the ancient Romans, reclined in sociable groups upon the divan of mats, and digestion was promoted by cheerful conversation.

After the morning meal was concluded, pipes were lighted; and among them my own especial pipe, a present from the noble Mehevi. The islanders, who only smoke a whiff or two at a time, and at long intervals, and who keep their pipes going from hand to hand continually, regarded my systematic smoking of four or five pipefuls of tobacco in succession, as something quite wonderful. When two or three pipes had circulated freely, the company gradually broke up. Marheyo went to the little hut he was forever building. Tinor began to inspect her rolls of tappa, or employed her busy fingers in plaiting grass-mats. The girls anointed themselves with their fragrant oils, dressed their hair, or looked over their curious finery, and compared together their ivory trinkets, fashioned out of boar’s tusks or whale’s teeth. The young men and warriors produced their spears, paddles, canoe-gear, battle-club, and war-conchs, and occupied themselves in carving, all sorts of figures upon them with pointed bits of shell or flint, and adorning them, especially the war-conchs, with tassels of braided bark and tufts of human hair. Some, immediately after eating, threw themselves once more upon the inviting mats, and resumed the employment of the previous night, sleeping as soundly as if they had not closed their eyes for a week. Others sallied out into the groves, for the purpose of gathering fruit or fibres of bark and leaves; the last two being in constant requisition, and applied to a hundred uses. A few, perhaps, among the girls, would slip into the woods after flowers, or repair to the shell or flint, and adorning them, especially the war-conchs, with conch or pedernal, and in adornarlos, sobre todo las caracolas de gue-

rra, con borlas de corteza trenzada y mechones de pelo humano. Algunos, inmediatamente después de comer, se echaban una vez más en las incitantes esteras, y continuaban su tarea de la noche anterior, durmiendo tan saludablemente como si no hubieran cerra-

do los ojos en una semana. [168] Otros se marchaban a los bosques, con intención de recoger frutas o fibras de corteza y hojas, cosas ambas que eran constantemente requeridas y aplicadas para cien usos. Unas pocas de las muchachas, quizá, se desplazaban a los bosques en busca de flores, o acudían al arroyo con pequeñas calabazas o cas-
cos de coco, para pulirlos friccionándolos en el agua con una piedra lisa. En realidad, esa inocente gente no parecía perpleja para encon-
trar algo en que ocupar el tiempo, y no sería tarea fácil enumerar todas sus ocupaciones, o mejor dicho, sus placeres.

Mis mañanas, yo las pasaba de diversos modos. A veces va-
gaba de casa en casa, seguro de recibir una cordial bienvenida dondequiera que fuera, o de bosque en bosque, y de un lugar umbrío en otro, en compañía de Kory-Kory y Fayaway, y de una bajá chusma de alegres jóvenes ociosos. A veces estaba dema-
siado indolente para hacer ejercicio, y aceptando una de las mu-
chas invitaciones que recibía continuamente, me ocupaba gratamente en observar lo que hacían los que me rodeaban, o toma-
ba parte yo mismo en ello. Cuando decidía hacer esto último, el placer de los isleños no tenía límites, y siempre había una multi-
tud de competidores por el honor de instruirme en cualquier in-
dustria determinada. Pronto llegué a ser un experto en hacer tappa —sabia trenzar una honda con hierba igual que el mejor de ellos,— y una vez, con mi cuchillo, tallé el mango de una jaba-
linal con tal exquisitza en que no dudo que desde entonces Karnunu, su propietario, lo conserva como sorprendente mue-
stra de mi habilidad. Al acercarse el mediodía, todos los que ha-
bian salido vagando de nuestra vivienda, empezaban a regresar, y cuando llegaba del todo esa hora, apenas se oía un ruido en el valle: un profundo sueño caía sobre todos. La deliciosa siesta rara vez era omitida, salvo por el viejo Marheyo, que era un personaje tan excéntrico que parecía no estar gobernado por ningún principio,
cording to the humour of the moment, slept, ate, or tinkered away at his little hut, without regard to the proprieties of time or place. Frequently he might have been seen taking a nap in the sun at noon-day, or a bath in the stream of mid-night. Once I beheld him perched eighty feet from the ground, in the tuft of a coconut tree, smoking; and often I saw him standing up to the waist in water, engaged in plucking out the stray hairs of his beard, using a piece of muscle-shell for tweezers.

The noon-tide slumber lasted generally an hour and a half; very often longer; and after the sleepers had arisen from their mats they again had recourse to their pipes, and then made preparations for the most important meal of the day.

I, however, like those gentleman of leisure who breakfast at home and dine at their club, almost invariably, during my intervals of health, enjoyed the afternoon repast with the bachelor chiefs of the Ti, who were always rejoiced to see me, and lavishly spread before me all the good things which their larder afforded. Mehevi generally introduced among other dainties a baked pig, an article which I have every reason to suppose was provided for my sole gratification.

The Ti was a right jovial place. It did my heart, as well as my body, good to visit it. Secure from female intrusion, there was no restraint upon the hilarity of the warriors, who, like the gentle

After spending a considerable portion of the afternoon at the Ti, I usually found myself, as the cool of the evening came on, either sailing on the little lake with Fayaway, or bathing in the water of the stream with a number of the savages, who, at this hour, always repaired thither. As the shadows of night approached Marheyo's household were once more assembled under his roof: tapers were lit, long curious chants were raised, interminable stories were told (for which one present was little the wiser), and all sorts of social festivities served to while away the time.

The young girls very often danced by moonlight in front of their dwellings. There are a great variety of these dances, in which

I presume this might be translated into ‘Strong Waters’. Arva is the name bestowed upon a root the properties of which are both inebriating and medicinal. ‘Wai’ is the Marquesan word for water.

Las muchachas, muy a menudo, bailaban a la luz de la luna frente a sus casas. Hay una gran variedad de esas danzas en que, sin embargo, nunca vi que los hombres tomaran parte. Todas ellas consisten en asuntos activos, agitados, perversos, en que se pone en ejercicio todos sus miembros. Efectivamente, las muchachas de las Marquesas bailan en teras, por decirlo así: no sólo bailan sus pies, sino sus brazos, sus dedos, e incluso sus mismos ojos parecen bailar en la cara.

Si no había alguna festividad especial, los habitantes de la casa de Marheyo se retiraban a sus esteras poco después de anochecer, pero no para pasar toda la [170] noche, pues después de dormir levemente un rato, se volvían a levantar, volvían a encender las velas, y hacían la tercera y última comida del día, en que sólo se tomaba poi-poi; y luego, después de inhalar una chupada narcótica de una pipa de tabaco, se preparaban para la gran tarea nocturna, el sueño. Entre los de las Marquesas, se le podría llamar el gran asunto de la vida, pues pasan una gran porción del tiempo en brazos de Somnus. La robustez natural de su constitución no se muestra más acentuadamente en ninguna otra cosa que en la cantidad de sueño que son capaces de aguantar. Para muchos de ellos, efectivamente, la vida es poco más que una siesta deliciosa, interrumpida de vez en cuando. [171]

(*) Balneario inglés en Gloucestershire, descubierto en 1716.
CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE

THE SPRING OF ARVA WAI—REMARKABLE MONUMENTAL REMAINS—SOME IDEAS WITH REGARD TO THE HISTORY OF THE PI-PIS FOUND IN THE VALLEY

ALMOST every country has its medicinal springs famed for their healing virtues. The Cheltenham of Typee is embosomed in the deepest solitude, and but seldom receives a visitor. It is situated remote from any dwelling, a little way up the mountain, near the head of the valley; and you approach it by a pathway shaded by the most beautiful foliage, and adorned with a thousand fragrant plants. The mineral waters of Arva Wai* ozoo forth from the crevices of a rock, and gliding down its mossy side, fall at last, in many clustering drops, into a natural basin of stone fringed round with grass and dewy-looking little violet-coloured flowers, as fresh and beautiful as the perpetual moisture they enjoy can make them.

The water is held in high estimation by the islanders, some of whom consider it an agreeable as well as a medicinal beverage; they bring it from the mountain in their calabashes, and store it away beneath heaps of leaves in some shady nook near the house. Old Marheyo had a great love for the waters of the spring. Every now and then he lugged off to the mountain a great round demijohn of a calabash, and, panting with his exertions, brought it back filled with its darling fluid.

The water tasted like a solution of a dozen disagreeable things, and was sufficiently nauseous to have made the fortune of the proprietor, had the spa been situated in the midst of any civilized community.

As I am no chemist, I cannot give a scientific analysis of the water. All I know about the matter is, that one day Marheyo in my presence poured out the last drop from his huge calabash, and I observed at the bottom of the vessel a small quantity of gravelly sediment very much resembling our common sand. Whether this is always found in the water, and gives it its peculiar flavour and virtues, or whether its presence was merely incidental, I was not able to ascertain.

One day in returning from this spring by a circuitous path, I came upon a scene which reminded me of Stonehenge and the ancient architectural labours of the Druids.

CAPÍTULO XXI

LA FUENTE DE ARVA WAI. NOTABLES RESTOS MONUMENTALES. ALGUNAS IDEAS RESPECTO A LA HISTORIA DE LOS PAI-PAI'S ENCONTRADOS EN EL VALLE

Casi todos los países tienen sus fuentes medicinales famosas por sus virtudes curativas. El Cheltenham* de Taipi está en el seno de la más profunda soledad, y sólo raramente recibe algún visitante. Está situado lejos de toda vivienda, subiendo un poco por la montaña, cerca del fondo del valle; se llega a él por un sendero sombreado por el más hermoso follaje y adornado con mil plantas fragantes. Las aguas minerales de Arva Wai** rezuman de las grietas de una roca, y resbalando por su flanco musgoso, acaban por caer, en muchas gotas reunidas, a un hueco natural de piedra, bordeado alrededor con hierba y florecillas parecidas a violetas que parecen llenas de rocío, y tan frescas y hermosas como puede hacerlas la perpetua humedad de que disfrutan.

Esa agua es tenida en alta estima por los isleños, algunos de los cuales la consideran una bebida agradable además de medicinal: la bajan de la montaña [172] en sus calabazas, y la almacenan bajo montones de hojas en algún rincón sombrío cerca de la casa. El viejo Marheyo tenía gran cariño a las aguas de la fuente. De vez en cuando se llevaba a la montaña una gran damajuana redonda de calabaza, y, jadeando de fatiga, volvía a traerla llena de su fluido predilecto.

El agua sabía a disolución de una docena de cosas desagradables, y era lo suficientemente nauseabunda como para haber hecho la fortuna de su propietario, si el manantial hubiera estado en medio de cualquier comunidad civilizada.

Como no soy químico, no puedo dar un análisis científico del agua. Todo lo que sé del asunto es que un día Marheyo vertió en mi presencia la última gota de su gran calabaza, y observé en el fondo de la vasija una pequeña cantidad de sedimento de cascojuy, muy parecido a nuestra arena común. No fui capaz de averiguar si se encuentra siempre en el agua, dándole su peculiar sabor y virtud, o si su presencia era meramente incidental.

Un día, volviendo de esa fuente por un sendero que daba un rodeo, llegué a un lugar que me recordó Stonehenge y los trabajos arquitectónicos de los druidas.

En la base de una de las montañas, y rodeada por todas partes por densos bosquecillos, se eleva una serie de vastas terrazas de piedra, grada a grada, en una considerable distancia, por la ladera arriba. Esas terrazas no pueden tener menos de cien yardas de largo y veinte de ancho. Su magnitud, sin embargo, es menos sorprendente que el inmenso tamaño de los bloques que las componen. Algunas de las piedras, de forma alargada, tienen de diez a quince pies de largo, y de cinco a seis de ancho. Sus vertientes son muy lisas, pero, aunque cuadradas y de forma muy regular, no tienen señal de cincel. Están superpuestas sin cemento, y acá y allá, muestran algunos huecos por en medio. La terraza superior y la de abajo son algo peculiares en su construcción. Ambas tienen una depresión cuadrangular en el centro, dejando el resto de la terraza elevado a varios pies por encima. Por en medio de estas piedras han echado raíz inmensos árboles, y sus anchas ramas, extendidas hasta muy lejos, y entrelazándose, sostienen un doble casi impenetrable al sol. Crestando sobre la mayor parte de ellas, y trepando de una a otra, hay una selva de viña silvestre, en cuyo nudo abrazo quedan medio escondidas muchas de las piedras, mientras en algunos sitios las recubre una densa espesa de arbustos. Hay un sendero silvestre que cruza oblicuamente dos...
which obliquely crosses two of these terraces; and so profound is the shade, so dense the vegetation, that a stranger to the place might pass along it without being aware of their existence.

These structures bear every indication of a very high antiquity and Kory-Kory, who was my authority in all matters of scientific research, gave me to understand that they were coeval with the creation of the world; that the great gods themselves were the builders; and that they would endure until time shall be no more. Kory-Kory’s prompt explanation and his attributing the work to a divine origin, at once convinced me that neither he nor the rest of his country-men knew anything about them.

As I gazed upon this monument, doubtless the work of an extinct and forgotten race, thus buried in the green nook of an island at the ends of the earth, the existence of which was yesterday unknown, a stronger feeling of awe came over me than if I had stood musing at the mighty base of the Pyramid of Cheops. There are no inscriptions, no sculpture, no clue, by which to conjecture its history, nothing but the dumb stones. How many generations of the majestic trees which overshadow them have grown and flourished and decayed since first they were erected!

These remains naturally suggest many interesting reflections. They establish the great age of the island, an opinion which the builders of theories concerning the creation of the various groups in the South Seas are not always inclined to admit. For my own part, I think it just as probable that human beings were living in the valleys of the Marquesas three thousand years ago as that they were inhabiting the land of Egypt. The origin of the island of Nukuheva cannot be imputed to the coral insect; for indefatigable as that wonderful creature is, it would be hardly muscular enough to pile rocks one upon the other more than three thousand feet above the level of the sea. That the land may have been thrown up by a submarine volcano is as possible as anything else. No one can make an affidavit to the contrary, and therefore I still say nothing against the supposition: indeed, were geologists to assert that the whole continent of America had in like manner been formed by the simultaneous projection of a train of Etnas laid under the water all the way from the North Pole to the parallel of Cape Horn, I am the last man in the world to contradict them.

I have already mentioned that the dwellings of the islanders were almost invariably built upon massive stone foundations, which they call pi-pis. The dimensions of these, however, as well as of the stones composing them, are comparatively small: but there are other and larger erections of a similar description comprising the ‘morais’, or burying grounds, and festival-places, in nearly all the valleys of the island. Some of these piles are so extensive, and so great a degree of labour and skill must have been requisite in constructing them, that I can scarcely believe they were built by the ancestors of the present inhabitants. If indeed they were, the race has sadly deteriorated in their knowledge of the mechanic arts. To say nothing of their habitual indolence, by what contrivance within the reach of so simple a people could such enormous masses have been moved or fixed in their places? and how could they with their rude implements have chiselled and hammered them into shape?

All of these larger pi-pis — like that of the Hoolah Hoolah ground in the Typee valley — bore incontestable marks of great age; and I am disposed to believe that their erection may be ascribed to the same race of men who were the builders of the still more ancient remains I have just described.

According to Kory-Kory’s account, the pi-pi upon which stands the Hoolah Hoolah ground was built a great many moons ago, under the direction of Monoo, a great chief and warrior, and, as it would appear, master-mason among the Typees. It was erected for de esas terrazas, y tan profunda es la sombra y tan densa la vegetación, que quien no conociera el sitio podría andar a lo largo de él sin darse cuenta de que existen tales terrazas. [173]

Esas estructuras dan buena señal de una larga antigüedad, y Kory-Kory, que era mi autoridad en todos los asuntos de investigación científica, me dio a entender que eran coetáneas de la creación del mundo; que los grandes dioses, en persona, eran sus constructores, y que permanecerían hasta que no hubiera más tiempo. La pronta explicación de Kory-Kory, y el atribuir el trabajo a un origen divino, me convenció inmediatamente de que ni él ni el resto de sus compatriotas sabían nada sobre esas construcciones.

Al observar tal monumento, sin duda obra de una raza exinguída y olvidada, y sepultado así en el verde rincón de una isla en los confines de la tierra, cuya existencia era desconocida ayer, me invidoió un sentimiento de intimidación más fuerte que si me hubiera puesto a meditar en la recia base de la pirámide de Cheops. No hay inscripciones, ni esculturas, ni claves con que conjeturar su historia: nada más que las mudas piedras. ¡Cuántas generaciones de esos majestuosos árboles que les dan sombra han crecido y prosperado y decaydo desde cuando se erigio!

Esos restos sugieren de modo natural muchas reflexiones interesantes. Establecen la gran vejez de la isla, opinión que no siempre se ha inclinado a admitir los forjadores de teorías sobre la creación de los diversos archipiélagos del Mar del Sur. Por mi parte, considero probable que vivieran seres humanos en los valles de las Marquesas hace tres mil años, del mismo modo que habitan entonces la tierra de Egipto. El origen de la isla de Nukuheva no se puede atribuir al animalillo del coral, pues a pesar de lo infatigable que es esa admirable criatura, difícilmente tendría tanta fuerza como para elevar rocas sobre rocas a más de tres mil pies sobre el nivel del mar. Que esa tierra haya sido lanzada hacia arriba por un volcán submarino, es cosa tan probable como cualquier otra. Nadie puede dar garantía de lo contrario, y por tanto no diré nada contra esa suposición: efectivamente, si los geólogos afirmaran que todo el continente americano, de modo análogo, ha sido formado por la explosión simultánea de una fila de Etnas puestos bajo el agua a todo lo largo desde el Polo Norte hasta el paralelo del Cabo de Hornos, yo sería el último hombre del mundo que les contradijería.

Ya he mencionado que las viviendas de los indígenas estaban casi siempre construidas sobre macizos cimientos de piedra, que llaman pai-pai. No obstante, sus dimensiones, así como las de las piedras que las componen, son relativamente pequeñas, pero hay otras construcciones mayores, de carácter semejante, que incluyen los moral, o cementerios y lugares de festivales, en casi todos los valles de la isla. Algunas de esas acumulaciones son tan extensas y han tenido que [174] requerir tal grado de esfuerzo y habilidad para su construcción, que apenas puedo creer que fueran erigidas por los antepasados de los actuales habitantes. Sí, en efecto, ha sido así, la raza ha decaído lamentablemente en su conocimiento de las artes mecánicas. Por no hablar de su habitual indolencia, ¿con qué artificio, al alcance de un pueblo tan sencillo, han podido moverse tan enormes masas, para colocarlas en su sitio? ¿Y cómo, con sus toscos instrumentos, han podido cincelarlas y desbastarlas hasta darles su forma?

Todos esos pai-pai mayores — como los del terreno hula-hula en el valle de Taipi — ostentan señales incontestables de mucha vejez, y estoy dispuesto a creer que su erección puede atribuirse a la misma raza de los hombres que fueron los constructores de los restos aún más antiguos que acabo de describir.

Conforme a la explicación de Kory-Kory, el pai-pai en que está el terreno hula-hula fue construido hace muchísimas lunas, bajo la dirección de Monu, un gran jefe y guerrero, y al parecer maestro de obras entre los taipis. Se erigió con el propósito expreso a que se
the express purpose to which it is at present devoted, in the incredibly short period of one sun; and was dedicated to the immortal wooden idols by a grand festival, which lasted ten days and nights.

Among the smaller pi-pis, upon which stand the dwelling-houses of the natives, I never observed any which intimated a recent erection. There are in every part of the valley a great many of these massive stone foundations which have no houses upon them. This is vastly convenient, for whenever an enterprising islander chooses to emigrate a few hundred yards from the place where he was born, all he has to do in order to establish himself in some new locality, is to select one of the many unappropriated pi-pis, and without further ceremony pitch his bamboo tent upon it.

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO

PREPARATIONS FOR A GRAND FESTIVAL IN THE VALLEY—STRANGE DOINGS IN THE TABOO GROVES—MONUMENT OF CALABASHES—GALA COSTUME OF THE TYPEE DAMSELS—DEPARTURE FOR THE FESTIVAL

FROM the time that my lameness had decreased I had made a daily practice of visiting Mehevi at the Ti, who invariably gave me a most cordial reception. I was always accompanied in these excursions by Fayaway and the ever-present Kory-Kory. The former, as soon as we reached the vicinity of the Ti—which was rigorously tabooed to the whole female sex— withdrew to a neighbouring hut, as if her feminine delicacy ‘restricted’ her from approaching a habitation which might be regarded as a sort of Bachelor’s Hall.

And in good truth it might well have been so considered. Although it was the permanent residence of several distinguished chiefs, and of the noble Mehevi in particular, it was still at certain seasons the favourite haunt of all the jolly, talkative, and elderly savages of the vale, who resorted thither in the same way that similar characters frequent a tavern in civilized countries. There they would remain hour after hour, chatting, smoking, eating poi-poi, or busily engaged in sleeping for the good of their constitutions.

This building appeared to be the head-quarters of the valley, where all flying rumours concentrated; and to have seen it filled, from which the chief would press me to appear, and then retiring for an instant, return with some savoury regale (to) me, was to conceive some sort of the very desire which we have thought it a kind of savage Exchange, where the rise and fall of the passions, while multitudes were continually coming and going, one would remain hour after hour, chatting, smoking, eating poi-poi, or laboriously ocu-

One day, on drawing near to the Ti, I observed that the expressive visage of the chief himself was sure to be found enjoying his ‘otium cum dignitate’—upon the luxurious mats which covered the floor. Whenever I made my appearance he invariably rose, and like a gentleman in the building, the chief himself would always invite me to the regale himself. To tell the truth, Mehevi was indebted to the excellency of his viands for the honour of my repeated visits—a matter which cannot appear singular, when it is borne in mind that bachelors, all the world over, are famous for serving up exceptionable regales.

CHAPTER XXII

PREPARATIVOS PARA UN GRANDIOSO FESTIVAL EN EL VALLE. EXTRAVÍAS ACTIVIDADES EN LOS BOSQUECILLOS TABÚ MONUMENTO DE CALABAZAS. ATUENDO DE GALA DE LAS DAMISELAS DE TAÏ. PARTIDA HACIA EL FESTIVAL

Desde el momento en que disminuyó mi invalidez, adopté la costumbre cotidiana de visitar en el Ti a Mehevi, que me daba sin falta un recibimiento cordialísimo. En esas excursiones siempre iba acompañado por Fayaway y el continuamente presente Kory-Kory. Aquel día, tan pronto como llegábamos cerca del Ti —que era rigurosamente tabú para todo el sexo femenino—, se retiraba a una cabaña próxima, como si su delicadeza femenina le impidiera acercarse a una vivienda que podría considerarse como una especie de Sala de Los Solteros.

Y se habría considerado así con toda razón. Aunque era la residencia permanente de varios jefes distinguidos, y del noble Mehevi en particular, también era en ciertas épocas el lugar favorito de reunión de todos los alegres y charlatanes salvajes ancianos del valle que acudían allí del mismo modo que los personajes semejantes en países civilizados frecuentan una taberna. Allí permanecían horas y horas, charlando, fumando, comiendo poi-poi, o laboriosamente ocupados en dormir para bien de sus naturalezas.

Ese edificio parecía ser el cuartel general del valle, donde se concentraban todos los rumores voladores; y al verlo lleno de una multitud de indígenas, todos varones, conversando en corrillos animados, mientras otros muchos entraban y salían continuamente, uno lo habría considerado como una especie de Bolsa de los salvajes, donde se discutían el alza y la baja de los valores poliesios.

Mehevi actuaba como supremo señor del lugar, pasando la mayor parte de su tiempo allí; y a menudo en determinadas horas del día cuando lo abandonaban casi todos los demás, excepito los centenarios de pátina verde, que eran piezas fijas del edificio, era seguro que se encontraría al jefe en persona disfrutando su otium cum dignitate en las deliciosas esteras que cubrían el suelo. Siempre que aparecía yo, se levantaba sin falta, y como un caballero que hace los honores de su casa, me invitaba a acodarme donde me gustara más: gritaba ¡tamari! (muchacho), y aparecía un muchachito que, retirándose un momento, volvía con algún plato sabroso que, el jefe me apremiaba a saborear. Para decir la verdad, Mehevi debía a la excelencia de sus manjares el honor de mis visitas tan repetidas, cosa que no puede pa-rer rara si se tiene en cuenta que los solterones, en todo el mundo, son famosos por servir comidas impecables.

Un día, al acercarme al Ti, observé que se hacían amplios regales (to) es regular, en el sentido de agasajar, banquearse, tratar a cuerpo de rey, y además deleitar, entretenere. El uso común de regular es to give [un regalo] y, en sentido figurado, to flatter, caress; el reflexivo regalse es to indulge oneself.
sive preparations were going forward, plainly betokening some approaching festival. Some of the symptoms reminded me of the stir produced among the scullions of a large hotel, where a grand jubilee dinner is about to be given. The natives were hurriedly about hither and thither, engaged in various duties, some lugging off to the stream enormous hollow bamboos, for the purpose of filling them with water; others chasing furious-looking hogs through the bushes, in their endeavours to capture them; and numbers employed in kneading great mountains of poi-poi heaped up in huge wooden vessels.

After observing these lively indications for a while, I was attracted to a neighbouring grove by a prodigious squeaking which I heard there. On reaching the spot I found it proceeded from a large hog which a number of natives were forcibly holding to the earth, while a muscular fellow, armed with a bludgeon, was ineffectually aiming murderous blows at the skull of the unfortunate porker. Again and again he missed his writhing and struggling victim, but though puffing and panting with his exertions, he still continued them; and after striking a sufficient number of blows to have demolished an entire drove of oxen, with one crashing stroke he laid him dead at his feet.

Without letting any blood from the body, it was immediately carried to a fire which had been kindled near at hand and four savages taking hold of the carcass by its legs, passed it rapidly to and fro in the flames. In a moment the smell of burning bristles betrayed the object of this procedure. Having got thus far in the matter, the body was removed to a little distance and, being disembowelled, the entrails were laid aside as choice parts, and the whole carcass thoroughly washed with water. An ample thick green cloth, composed of the long thick leaves of a species of palm-tree, ingeniously tacked together, was next spread on the heated stones at the bottom, and covered with thick layers of leaves, the whole being quickly hidden from sight by a mound of earth raised over it.

Such is the summary style in which the Typeses convert perversely-minded and rebellious hogs into the most docile and amiable pork; a morsel of which placed on the tongue melts like a soft smile from the lips of Beauty.

I commend then peculiar mode of proceeding to the consideration of all butchers, cooks, and housewives. The hapless porker whose fate I have just rehearsed, was not the only one who suffered in that memorable day. Many a dismal grunt, many an imploring squeak, proclaimed what was going on throughout the whole extent of the valley; and I verily believe the first-born of every litter perished before the setting of that fatal sun.

The scene around the Ti was now most animated. Hogs and poi-poi were baking in numerous ovens, which, heaped up with fresh earth into slight elevations, looked like so many anthills. Scores of the savages were vigorously plying their stone pestles in preparing masses of poi-poi, and numbers were gathering green bread-fruit and young cocoanuts in the surrounding groves; when an exceeding great multitude, with a view of encouraging the rest in their labours, stood still, and kept shouting most lustily without intermission.

It is a peculiarity among these people, that, when engaged in an employment, they always make a prodigious fuss about it. So seldom do they ever exert themselves, that when they do work they seem determined that so meritorious an action shall not escape the observation of those around it, for example, they have occasion to preparativos, dando claras señales de algún festival que se acercaba. Algunos síntomas me recordaron la agitación producida entre los pinches de un gran hotel donde se va a dar una gran comida de jubileo. Los indígenas se apresuraban de acá para allá, ocupados en diversas tareas; algunos arrastrando al arroyo enormes bambúes huecos, con la intención de llenarlos de agua; otros, persiguiendo cerdos de aspecto enfurcedo a través de las espesuras, con afán de capturárselos, y muchos, empleados en amasar grandes montañas de poi-poi amontonadas en grandes vasijas de madera.

Tras observar un rato esas vivaces indicaciones, me atrajo a un bosque cercano el prodigioso gruñir que oí en él. Al alcanzar el lugar, encontré que lo producía un enorme cerdo al que unos cuantos indígenas sujetaban a la fuerza al suelo, mientras un tipo forzado, armado de una porra, dirigía inútilmente golpes asesinos contra el cráneo del infortunado puerco. Una vez y otra fallaba a su víctima, que luchaba y se retorcía, pero seguía dando golpes, aunque resoplando y jadeando con el esfuerzo; tras lanzar suficientes envites como para desmembrar toda una manada de bueyes, con un golpe aplastante le dejó muerto a sus pies.

Sin dejar que se le derramara sangre del cuerpo, inmediatamente lo transportaron a una hoguera que se había encendido allí cerca, y cuatro salvajes, [177] agarrando el cadáver por las patas, lo pasaron rápidamente de un lado a otro sobre las llamas. En un instante, el olor a cerdas quemadas indicó el objetivo de ese proceder. Llegados a ese punto, se apartó el cuerpo a cierta distancia, y una vez destripado se dejaron a un lado las entrañas como partes selectas, y se lavó cuidadosamente con agua el cadáver en canal. Entonces extendieron por tierra un amplio y espeso paño verde, compuesto con hojas, largas y gruesas, de una especie de palma, ingeniosamente prendidas con pequeños alfileres de bambú, y en él se envolvió cuidadosamente al cerdo, llevándolo a un horno previamente preparado para recibirlo. Allí lo pusieron en seguida en las recalentadas piedras del fondo, y lo cubrieron con espesas capas de hojas, tapando rápidamente todo ello con un montón de tierra que elevaron encima.

Tan es el procedimiento sumario con que los taipis convierten a los cochinos perversos y rebeldes en el más dócil y amable asado de puerco, un bocado del cual, al ponserse en la lengua, se funde como una blanda sonrisa de los labios de la Belleza.

Recomiendo ese peculiar modo de proceder a la consideración de todos los carniceros, cocineros y amas de casa. El desgraciado puerco cuyo destino acabo de contar, no fue el único que sufrió en ese día memorable. Muchos lúgubres gruñidos, muchos chillidos implorantes proclamaron lo que ocurría en toda la extensión del valle; y estoy seguro de que el primogénito de cada lechigada pereció antes de ponerse el sol de aquel día fatal.

La escena en torno al Ti se animó mucho entonces. Se asaban cerdos y se cocía poi-poi en numerosos hornos que, recubiertos con montones de tierra fresca en leves elevaciones, parecían hormigueros. Docenas de salvajes aplicaban vigorosamente sus almirices de piedra preparando grandes masas de poi-poi, y otros muchos amontonaban frutos del árbol del pan, aún verdes, y cocos tiernos, en espesuras circunstanciales, mientras que una enorme multitud, con intención de animar a los demás en sus esfuerzos, permanecía quieta gritando sin interrupción con todas sus fuerzas.

Es peculiar de esas gentes, que cuando están dedicados a alguna tarea, siempre hacen un alboroto prodigioso. Tan raramente se ocultan para algo, que cuando trabajan parecen empeñados en que una acción tan meritoria no escape a la observación de quienes les rodean. Por ejemplo, si tienen ocasión de trasladar a poca distancia...
remove a stone to a little distance, which perhaps might be carried by two able-bodied men, a whole swarm gather about it, and, after a vast deal of palaver, lift it up among them, every one struggling to get hold of it, and bear it off yelling and panting as if accomplishing some mighty achievement. Seeing them on these occasions, one is reminded of an infinity of black ants clustering about and dragging away to some hole the leg of a deceased fly.

palaver 1 fuss and bother, esp. prolonged and tedious. 2 profuse or idle talk. 3 naut. and traders. — v. intr. talk profusely. 2 p. flatter, wheedle.

Having for some time attentively observed these demonstrations of good cheer, I entered the Ti, where Mehevi sat complacently looking out upon the busy scene, and occasionally issuing his orders. The chief appeared to be in an extraordinary flow of spirits and gave me to understand that on the morrow there would be grand doings in the Groves generally, and at the Ti in particular; and urged me by no means to absent myself. In commemoration of what event, however, or in honour of what distinguished personality, the feast was to be given, altogether passed my comprehension. Mehevi sought to enlighten my ignorance, but he failed as signally as when he had endeavoured to initiate me into the perplexing arcana of the taboo.

On leaving the Ti, Kory-Kory, who had as a matter of course accompanied me, observing that my curiosity remained unabated, resolved to make everything plain and satisfactory. With this intent, he escorted me through the Taboo Groves, pointing out to my notice a variety of objects, and endeavoured to explain them to me in such an inscrutable jargon of words, that it almost put me in bodily pain to listen to him. In particular, he led me to a remarkable pyramidal structure some three yards square at the base, and perhaps ten feet in height, which had lately been thrown up, and occupied a very conspicuous position. It was composed principally of large empty calabashes, with a few polished cocoanut shells, and looked not unlike a cenotaph of skulls. My cicerone perceived the astonishment with which I gazed at this monument of savage cackery, and immediately addressed himself in the task of enlightening me: but all in vain; and to this hour the nature of the monument remains a complete mystery to me. As, however, it formed so prominent a feature in the approaching revels, I bestowed upon it the latter, in my own mind, the title of ‘Feast of Calabashes’.

The following morning, awaking rather late, I perceived the whole of Marheyo’s family busily engaged in preparing for the festival.

The old warrior himself was arranging in round balls the two grey locks of hair that were suffered to grow from the crown of his head; his earrings and spear, both well polished, lay beside him, while the highly decorative pair of shoes hung suspended from a projecting cane against the side of the house. The young men were similarly employed; and the fair damsels, including Fayaway, were anointing themselves with ‘aka’, arranging their long tresses, and performing other matters connected with the duties of the toilet.

Having completed their preparations, the girls now exhibited themselves in gala costume; the most conspicuous feature of which was a necklace of beautiful white flowers, with the stems removed, and strung closely together upon a single fibre of tappa. Corresponding ornaments were inserted in their ears, and woven garlands upon their heads. About their waist they wore a short tunic and drapery of the same material, tied in an elaborate bow upon the left shoulder, and falling about the figure in picturesque folds.

Thus arrayed, I would have matched the charming Fayaway against any beauty in the world.

Al dejar el Ti, Kory-Kory, que por supuesto me había acompañado, al observar que mi curiosidad permanecía inalterada, decidió dejarlo todo claro y satisfactorio. Con esa intención, me acompañó por los bosquecillos tabú, señalándome con un idioma tan inscrutable como yuxtaposición de palabras, que casi me hizo sentir dolor físico de escucharle. En particular, me llevó hasta una notable construcción piramidal, cuadrada por su base, de unas tres yardas de lado, y de unos dos pies de altura, que se acababa de levantar, ocupando una posición muy conspicua. Estaba compuesta principalmente de grandes calabazas vacías, con unos cuantos cocos pulidos, y parecía algo así como un cenotafio de calaveras. Mi cicerone percibió el asombro que yo observaba ese monumento de cacharrería salvaje, e inmediatamente se apoyó en la tarea de dar explicaciones, pero todo en vano; y hasta estos momentos, la naturaleza de ese monumento sigue siendo para mí un completo misterio. No obstante, formó un rasgo tan destacado entre las celebraciones sucesivas, que di a éstas, en mi mente, el título de «Fiesta de las Calabazas?».

A la mañana siguiente, despertándome un poco tarde, percibí que toda la familia de Marheyo estaba laboriosamente ocupada en prepararse para el festival.

El viejo guerrero también arreglaba en moños redondos los dos rizos de pelo gris que consentía que crecieran en la corona; sus anillos de las orejas y su lanza, bien pulidas ambas cosas, estaban a su lado, mientras el par de zapatos, tan altamente decorativos, colgaba de una caña saliente junto al flanco de la casa. Los jóvenes estaban ocupados de modo semejante, y las lindas damiselas, [179] incluyendo a Fayaway, se ungían con aka, arreglándolas largas trenzas y realizaban otras actividades relacionadas con los deberes del tocado.

Terminados esos preparativos, las muchachas se exhibieron en traje de gala, cuyo principal rasgo era un collar de hermosas flores blancas con los tallos arrancados, y ensartados apretadamente en una sola fibra de tappa. Análogos ornamentos se insertaban en los oídos, y en la cabeza llevaban guirnaldas tejidas. Por la cintura, llevaban una corta túnica de inmaculada tappa blanca, y algunas de ellas añadían a ésta un manto del mismo material, anudado de modo complicado y cayéndole por el cuerpo en pliegues pintorescos.

Así arreglada, yo hubiera puesto a la encantadora Fayaway frente a cualquier belleza del mundo.

(*) Warwick, el “hacedor de reyes”, de la Guerra de las Dos Rosas en Inglaterra, recordado aquí por Melville en un pasaje de las Crónicas de Froissart, lectura predilecta suya.
People may say what they will about the taste evinced by our fashionable ladies in dress. Their jewels, their featherers, their silks, and their furbelows, would have sunk into utter insignificance beside the exquisite simplicity of attire adopted by the nymphs of the vale on this festive occasion. I should like to have seen a gallery of coronation beauties, at Westminster Abbey, confronted for a moment by this band of island girls; their stiffness, formality, and affectation, contrasted with the artless vivacity and unconcealed natural graces of these savage maidens. It would be the Venus de’ Medici placed beside a milliner’s dummy in the house, the rest of its inmates having departed for the Taboo Groves. My visit was all impatience to follow them; and was as fidgety about my dilatory movements as a diner out waiting hat in hand at the bottom of the stairs for some lagging companion. At last, yielding to his importunities, I set out for the Ti. As we passed the houses peeping out from the groves through which our route lay, I noticed that they were entirely deserted by their inhabitants.

When we reached the rock that abruptly terminated the path, and concealed from us the festive scene, wild shouts and a confused blending of voices assured me that the occasion, whatever it might be, had drawn together a great multitude. Kory-Kory, previous to mounting the elevation, paused for a moment, like a dandy at a ball-room door, to put a hasty finish to his toilet. During this short interval, the thought struck me that I ought myself perhaps to be taking some little pains with my appearance.

But as I had no holiday raiment, I was not a little puzzled to devise some means of decorating myself. However, as I felt desirous to create a sensation, I determined to do all that lay in my power; and knowing that I could not delight the savages more than by conforming to their style of dress, I removed from my person the large robe of tappa which I was accustomed to wear over my shoulders whenever I sallied into the open air, and remained merely girt by a short tunic descending from my waist to my knees.

My quick-witted attendant fully appreciated the compliment I was paying to the costume of his race, and began more sedulously to arrange the folds of the one only garment which remained to me. Whilst he was doing this, I caught sight of a knot of young lasses, who were sitting near us on the grass surrounded by heaps of flowers which they were forming into garlands. I motioned to them to enliven the air with animated gestures; while the whole interval between us and the place where I stood was enlivened by groups of females fancifully decorated, dancing, capering, and uttering wild exclamations. As

CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE

THE FEAST OF CALABASHES

The whole population of the valley seemed to be gathered within the precincts of the grove. In the distance could be seen the long front of the Ti, its immense piazza swarming with men, arrayed in every variety of fantastic costume, and all vociferating with animated gestures; while the whole interval between it and the place where I stood was enlivened by groups of females fancifully decorated, dancing, capering, and uttering wild exclamations. As

La gente dirá lo que quiera sobre el gusto que muestran en el vestir nuestras damas a la moda. Sus joyas, sus plumas, sus sedas y sus volantes se habrán hundido en total insignificancia al lado de la exquisita simplicidad de atavío adoptado por las ninfas del valle en esa ocasión festiva. Me gustaría haber visto una galería de bellezas de la Coronación, en la Abadía de Westminster, comparadas por un momento con esta bandada de muchachas isleñas; contrastando su rigidez, su formalismo y su afectación con la ingenua vivacidad y las manifiestas graciaes naturales de estas doncellas salvajes. Sería como poner a la Venus de Médicis junto a un maniquí de modista. Kory-Kory y yo no tardamos en quedar solos en casa, habiendo marchado el resto de sus habitantes hacia los bosquecillos tabú. Mi criado estaba todo impaciente por seguirles, y andaba tan nervioso ante mis movimientos dilatorios como un caballero que va a comer fuera, esperando, sombrero en mano, al pie de las escaleras, alguna compañía que se retrasara. Por fin, cediendo a sus insistencias, me puse en marcha hacia el Ti. A nuestro paso ante las casas que se asomaban de los bosques atravesados por nuestro camino, me di cuenta de que estaban totalmente abandonadas por sus habitantes.

Cuando alcanzamos la roca que terminaba repentinamente el sendero y nos ocultaba la escena festiva, salvajes gritos y una confusa mezcla de voces me aseguró que la ocasión, cualquiera que fuera, había reunido una gran multitud. Kory-Kory, antes de subir a la elevación, se detuvo un momento, como un elegante en la puerta de un balé, para dar un apresurado remate a su tocado. Durante ese breve intervalo, me ocurrió la idea de que quizás yo debería preocuparme un poco de mi aspecto.

Pero como no tenía traje de fiesta, me sentí perplejo ante la necesidad de inventar algún medio de decorarme. No obstante, como me sentía [180] deseoso de producir sensación, decidí hacer todo lo que estuviera en mi poder, y sabiendo que no podría dar más placer a los salvajes que ateniéndome a su estilo de indumentaria, me quité de encima el amplio manto de tappa que acostumbraba a llevar por mis hombros siempre que salía al aire libre, y quedé sólo ceñido con una corta ropilla que me bajaba de la cintura a las rodillas.

Mi listo acompañante apreció plenamente el cumplimiento que rendía yo a la vestimenta de su raza, y empezó, con mayor cuidado, a arreglar los pliegues de la única prenda que me quedaba. Mientras lo hacía así, observé un grupo de muchachitas sentadas junto a nosotros en la hierba, entre montones de flores que convertían en guirnaldas. Les hice señas de que me dijeran algo de su manufactura, y en un momento, una docena de guirnaldas estuvieron a mi disposición. Una de ellas la puse alrededor de aquella excusa en vez de sombrero que me había visto obligado a fabricarme con hojas de palma, y algunas de las otras las convertí en un espléndido cinturón. Concluyó esas operaciones, ascendió a la roca con el paso lento y digno de un elegante vestido de gala. [181]
soon as they descried me they set up a shout of welcome; and a band of them came dancing towards me, chanting as they approached some wild recitative. The change in my garb seemed to transport them with delight, and clustering about me on all sides, they accompanied me towards the Ti. When however we drew near it these joyous nymphs paused in their career, and parting on either side, permitted me to pass on to the now densely thronged building.

So soon as I mounted to the pi-pi I saw at a glance that the revels were fairly under way.

Within the building itself was presented a most extraordinary scene. The immense lounge of mats lying between the parallel rows of the trunks of cocoanut trees, and extending the entire length of the house, at least two hundred feet, was covered by the reclining forms of a host of chiefs and warriors who were eating length of the house, at least two hundred feet, was covered by the reclining forms of a host of chiefs and warriors who were eating

The banquet being thus spread, naught remained but for everyone to help himself at his pleasure. Accordingly not a moment passed but the transplanted boughs I have mentioned were rifled by the throng of the fruit they certainly had never borne before. Calabashes of poee-poee, and sheltered from the sun by the broad leafy coverings, containing the meat of the numerous hogs which had been slain, done up in this manner to make it more accessible to the crowd. Leaning against the railing on the piazza were an

Preparado así el banquete, no quedaba sino que cada cual se sirviera a su gusto. Por tanto, no pasó un momento sin que la multitud saqueara las ramas trasplantadas de aquel fruto que jamás habían producido antes. Calabazas de poei-pooi se llenaban continuamente en el amplio receptáculo que almacenaba ese artículo, y en torno al Ti se encendían multitud de pequeñas hogueras con el fin de asar el fruto del árbol del pan.

Dentro del edificio, se presentaba una escena extraordinaria. La inmensa yacida de esteras que quedaba entre las líneas paralelas de los troncos de cocotero, extendiéndose a lo largo de toda la casa al menos en doscientos pies, estaba cubierta por las figuras reclinadas de largas hojas, que comían a gran velocidad o suavizaban las preocupaciones de la vida polinesia con los humos sedantes del tabaco. El humo se inhalaba en grandes pipas, cuyas cañas, hechas de bambúes largos y pesados, se llenaban por el lado de abajo, y teniendo metido en la boca un paquete de hojas, estaban llenos de agua del arroyo, y cada cual conteniendo de cuatro a cinco galones.

El tabaco usado entre los Taipis era de un aroma suave y grato, y como siempre lo vi en hojas y los indígenas parecían estar bien provistos de él, me inclinaba a creer que debía crecer en el valle. Efectivamente, Kory-Kory me dijo a entender que así era el caso, pero jamás vi una sola planta que creciera en la isla. En Nukuheva, y creo que en todos los demás valles, esta planta es muy escasa, y de los extranjeros se obtiene sólo en pequeñas cantidades, por lo que el fumar [183] es un lujo muy grande para los habitantes de esos lugares. No puedo adivinar cómo era que los taipis estaban tan bien provistos de tabaco. Yo les consideraría demasiado indulentes para declarar ninguna atención a su cultivo, y en efecto, en lo que alcanzaba mi observación, ni un solo átomo de la tierra fértil tenía otro cultivo que el de las lluvias y la luz del sol. No obstante, quizá las matas de tabaco crezcan silvestres, como la caña de azúcar, en alguna remota
remote part of the vale.

There were many in the Ti for whom the tobacco did not furnish a sufficient stimulus, and who accordingly had recourse to ‘arva’, as a more powerful agent in producing the desired effect.

‘Arva’ is a root very generally dispersed over the South Seas, and from it is extracted a juice, the effects of which upon the system are at first stimulating in a moderate degree; but it soon relaxes the muscles, and exerting a narcotic influence produces a luxurious sleep. In the valley this beverage was universally prepared in the following way:—

Some half-dozen young boys seated themselves in a circle around an empty wooden vessel, each one of them being supplied with a certain quantity of the roots of the ‘arva’, broken into small bits and laid by his side. A coconut-goblet of water was passed around the juvenile company, who rinsing their mouths with its contents, proceeded to the business before them. This merely consisted in thoroughly masti- cating the ‘arva’, and throwing it mouthful after mouthful into the receptacle provided. When a sufficient quantity had been thus obtained water was poured upon the mass, and being stirred about with the forefinger of the right hand, the preparation was soon in readiness for use. The ‘arva’ has medicinal qualities.

Upon the Sandwich Islands it has been employed with no small success in the treatment of scrofulous affections, and in combating the ravages of a disease for whose frightful inroads the ill-starred inhabitants of that group are indebted to their foreign benefactors. But the tenants of the Typee valley, as yet exempt from these inflictions, generally employ the ‘arva’ as a minister to social enjoyment, and a calabash of the liquid circulates among them as the bottle with us.

Mehevi, who was greatly delighted with the change in my costume, gave me a cordial welcome. He had reserved for me one of the most delectable mess of ‘cokoo’, well knowing my partiality for that dish; and had likewise selected three or four young cocoanuts, several roasted bread-fruit, and a magnificent bunch of bananas, for my especial comfort and gratification. These various matters were at once placed before me; but Kory-Kory deemed the banquet entirely insufficient for my wants until he had supplied me with one of the leafy packages of pork, which, notwithstanding the somewhat hasty manner in which it had been prepared, possessed a most excellent flavour, and was surprisingly sweet and tender.

Pork is not a staple article of food among the people of the Marquesas; consequently they pay little attention to the BREEDING of the swine. The hogs are permitted to roam at large on the groves, where they obtain no small part of their nourishment from the cocoanuts which continually fall from the trees. But it is only after infinite labour and difficulty, that the hungry animal can pierce the husk and shell so as to get at the meat. I have frequently been amused at seeing one of them, after crunching the obstinate nut with his teeth for a long time unsuccessfully, get into a violent passion with it. He would then root furiously under the cocoanut, and, with a fling of his snout, toss it before him on the ground. Following it up, he would crunch at it again savagely for a moment, and then next knock it on one side, pausing immediately after, as if wondering how it could so suddenly have disappeared. In this way the persecuted cocoanuts were often chased half across the valley.

The second day of the Feast of Calabashes was ushered in by still more uproarious noises than the first. The skins of innumerable sheep seemed to be resounding to the blows of an army of drummers. Started from my slumber by the din, I leaped up, and found the whole household engaged in making preparations for immediate departure. Curious to discover of what strange events these novel sounds might be the precursors, and not a little desirous to catch a sight of the instruments which produced the terrific noise, part of the valley.

Había muchos en el Ti para quienes el tabaco no proporcionaba suficiente estimulo, y que por tanto, habían recurrido al arva como más poderoso agente para producir el efecto deseado.

Arva es una raíz muy ampliamente extendida por el Mar del Sur, de la que saca un jugo, cuyos efectos en el cuerpo al principio son estimulantes en grado moderado, pero pronto relaja los músculos y, ejerciendo una influencia narcótica, produce un espelndido sueño. En el valle, ese brebaje se preparaba siempre del siguiente modo: media docena de muchachos se sentaban en coro alrededor de una vasija vacía de madera, provisto cada cual de cierta cantidad de raíces de arva, partidas en trocitos y puestas a su lado. Se pasaba un coco de agua por ese grupo de jóvenes, que, enjugándose la boca con su contenido, se ponían a la tarea que tenían por delante. Ésta consistía simplemente en masticar por completo el arva, y echarlo, bocanada tras bocanada, en el recipiente preparado. Cuando se había obtenido así suficiente cantidad, se echaba agua en la masa, y removiéndola con el índice de la mano derecha, el preparado quedaba pronto dispuesto para el uso. El arva tiene cualidades medicinales.

En las Islas Sandwich se ha empleado con no poco éxito en el tratamiento de afecciones escrofulosas, y en combatir los estragos de una enfermedad cuyos terribles inroads deben a sus bienhechores extranjeros los malhadados habitantes de ese archipiélago. Pero los moradores del valle de Taipi, todavía exentos de esas afecciones, suelen emplear el arva como auxiliar para el gozo de la compañía, haciendo circular entre ellos una calabaza de este líquido que lo mismo que la botella entre nosotros.

Mehevi, que quedó muy encantado con mi cambio de traje, me dio una cordial bienvenida. Me había reservado un delicioso plato de koku, conociendo muy bien mi afición a ese manjar; y asimismo había elegido tres o cuatro cocos tiernos, varios frutos del árbol del pan, asados, y una magnífica piña de plátanos, para mi especial disfrute y satisfacción. Esos diversos objetos fueron colocados en seguida ante mí, pero Kory-Kory juzgó que el banquete era enteramente insuficiente para mis necesidades hasta que me proveyó de uno de los envoltorios [184] de cerdo entre hojas, que, a pesar del modo un tanto apresurado como había sido preparado, poseía un sabor excesivo y estaba sorprendentemente dulce y tierno.

El cerdo asado no es un artículo básico de la alimentación de la gente de las Marquesas, y por consiguiente, ellos prestan poca atención a la crianza del ganado porcino. Se permite a los cerdos que vayan a su gusto por los bosques, donde obtienen buena parte de su nutrición con los cocos que continuamente caen de los árboles. Pero el hambriento animal, sólo a fuerza de infinito trabajo y dificultad puede perforar la corteza y la cáscara para llegar a la pulpa. Muchas veces me divertí viendo a uno de ellos, después de roer inexorablemente durante un rato el empedernido coco, entrar en una violenta furia contra él. Entonces hozaba furiosamente bajo el coco y, con una sacudida del hocico, lo lanzaba adelante por el suelo. Persiguiéndolo, volvía a mordisquearlo furiosamente un momento, y después lo tiraba a un lado, quedándose luego parado, como si se preguntara de qué modo podría haber desaparecido tan de repente. De ese modo, los cocos, atacados a menudo, eran perseguidos a través de medio valle.

El segundo día de la Fiesta de las Calabazas fue introducido por ruidos aún más tumultuosos que el primero. Los pellejos de innumerables ovejas parecían resonar bajo el golpe de un ejército de tamborileros. Sobresaltado de mis soporres por el estrépito, me incorporé de un brinco, y encontre la casa entera ocupada en hacer preparativos para la partida inmediata. Con curiosidad de descubrir qué extraños acontecimientos presagiarían esos nuevos sonidos, y no poco deseoso de observar los instrumentos que producían tan
I accompanied the natives as soon as they were in readiness to de-
part for the Taboo Groves.

The comparatively open space that extended from the Ti toward the rock, to which I have before alluded as forming the ascent to the place, was, with the building itself, now alto-
gether deserted by the men; the whole distance being filled by
bands of females, shouting and dancing under the influence of
some strange excitement.

I was amused at the appearance of four or five old women
who, in a state of utter nudity, with their arms extended flatly down
to their sides, and holding themselves perfectly erect, were leaping
stiffly into the air, like so many sticks bobbing to the surface, after
being pressed perpendicularly into the water. They preserved the
utmost gravity of countenance, and continued their extraordinary
movements without a single moment’s cessation. They did not ap-
pear to attract the observation of the crowd around them, but I must
candidly confess that for my, own part, I stared at them most
pertinaciously.

Desirous of being enlightened in regard to the meaning of
this peculiar diversion, I turned, inquiringly to Kory-Kory; that
learned Typee immediately proceeded to explain the whole matter
thoroughly. But all that I could comprehend from what he said was,
that the leaping figures before me were bereaved women, whose
partners had been slain in battle many moons previously; and who,
at every festival, gave public evidence in this manner of their ca-
lamities. It was evident that Kory-Kory considered this an all-suffi-
cient reason for so indecorous a custom; but I must say that it did
not satisfy me as to its propriety.

Dejando a esas afligidas mujeres, pasamos al terreno hula-hula.
En su espacioso cuadrilátero parecía haberse reunido toda la pobla-
ción, y el espectáculo que presentaba era verdaderamente notable.
Bajo los caborritos de bambú que se abrían hacia el interior del
cuadrado se reclinaban los principales jefes y guerreros, mientras
que una abigarrada multitud se tendía cómodamente bajo los enor-
mes árboles que extendían en lo alto un majestuoso dosel. En las
terrazas de los gigantescos altares, a ambos lados, se habían deposi-
tado verdes frutos del árbol del pan, en cestos de hojas de cocotero,
grandes rollos de tappa, piñas de plátanos maduros, racimos de
manzanas manmi, dorados frutos del árbol artu, y cerdos asados
extendidos en grandes bandejas de madera, fantasíosamente deco-
radas con hojas recién arrancadas, mientras que una variedad de
rudos instrumentos de guerra se apilaba en confusos montones ante
las filas de horribles ídolos. Frutas de diversas especies colgaban
asimismo en cestos de hojas, desde el extremo de palos plantados
verticalmente, a intervalos regulares a lo largo de las plataformas
inferiores de ambos altares. En su base, se habían dispuesto dos fi-
las paralelas de enormes tambores, por lo menos de quince pies de
altura, y formados con troncos huecos de grandes árboles. Por arri-
ba estaban cubiertos con pieles de tiburón, y sus cajas estaban mi-
nuosamente talladas con diversas figuras y formas extrañas. A in-
tervalos regulares, estaban atados alrededor, con una especie de
sinnate de colores variados, a la vez que sobre ellos se extendían
tiras de paño indígena. Detrás de esos instrumentos se habían cons-
truido ligeras plataformas, en que había un buen número de jóvenes
que, golpeando violentamente con las manos en la piel de los tam-
bores, producían esos horribles sonidos que me habían despertado
por la mañana. Cada pocos minutos, esos ejecutantes musicales se
dejaban caer de un brinco desde su elevación a la multitud de abajo,
[186] y sus lugares eran ocupados inmediatamente por nuevos re-
clutas. Así se mantenía un estrépito incensante que habría sobresalta-
do al Pandemonium.

El espacio relativamente abierto que se extendía desde el Ti ha-
cia la roca, a que he aludido antes como formando la subida a ese
lugar, ahora había sido abandonado completamente, así como el edif-
cicio, por los hombres, y toda esa distancia estaba llena de grupos
de mujeres que gritaban y bailaban bajo el efecto de alguna extraña
excitación.

Me divirtió el aspecto de cuatro o cinco viejas que, en estado de
absoluta desnudez, con los brazos extendidos de plano por los
costados, y manteniéndose perfectamente erguidas, saltaban con
rigidez por el aire, como palos que asoman a la superficie
después de ser metidos verticalmente en el agua. Mantenían la
mayor gravedad de expresión, y continuaban sus extraordinaria-
ríos movimientos sin un momento de interrupción. No parecían
llamar la atención de la multitud que [185] les rodeaba, pero
debo confesar francamente que, por mi parte, me quedé mirán-
dolas del modo más pintazas.

Deseoso de ser ilustrado sobre el significado de esta peculiar di-
versión, me volví inquisitivamente a Kory-Kory: este docto taipi al
momento se puso a explicarme todo el asunto al detalle. Pero lo úni-
co que pude entender de lo que dijo fue que las figuras que brincan-
ban ante mi eran viudas desposeídas, cuyos esposos habían muerto
en batalla hacia muchas lunas, y que, en todos los festivales públi-
cos, daban de ese modo evidencia pública de sus calamidades. Era
evidente que Kory-Kory consideraba esto suficiente razón para tan
indecorosa costumbre, pero debo decir que no me convenció en cuan-
to a su decencia.

Leaving these afflicted females, we passed on to the
Hoolah Hoolah ground. Within the spacious quadrangle, the
whole population of the valley seemed to be assembled, and
the sight presented was truly remarkable. Beneath the sheds of
bamboo which opened towards the interior of the square
reclined the principal chiefs and warriors, while a miscella-
neous throng lay at their ease under the enormous trees which
spread a majestic canopy overhead. Upon the terraces of the
gigantic altars, at each end, were deposited green bread-fruit
in baskets of cocoonut leaves, large rolls of tappa, bunches of
ripe bananas, clusters of manmee-apples, the golden-hued
fruit of the artu-tree, and baked hogs, laid out in large wooden
troughs, fancifully decorated with freshly plucked leaves,
whilst a variety of rude implements of war were piled in con-
fused heaps before the ranks of hideous idols. Fruits of vari-ous kinds were likewise suspended in leafen baskets, from the
tops of poles planted uprightly, and at regular intervals,
along the lower terraces of both altars. At their base were ar-
ranged two parallel rows of cumbersome drums, standing at
least fifteen feet in height, and formed from the hollow trunks
of large trees. Their heads were covered with shark skins, and
their barrels were elaborately carved with various quaint fig-
ures and devices. At regular intervals they were bound round by
a species of sinnate of various colours, and strips of native
cloth flattened upon them here and there. Behind these in-
struments were built slight platforms, upon which stood a
number of young men who, beating violently with the palms of
their hands upon the drum-heads, produced those outra-
geous sounds which had awakened me in the morning. Every
few minutes these musical performers hopped down from their
elevation into the crowd below, and their places were imme-
diately supplied by fresh recruits. Thus an incessant din was
kept up that might have startled Pandemonium.
CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR


ALTHOUGH I had been baffled in my attempts to learn the origin of the Feast of Calabashes, yet it seemed very plain to me that it was principally, if not wholly, of a religious character. As a religious solemnity, however, it had not at all corresponded with the horrible descriptions of Polynesian worship which we have received in some published narratives, and especially in those accounts of the evangelized islands with which the missionaries have favoured us. Did not the sacred character of these persons render the purity of their intentions unquestionable, I should certainly be led to suppose that they had exaggerated the evils of Paganism, in order to enhance the merit of their own disinterested labours.

In a certain work incidentally treating of the ‘Washington, or Northern Marquesas Islands,’ I have seen the frequent imolation of human victims upon the altars of their gods, positively and repeatedly charged upon the inhabitants. The same work gives also a rather minute account of their religion—enumerates a great many of their superstitions—and makes known the particular designations of numerous orders of the priesthood.
One would almost imagine from the long list that is given of cannibal primates, bishops, arch-deacons, prebendaries, and other inferior ecclesiastics, that the sacerdotal order far outnumbered the rest of the population, and that the poor natives were more severely priest-ridden than even the inhabitants of the papal states. These accounts are likewise calculated to leave upon the reader’s mind an impression that human victims are daily cooked and served up upon the altars; that heathenish cruelties of every description are continually practised; and that these ignorant Pagans are in a state of the extremest wretchedness in consequence of the grossness of their superstitions. Be it observed, however, that all this information is given by a man who, according to his own statement, was only at one of the islands, and remained there but two weeks, sleeping every night on board his ship, and taking little kid-glove excursions ashore in the daytime, attended by an armed party.

Now, all I can say is, that in all my excursions through the valley of Typee, I never saw any of these alleged enormities. If any of them are practised upon the Marquesas Islands they must certainly have come to my knowledge while living for months with a tribe of savages, wholly unchanged from their original primitive condition, and reputed the most ferocious in the South Seas.

The fact is, that there is a vast deal of unintentional humbuggery in some of the accounts we have from scientific men concerning the religious institutions of Polynesia. These learned tourists generally obtain the greater part of their information from retired old South-Sea rovers, who have domesticated themselves among the barbarous tribes of the Pacific. Jack, who has long been accustomed to the long-bow, and to spin tough yarns on the ship’s forecastle, invariably officiates as showman of the island on which he has resettled, and having mastered a few dozen words of the language, is supposed to know all about the people who speak it. A natural desire to make himself of consequence in the eyes of the strangers, prompts him to lay claim to a much greater knowledge of such matters than he actually possesses. In reply to incessant queries, he communicates not only all he knows but a good deal more, and if there be any information deficient still he is at no loss to supply it. The avidity with which his anecdotes are noted down tickles his vanity, and his powers of invention increase with the credulity of his auditors. He knows just the sort of information wanted, and furnishes it to any extent.

This is not a supposed case; I have met with several individuals like the one described, and I have been present at two or three of their interviews with strangers.

Now, when the scientific voyager arrives at home with his collection of wonders, he attempts, perhaps, to give a description of some of the strange people he has been visiting. Instead of representing them as a community of lusty savages, who are leading a merry, idle, innocent life, he enters into a very circumstantial and learned narrative of certain unaccountable superstitions and practices, about which he knows as little as the islanders themselves. Having had little time, and scarcely any opportunity, to become acquainted with the customs he pretends to describe, he writes them down one after another in an off-hand, haphazard style; and were the book thus produced to be translated into the tongue of the people of whom it purports to give the history, it would appear quite as wonderful to them as it does to the American public, and much more improbable.

For my own part, I am free to confess my almost entire inability to gratify any curiosity that may be felt with regard to the theology of the valley. I doubt whether the inhabitants themselves could do so. They are either too lazy or too sensible to worry themselves about abstract points of religious belief. While I was among

*White appears to be the sacred colour among the Marquesans.

Ahora, lo único que puedo decir es que, en todas mis excursio-
nes por el Valle de Taipi, jamás vi ninguna de esas enormidades que
se les atribuyen. Si en las islas Marquesas se practica alguna de ellas,
debería haber llegado sin duda a mi conocimiento, al vivir meses y
meses con una tribu de salvajes, completamente intactos en su situa-
ción primitiva, y considerados los más feroces de los mares del Sur.

La realidad es que hay mucho de impostura involuntaria en al-
gunas de las noticias que nos han dado los científicos sobre las ins-
tituciones religiosas de Polinesia. Esos docentes turistas suelen obte-
ner la mayor parte de su información de viejos vagabundos retirados
de las islas del Mar del Sur, que se han aclimatado entre las tribus bár-
baras del Pacífico. Jack, que, durante mucho tiempo ha tenido la costum-
bre de tirar a su gusto y encajar cuentos chinos en el castillo de proa
de un barco, siempre actúa como trujamán de la isla en que se ha
instalado, y una vez que domina unas pocas docenas de palabras del
idioma, se considera que lo sabe todo sobre la gente que lo habla. El
natural deseo de darse importancia a ojos de los forasteros le incita
tribar un conocimiento de esos asuntos mucho mayor del que
te realmente tiene. En respuesta a incessantes preguntas, comunica no
sólo lo que sabe, sino mucho más, y si hay alguna información de-
fiende, no se siente en un apuro para suplementada. La avidez con
que se anotan sus anécdotas cosquillea su vanidad, y su capacidad de
invención aumenta con la [189] credibilidad de sus oyentes. Co-
noce exactamente la clase de información deseada, y la proporciona
en cualquier cantidad.

Éste no es un caso imaginario: he encontrado varios individuos
como el descrito, y he estado presente en dos o tres de sus entrevis-
tas con forasteros.

Ahora, cuando el viajero científico llega a casa con su collec-
tión de maravillas, quizá intenta dar una descripción de la ex-
traña gente que ha visitado. En vez de describirla como una comu-
nidad de robustos salvajes, que llevan una vida alegre, ocio-
sa e inocente, se mete en un relato muy detallado y docto sobre
ciertas inexplicables supersticiones y costumbres, de las cuales
sabe tan poco como los propios isleños. Como ha tenido poco
tiempo y muy escasa oportunidad de conocer las costumbres que
pretende describir, las escribe una tras otra en un estilo casual y
precipitado, y si el libro así producido se tradujera a la lengua
del pueblo cuya historia pretende dar, les parecería tan extraño
como parece al público americano, y mucho más inverosimil.

inverosimil inconcebible, absurdo, que no tiene apariencia de verdad

Por mi propia parte, soy libre de confesar mi entera incapacidad
para satisfacer cualquier curiosidad que se sienta respecto a la teo-
logía de ese valle. Dudo que sus mismos habitantes pudieran hacerlo.
Son demasiado perezosos o demasiado sensatos para preocuparse
por puntos abstractos de creencia religiosa. Mientras yo estuve
(*) (N. del A.) El blanco parece ser el color sagrado entre los marquesanos.
them, they never held any synods or councils to settle the principles of their faith by agitating them. An unbounded liberty of conscience seemed to prevail. Those who pleased to do so were allowed to repose implicit faith in an ill-favoured god with a large bottle-nose and fat shapeless arms crossed upon his breast; whilst others worshipped an image which, having no likeness either in heaven or on earth, could hardly be called an idol. As the islanders always maintained a discreet reserve with regard to my own peculiar views on religion, I thought it would be excessively ill-bred of me to pry into theirs.

But, although my knowledge of the religious faith of the Typees was unavoidably limited, one of their superstitious observances with which I became acquainted interested me greatly.

In one of the most secluded portions of the valley within a stone’s cast of Fayaway’s lake—for so I christened the scene of our island yachting—and hard by a growth of palms, which stood ranged in order along both banks of the stream, waving their green arms as if to do honour to its passage, was the mausoleum of a deceased warrior chief. Like all the other edifices of any note, it was raised upon a small pi-pi of stones, which, being of unusual height, was a conspicuous object from a distance. A light thatching of bleached palmetto-leaves hung over it like a self supported canopy; for it was not until you came very near that you saw it was supported by four slender columns of bamboo rising at each corner to a little more than the height of a man. A clear area of a few yards surrounded the pi-pi, and was enclosed by four trunks of cocoanut trees resting at the angles on massive blocks of stone. The place was sacred. The sign of the inscrutable Taboo was seen in the shape of a mystic roll of white tappa, suspended by a twisted cord of the dark coloured wood, handsomely carved and adorned in many elegant bitings and ornaments. The body of the figure—of whatever material it might have been made—was effectually concealed in a heavy robe of brown tappa, revealing; only the hands and head; the latter skilfully carved in wood, and surrounded by a superb arch of plumes. These plumes, in the subdued and gentle gales which found access to this sequestered spot, were never for one moment at rest, but kept nodding and waving over the chief’s brow. The long leaves of the palmetto drooped over the eaves, and through them you saw the warrior holding his paddle with both hands in the act of rowing, leaning forward and inclining his head, as if eager to hurry on his voyage. Glaring at him forever, and face to face, was a polished human skull, which crowned the prow of the canoe. The spectral figurehead, reversed in its position, glancing backwards, seemed to mock the impatiant attitude of the warrior.

When I first visited this singular place with Kory-Kory, he told me—or at least I so understood him—that the chief was paddling his way to the realms of bliss, and bread-fruit—the Polynesian heaven—where every moment the bread-fruit trees dropped their ripe globes to the ground, and where there was no end to the cocoanuts and bananas: there they reposed through the livelong eternity upon mats much finer than those of entre ellos, jamás tuvieron sinodos ni concilios para establecer los principios de su fe a fuerza de discutirlos. Parecía prevaler una ilimitada libertad de conciencia. A aquellos a quienes se les antojaba, se les permitía poner su fe táctica en un poco agraciado dios con gran nariz de botella y gordos brazos informes cruzados en el pecho; mientras que otros adoraban una imagen que, no teniendo se mejanza ni en el cielo ni en la tierra, difícilmente podría llamarse ídolo. Como los isleños siempre mantuvieron una discreta reserva respecto a mis propias opiniones personales sobre religión, pensé que sería excesivamente maleducado entrometerme en las suyas.

Pero, aunque mi conocimiento de la fe religiosa de los taipis era inevitablemente limitada, una de sus observancias supersticiosas, que llegó a conocer, me interesó mucho.

En una de las partes más retiradas del valle, a un tiro de piedra del lago de Fayaway—pues así bauticé el escenario de nuestra navegación isleña— junto a un grupo de palmeras que se alineaban en orden a los dos lados del arroyo, agitando sus brazos verdes como para hacer honor a su paso, estaba el mausoleo de un fallecido jefe guerrero. Como todos los demás edificios de cualquier importancia, se elevaba sobre un pequeño pai-pai de piedras que, [190] siendo de altura insólita, resultaba objeto destacado a distancia. Un pequeñío techado de planchudas hojas de palma colgaba sobre él como un dosel suspendido por sí mismo, pues hasta llegar muy cerca no se veía que estaba sostenido por cuatro esbeltas columnas de bambú que se elevaban en cada esquina a altura poco mayor que la de un hombre. Un espacio claro de pocas yardas rodeaba el pai-pai, y estaba rodeado por cuatro troncos de cocoteros, apoyados en los ángulos sobre bloques macizos de piedra. Ese lugar era sagrado. Se veía el signo inscrutable tabù, en forma de un misterioso rollo de tappa blanco suspendido por un cordón retorcido del mismo material, del extremo de un ligero palo plantado en el recinto*. La santidad de ese lugar no parecía haber sido violada nunca, y la tranquila soledad, a su alrededor, era hermosa y conmovedora. ¡Suaves sombras de esas altas palmeras! Las estoy viendo ahora: colgando sobre el templo, como para defenderlo de la intrusión del sol.

Por todas partes, al acercarse a ese lugar silencioso, se observaba la efigie del jefe muerto, sentado en la popa de una canoa, que se elevaba en una ligera armazón a pocas pulgadas sobre el nivel del pai-pai. La canoa era de unos siete pies de largo; de madera oscura y mitizada, bellamente tallada y adornada en muchos lugares con abigarradas ataduras de sinnate de colores, en que se habían insertado ingeniosamente cierto número de centelleantes conchas marinas, con un cinturón de esas mismas conchas corriendo a su alrededor. El cuerpo de la figura—de cualquier material que estuviera hecho—estaba bien oculto por un pesado manto de tappa parda, que revelaba sólo las manos y la cabeza: esta última, hábilmente tallada en madera y rematada por un sobrino penacho de plumas. Esas plumas no descansaban un momento, en los sumisos y suaves vientos que habían de acceder a ese apartado rincón, sino que siempre se agitaban y ondeaban sobre la frente del jefe. Las largas hojas de palma caían sobre los aleros, y a través de ellas se veía al guerrero empuñando el canaleta con ambas manos al remar. Echado hacía delante e inclinando la cabeza, como ansioso de acelerar el viaje. Mirándole para siempre, cara a cara, había una pulida calavera humana, que coronaba la proa de la canoa. Ese espectral mascarón de proa, puesto al revés, mirando hacia atrás, parecía remedar la actividad impaciente del guerrero.

La primera vez que visité ese extraño sitio, con Kory-Kory, me dijo éste —o al menos así lo entendí— que el jefe remaba hacia los reinos de la felicidad y el [191] fruto del árbol del pan —el paraíso polinesio—, donde a cada momento los árboles del pan dejaban caer al suelo sus frutas maduras, y donde no teñían fin los cocos y los plátanos: allí reposaban durante toda la eternidad en esteras mucho más finas que las de Taipi, y todos
Typee; and every day bathed their glowing limbs in rivers of cocoanut oil. In that happy land there were plenty of plumes and feathers, and boars’-tusks and sperm-whale teeth, far preferable to all the shining trinkets and gay tappa of the white men; and, best of all, women far lovelier than the daughters of earth were there in abundance. ‘A very pleasant place,’ Kory-Kory said it; ‘but after all, not much pleasanter, he thought, than Typee.’ ‘Did he not then,’ I asked him, ‘wish to accompany the warrior?’ ‘Oh no: he was very happy where he was; but supposed that some time or other he would go in his own canoe.’

Thus far, I think, I clearly comprehended Kory-Kory. But there was a singular expression he made use of at the time, enforced by as singular a gesture, the meaning of which I would have given much to penetrate. I am inclined to believe it must have been a proverb he uttered; for I afterwards heard him repeat the same words several times, and in what appeared to me to be a somewhat: similar sense. Indeed, Kory-Kory had a great variety of short, smart-sounding sentences, with which he frequently enlivened his discourse; and he introduced them with an air which plainly intimated, that in his opinion, they settled the matter in question, whatever it might be.

Could it have been then, that when I asked him whether he desired to go to this heaven of bread-fruit, cocoanuts, and young ladies, which he had been describing, he answered by saying something equivalent to our old adage—‘A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush’?—if he did, Kory-Kory was a discreet and sensible fellow, and I cannot sufficiently admire his shrewdness.

Whenever, in the course of my rambles through the valley I happened to be near the chief’s mausoleum, I always turned aside to visit it. The place had a peculiar charm for me; I hardly know why, but so it was. As I leaned over the railing and gazed upon the strange effigy and watched the play of the feathery head-dress, stirred by the same breeze which in low tones breathed amidst the lofty palm-trees, I loved to yield myself up to the fanciful superstition of the islands, and could almost believe that the grim warrior was bound heavenward. In this mood when I turned to depart, I bade him ‘God speed, and a pleasant voyage.’ Aye, paddle away, brave chief, and I cannot sufficiently admire his shrewdness.

This strange superstition affords another evidence of the fact, that however ignorant man may be, he still feels within him his immortal spirit yearning, after the unknown future.

Although the religious theories of the islands were a complete mystery to me, their practical every-day operation could not be concealed. I frequently passed the little temples reposing in the shadows of the taboo groves and beheld the offerings—mouldy fruit spread out upon a rude altar, or hanging in half-decayed baskets around some uncouth jolly-looking image; I was present during the continuance of the festival; I daily beheld the grinning idols marshalled rank and file in the Hoolah Hoolah ground, and was often in the habit of meeting those whom I supposed to be the priests. But the temples seemed to be abandoned to solitude; the festival had been nothing more than a jovial mingling of the tribe; the idols were quite harmless as any other logs of wood; and the priests were the merriest dogs in the valley.

In fact religious affairs in Typee were at a very low ebb; all such matters sat very lightly upon the thoughtless inhabitants; and, in the celebration of their strange rites, they appeared merely to seek a sort of childish amusement.

*The word ‘Artua’, although having some other significations, is in nearly all the Polynesian dialects used as the general designation of the gods.

$p$ (N. del A.) La palabra artua, aunque tenga algunos otros significados, se usa por casi todos los dialectos polinesios como designación general de los dioses.
A curious evidence of this was given in a remarkable ceremony in which I frequently saw Mehevi and several other chiefs and warriors of note take part; but never a single female.

Among those whom I looked upon as forming the priesthood of the valley, there was one in particular who often attracted my notice, and whom I could not help regarding as the head of the order. He was a noble looking man, in the prime of his life, and of a most benignant aspect. The authority this man, whose name was Kolory, seemed to exercise over the rest, the episcopal part he took in the Feast of Calabashes, his sleek and complacent appearance, the mystic characters which were tattooed upon his chest, and above all the mitre he frequently wore, in the shape of a towering head-dress, consisting of part of a coconuut branch, the stalk planted uprightly on his brow, and the leaflets gathered together and passed round the temples and behind the ears, all these pointed him out as Lord Primate of Typee. Kolory was a sort of Knight Templar—a soldier-priest; for he often wore the dress of a Marquesan warrior, and always carried a long spear, which, instead of terminating in a paddle at the lower end, after the general fashion of these weapons, was curved into a heathenish-looking little image. This instrument, however, might perhaps have been emblematic of his double functions. With one end in carnal combat he transfixed the enemies of his tribe, and with the other as a pastoral crook he kept in order his spiritual flock. But this is not all I have to say about Kolory.

His martial grace very often carried about with him what seemed to me the half of a broken war-club. It was swathed round with ragged bits of white tappa, and the upper part, which was intended to represent a human head, was embellished with a strip of scarlet cloth of European manufacture. It required little observation to discover that this strange object was revered as a god. By the side of the big and lusty images standing sentinel over the altars of the Hoolah Hoolah ground, it seemed a mere pigmy in tatters. But appearances all the world over are deceptive. Little men are sometimes very potent, and rags sometimes cover very extensive pretensions. In fact, this funny little image was the 'crack' god of the island; lordling it over all the wooden lubbers who looked so grim and dreadful; its name was Moa the 'crack' god of the island; lording it over all the wooden lubbers who looked so grim and dreadful; its name was Moa Artua*. And it was in honour of Moa Artua, and for the entertainment of those who believe in him, that the curious ceremony I am about to describe was observed.

Mehevi and the chieftains of the Ti have just risen from their customary slumbers. There are no affairs of state to dispose of; and having eaten two or three breakfasts in the course of the morning, the magnates of the valley feel no appetite as yet for dinner. How are their leisure moments to be occupied? They smoke, they chat, and at last one of their number makes a proposition to the rest, who joyfully acquiescing, he darts out of the house, leaps from the pi-pi, and disappears in the grove. Soon you see him returning with Kolory, who bears the god Moa Artua in his arms, and carries in one hand a small trough, hollowed out in the likeness of a canoe. The priest comes along dandling his charge as if it were a lachrymose infant he was endeavouring to put into a good humour. Presently entering the Ti, he seats himself on the mats as composedly as a juggler about to perform his sleight-of-hand tricks; and with the chiefs disposed in a circle around him, commences his ceremony. In the first place he gives Moa Artua an affectionate hug, then caressingly lays him to his breast, and, finally, whispers something in his ear; the rest of the company listening eagerly for a reply. But the baby-god is deaf or dumb,—perhaps both, for never a word does, he utter. At last Kolory speaks a little louder, and soon growing angry, comes boldly out with what he has to say and bawls to him. He put me in mind of a choleric fellow, who, after

Mehevi y los jefecillos del Ti se acaban de despertar de su siesta de mediodía. No hay asuntos de gobierno que resolver, y después de haber tomado dos o tres desayunos en el transcurso de la mañana, los magnates del valle todavía no sienten apetito para la comida. ¿Cómo se van a ocupar sus momentos de ocio? Fuman, charlan, y por fin, uno de ellos hace a los demás una propuesta que aceptan jubilosamente: entonces sale disparado de la cabaña, baja de un salto del pai-pai, y desaparece en el bosquecillo. Pronto se le ve de vuelta con Kolory, que trae al dios Moa Artua en brazos, sosteniendo en una mano una pequeña artesa, ahuecada en forma de canoa. El sacerdote se acerca mecieniendo su carga como si fuera un niño llorón al que tratará de poner de buen humor. Al fin, al entrar en el Ti, se sienta en las esteras con tanta compostura como un ilusionista que va a ejecutar sus juegos de manos y, con los jefes en círculo, comienza su ceremonia. [194] En primer lugar, da a Moa Artua un afectuoso abrazo, luego lo aprieta contra el pecho, acariciándolo y, por fin, le susurra algo al oído, mientras el resto del grupo escucha esperando ansiosamente una respuesta. Pero el dios-bebé es sordo o mudo: quizás ambas cosas, pues jamás pronuncia ni palabra. Por fin, Kolory habla un poco más fuerte, y encolerizándose de pronto, sale atreviéndamente con lo que tiene que decir y le da aullidos. Me recuerda a un tipo colérico que, después de tratar en vano de
Moe Artua having nothing more to say, his bearer goes to nursing him again, in which occupation, however, he is soon interrupted by a question put by one of the warriors to the god. Kolory hereupon snatcheth it up to his ear again, and after listening attentively, once more officiates as the organ of communication. A multitude of questions and answers having passed between the parties, much to the satisfaction of those who propose them, the god is put tenderly to bed in the trough, and the whole company unite in a long chant, led off by Kolory. This ended, the ceremony is over; the chiefs rise to their feet in high good humour, and my Lord Archbishop, after chatting awhile, and regaling himself with a whiff or two from a pipe of tobacco, tucks the canoe under his arm and marches off with it.

The whole of these proceedings were like those of a parcel of children playing with dolls and baby houses.

For a younger scarcely ten inches high, and with so few early advantages as he doubtless had had, Moe Artua was certainly a precocious little fellow if he really said all that was imputed to him; but for what reason this poor devil of a deity, thus cuffed about, jaded, and shut up in a box, was held in greater estimation than the full-grown and dignified personages of the Taboo Groves, I cannot divine. And yet Mehevi, and other chiefs of unquestionable veracity—to say nothing of the Primate himself—assured me over and over again that Moe Artua was the tutelary deity of Typee, and was more to be held in honour than a whole battalion of the clumsy idols in the Hooleah Hooleah grounds.

trying in vain to communicated a secret to a deaf man, all at once flies into a passion and screams it out so that every one may hear. Still Moe Artua remains as quiet as ever; and Kolory, seemingly losing his temper, fetches him a box over the head, strips him of his tappa and red cloth, and laying him in a state of nudity in a little trough, covers him from sight. At this proceeding all present loudly applause and signify their approval by uttering the adjective ‘motarkee’ with violent emphasis. Kolory however, is so desirous his conduct should meet with unqualified approbation, that he inquires of each individual separately whether under existing circumstances he has not done perfectly right in shutting up Moe Artua. The invariable response is ‘Aa, Aa’ (yes, yes), repeated over again and again in a manner which ought to quiet the scruples of the most conscientious. After a few moments Kolory brings forth his doll again, and while arraying it very carefully in the tappa and red cloth, alternately fondles and chides it. The toilet being completed, he once more speaks to it aloud. The whole company hereupon show the greatest interest; while the priest holding Moe Artua to his ear interprets to them what he pretends the god is confidentially communicating to him. Some items intelligence appear to tickle all present amazingly; for one claps his hands in a rapture; another shouts with merriment; and a third leaps to his feet and capers about like a madman.

What under the sun Moe Artua on these occasions had to say to Kolory I never could find out; but I could not help thinking that the former showed a sad want of spirit in being disciplined into making those disclosures, which at first he seemed bent on withholding. Whether the priest honestly interpreted what he believed the divinity said to him, or whether he was not all the while guilty of a vile humbug, I shall not presume to decide. At any rate, whatever as coming from the god was imparted to those present seemed to be generally of a complimentary nature: a fact which illustrates the sagacity of Kolory, or else the timeserving disposition of this hardly used deity.

When Moe Artua does not have more to say, his bearer goes to nursing him again, in which occupation, however, he is soon interrupted by a question put by one of the warriors to the god. Kolory hereupon snatcheth it up to his ear again, and after listening attentively, once more officiates as the organ of communication. A multitude of questions and answers having passed between the parties, much to the satisfaction of those who propose them, the god is put tenderly to bed in the trough, and the whole company unite in a long chant, led off by Kolory. This ended, the ceremony is over; the chiefs rise to their feet high good humour, and my Lord Archbishop, after chatting awhile, and regaling himself with a whistle or two from a pipe of tobacco, tucks the canoe under his arm and marches off with it.

The whole of these proceedings were like those of a parcel of children playing with dolls and baby houses.

For a younger scarcely ten inches high, and with so few early advantages as he doubtless had had, Moe Artua was certainly a precocious little fellow if he really said all that was imputed to him; but for what reason this poor devil of a deity, thus cuffed about, jaded, and shut up in a box, was held in greater estimation than the full-grown and dignified personages of the Taboo Groves, I cannot divine. And yet Mehevi, and other chiefs of unquestionable veracity—to say nothing of the Primate himself—assured me over and over again that Moe Artua was the tutelary deity of Typee, and was more to be held in honour than a whole battalion of the clumsy idols in the Hooleah Hooleah grounds.

Communicar un secreto a un sordo, de repente se llena de ira y grita de tal modo que lo pueden oir todos. Sin embargo, Moe Artua sigue tan callado como siempre, y Kolory, al parecer perdiendo la compostura, le da una bofetada, le despoja de su tappa y su tela roja, y, dejándole en estado de absoluta desnudez en su pequeño comedero, le cubre, dejándole escindiendo.

Ante este proceder, todos los presentes aplauden ruidosamente y manifiestan su aprobación pronunciando el adjetivo mortarki con violento énfasis. Sin embargo, Kolory tiene tantos deseos de que su conducta obtenga una aprobación sin reservas, que pregunta a cada individuo por separado si, en las presentes circunstancias, no ha hecho perfectamente encerrando a Moe Artua. La respuesta invariable es Aa, Aa (sí, sí), repetida una vez y otra de tal modo que habría de aquietar los escrúpulos del más concienzudo. Pocos momentos después, Kolory vuelve a sacar su muñeco y, mientras lo arregla muy cuidadosamente en la tappa y la tela roja, le mima y le regaña alternativamente. Completado el arreglo, le vuelve a hablar en voz alta. Todo el grupo muestra entonces el mayor interés, mientras que el sacerdote, acercándose a Moe Artua al oído, le interpreta lo que finge que el dios le comunica confidencialmente. Algunas de las noticias parecen cosquillear sorprendentemente a todos los presentes, pues uno da palmadas en éxtasis, otro grita de júbilo, y un tercero se incorpora de un brinco y da vueltas haciendo cabriolas como un loco.

Qué demonios tendría que decirle Moe Artua en esas ocasiones a Kolory, jamás supe averiguarlo, pero no podía menos de pensar que aquél mostraba una triste debilidad de ánimo al dejarse obligar con los castigos a hacer tales revelaciones, que al principio parecía empeñado en reservarlas. No me atreveré a decidir si el sacerdote interpretaba honradamente lo que creía que le decía la divinidad o si era culpable de una vil impostura durante todo el tiempo. En cualquier caso, cuanto se transmitía a los presentes como procedente del dios parecía ser, por lo general, de carácter cumplimentario, hecho que ilustra la sagacidad de Kolory; o, si no, la disposición complaciente de esa deidad tan maltratada. [195]
Kory-Kory—who seemed to have devoted considerable attention to the study of theology, as he knew the names of all the graven images in the valley, and often repeated them over to me—likewise entertained some rather enlarged ideas with regard to the character and pretensions of Moa Artua. He once gave me to understand, with a gesture there was no misconceiving, that if he (Moa Artua) were so minded he could cause a cocoanut tree to sprout out of his (Kory-Kory’s) head; and that it would be the easiest thing in life for him (Moa Artua) to take the whole island of Nukuheva in his mouth and dive down to the bottom of the sea with it.

But in sober seriousness, I hardly knew what to make of the religion of the valley. There was nothing that so much perplexed the illustrious Cook, in his intercourse with the South Sea islanders, as their sacred rites. Although this prince of navigators was in many instances assisted by interpreters in the prosecution of his researches, he still frankly acknowledges that he was at a loss to obtain anything like a clear insight into the puzzling arcana of their faith. A similar admission has been made by other eminent voyagers: by Carteret, Byron, Kotzebue, and Vancouver.

For my own part, although hardly a day passed while I remained upon the island that I did not witness some religious ceremony or other, it was very much like seeing a parcel of ‘Freemasons’ making secret signs to each other; I saw everything, but could comprehend nothing.

On the whole, I am inclined to believe, that the islanders in the Pacific have no fixed and definite ideas whatever on the subject of religion. I am persuaded that Kolory himself would be effectually posessed were he called upon to draw up the articles of his faith and pronounce the creed by which he hoped to be saved. In truth, the Typees, so far as their actions evince, submitted to no laws human or divine—always excepting the thrice mysterious Taabo. The ‘independent electors’ of the valley were not to be brow-beaten by priests, priests, or devils. As for the luckless idols, they received more hard knocks than impositions. I do not wonder that some of them looked so grim, and stood so bolt upright as if fearful of looking to the right or the left lest they should give any one offence. The fact is, they had to carry themselves ‘PRETTY STRAIGHT,’ or suffer the consequences. Their worshippers were such a precious set of fickle-minded and irreverent heathens, that there was no telling when they might topple one of them over, break it to pieces, and making a fire with it on the very altar itself, fall to roasting the offerings of bread-fruit, and at them in spite of its teeth.

In how little reverence these unfortunate deities were held by the natives was on one occasion most convincingly proved to me.—Walking with Kory-Kory through the deepest recesses of the groves, I perceived a curious looking image, about six feet in height which originally had been placed upright against the trunk of an old cocoanut tree. The idol was partly concealed by the foliage of a tree near by, and it was a tosco ingénue. The lower part was overgrown with weeds, and its thick shapeless legs bowed into an awkward position. The head had taken its departure, and from the general appearance of the head it might have, been supposed that the wooden divinity, having become fatigued and weak in the knees, was now carelessly leaning against it. The idol was partly concealed by the foliage of a tree near by, and it was...
in despair at the neglect of its worshippers, had been trying to beat its own brains out against the surrounding trees.

I drew near to inspect more closely this strange object of idolatry, but halted reverently at the distance of two or three paces, out of regard to the religious prejudices of my valet. As soon, however, as Kory-Kory perceived that I was in one of my inquiring, scientific moods, to my astonishment, he sprang to the side of the idol, and pushing it away from the stones against which it rested, endeavoured to make it stand upon its legs. But the divinity had lost the use of them altogether; and while Kory-Kory was trying to prop it up, placing a stick between it and the pi-pi, the monster fell clumsily to the ground, and would have infallibly broken its neck had not Kory-Kory providentially broken its fall by receiving its whole weight on his own half-crushed back. I never saw the honest fellow in such a rage before. He leaped furiously to his feet, and seizing the stick, began beating the poor image: every moment, or two pausing and talking to it in the most violent manner, as if upbraiding it for the accident. When his indignation had subsided a little he whirled the idol about most profanely, as so as to give me an opportunity of examining it on all sides. I am quite sure I never should have presumed to have taken such liberties with the god myself, and I was not a little shocked at Kory-Kory’s impiety.

This anecdote speaks for itself. When one of the inferior order of natives could show such contempt for a venerable and decrépit God of the Groves, what the state of religion must be among the people in general is easy to be imagined. In truth, I regard the Typees as a back-slidden generation. They are sunk in religious sloth, and require a spiritual revival. A long pros- perity of bread-fruit and cocoanuts has rendered them remiss in the performance of their higher obligations. The wood-rot malady is spreading among the idols—the fruit upon their altars is becoming offensive—the temples themselves need rethatching—the tattooed clergy are altogether too light-hearted and lazy—and their flocks are going astray.

Me acerqué a examinar con más detalle ese extraño objeto de idolatría, pero me detuve reverentemente a distancia de dos pasos, por consideración a los prejuicios religiosos de mi criado. Sin embargo, en cuanto Kory-Kory percibió que estaba de humor investigador y científico, con asombro mío saltó al costado del ídolo, y apartándolo de un empujón de las piedras en que se apoyaba, trató de hacer que se sostuviera de pie. Pero la divinidad había perdido por completo el uso de sus piernas, y mientras Kory-Kory trataba de apuntalarla, poniendo un palo entre ella y el pai-pai, el monstruo cayó torpemente al suelo, y se hubiera roto el cuello sin remedio si Kory-Kory no hubiera inte-rumpuido providencialmente su caída recibiendo todo su peso en la espalda, que quedó medio magullada. Nunca había visto al honrado muchacho en tal furia. Se puso en pie de un brinco furi-o y, agarrando el palo, empezó a pegar a la pobre imagen, parándose de vez en cuando a hablarle del modo más violento, como en reprimenda por el accidente. Cuando disminuyó un poco su indignación, dio vueltas al ídolo del modo más profano, como para darme oportunidad de examinarlo por todas partes. Estoy seguro de que yo mismo jamás me habría atrevido a tomarse tales libertades con el dios, y me desagradó no poco la impiedad de Kory-Kory.

La anécdota habla por sí misma. Si uno de la clase inferior de los indígenas podía mostrar tal desprecio por un venerable y decrépito dios de los bosques, se puede imaginar fácilmente cuál debía ser el estado de la religión entre la gente en general. En realidad, considere a los taipis como una generación apóstata. Están hundidos en la desidia religiosa, y necesitan una reanimación espiritual**. Una larga prosperidad de frutos del árbol del pan y cocos les ha hecho remisos en el cumplimiento de sus obligaciones más elevadas. La enfermedad de la carcoma se extiende entre los ídolos; la fruta en sus altares se va volviendo repugnante; los mismos templos necesitan un retechado; el tatuado clero es, en conjunto, demasiado frívolo y pe-rezoso, y su rebaño se está dispersando. [198]

**La sífilis.

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE


ALTHOUGH I had been unable during the late festival to obtain information on many interesting subjects which had much excited my curiosity, still that important event had not passed by without adding materially to my general knowledge of the islanders.

I was especially struck by the physical strength and beauty which they displayed, by their great superiority in these respects over the inhabitants of the neighbouring bay of Nukuheva, and by the singular contrasts they presented among themselves in their various shades of complexion.

CAPÍTULO XXV

INFORMACIÓN GENERAL, OBTENIDA EN EL FESTIVAL. BELLEZA PERSONAL DE LOS TAIPIS. SU SUPERIORIDAD SOBRE LOS HABITANTES DE OTRAS ISLAS. DIVERSIDAD DE COLORIDO. UN COSMÉTICO Y UNGÜENTO VEGETAL. TESTIMONIOS DE LOS VIAJEROS SOBRE LA EXTRAORDINARIA BELLEZA DE LA GENTE DE LAS MARQUESAS. POCAS EVIDENCIAS DE TRATO CON SERES CIVILIZADOS. UN MOSQUÉTE ECHADO A PERDER. PRIMITIVA SENCILLEZ DE GOBIERNO. DIGNIDAD REAL, DE MEHEVI

Aunque durante el reciente festival no había logrado obtener información sobre muchos temas interesantes que habían excitado en gran medida mi curiosidad, sin embargo, ese importante acontecimiento no pasó sin aumentar materialmente mi conocimiento general de los isleños.

Me impresionaron especialmente la fuerza física y la belleza que mostraron, su gran superioridad en estos aspectos sobre los habitantes de la vecina bahía de Nukuheva, y los singulares contrastes que presentaban entre ellos mismos en sus diversos matizados de color.
In beauty of form they surpassed anything I had ever seen. Not a single instance of natural deformity was observable in all the throng attending the revels. Occasionally I noticed among the men the scars of wounds they had received in battle; and sometimes, though very seldom, the loss of a finger, an eye, or an arm, attributable to the same cause. With these exceptions, every individual appeared free from those blemishes which sometimes mar the effect of an otherwise perfect form. But their physical excellence did not merely consist in an exemption from these evils; nearly every individual of their number might have been taken for a sculptor's model.

When I remembered that these islanders derived no advantage from dress, but appeared in all the naked simplicity of nature, I could not avoid comparing them with the fine gentlemen and dandies who promenade such unexceptionable figures in our frequented thoroughfares. Stripped of the cunning artifices of the tailor, and standing forth in the garb of Eden—what a sorry, set of round-shouldered, spindle-shanked, crane-necked varlets would civilized men appear! Stuffed calves, padded breasts, and scientifically cut panta-loons would then avail them nothing, and the effect would be truly deplorable.

Nothing in the appearance of the islanders struck me more forcibly than the whiteness of their teeth. The novelist always compares the masticators of his heroine to ivory; but I boldly pronounce the teeth of the Typee to be far more beautiful than ivory itself. The jaws of the oldest graybeards among them were much better garnished than those of most of the youths of civilized countries; while the teeth of the young and middle-aged, in their purity and whiteness, were actually dazzling to the eye. Their marvellous whiteness of the teeth is to be ascribed to the pure vegetable diet of these people, and the uninterrupted healthfulness of their natural mode of life.

The men, in almost every instance, are of lofty stature, scarcely ever less than six feet in height, while the other sex are uncommonly diminutive. The early period of life at which the human form arrives at maturity in this generous tropical climate, likewise deserves to be mentioned. A little creature, not more than thirteen years of age, and who in other particulars might be regarded as a mere child, is often seen nursing her own baby, whilst lads who, under less ripening skies, would be still at school, are here responsible fathers of families.

On first entering the Typee Valley, I had been struck with the marked contrast presented by its inhabitants with those of the bay I had previously left. In the latter place, I had not been favourably impressed with the personal appearance of the male portion of the population; although with the females, excepting in some truly melancholy instances, I had been wonderfully pleased. I had observed that even the little intercourse Europeans had carried on with the Nukuheva natives had not failed to leave its traces amongst them. One of the most dreadful curses under which humanity labours had commenced its havocks, and betrayed, as it ever does among the South Sea islanders, the most aggravated symptoms. From this, as from all other foreign infictions, the yet uncontaminated tenants of the Typee Valley were wholly exempt; and long may they continue from all other foreign inflictions, the yet uncontaminated tenants of Nukuheva natives had not failed to leave its traces amongst them.

That even the little intercourse Europeans had carried on with these melancholy instances, I had been wonderfully pleased. I had observed population; although with the females, excepting in some truly melancholy instances, I had been wonderfully pleased. I had observed that even the little intercourse Europeans had carried on with the Nukuheva natives had not failed to leave its traces amongst them. That even the little intercourse
ded, of a ojo o de un brazo, atribuible a la misma causa. Con
esas excepciones, todos los individuos parecían libres de esos
ingenioso clima tropical. Una criaturita de sólo trece años
ean, estaba en la mirada de su pureza y blanca. Esa maravillosa blanca
do, no se ha de dejar de imitar nuestras huelas en ellos. Una de las más terribles maldiciones que sufre la humanidad*, había comenzado estos estragos mostrando los más graves sins	omas, como pasa siempre con los isleños de la isla de la Madre del Sur. De todo esto, como de las demás aflicciones extranjeras, estaban completamente libres los habitantes del valle de Taipe, aún sin contagiar; ¿y ojalá sigan así mucho tiempo! Más les valdría seguir siendo para siempre los felices e inocentes bárbaros que son ahora, en vez de,

* This passage, which is cited as an almost literal translation from the original, I found in a small volume entitled 'Circumnavigation of the Globe, in which volume are several extracts from 'Dylampl’s Historical Collections'. The last-mentioned work I have never seen, but it is said to contain a very correct English version of great part of the learned Doctor Christoval Suaverde da Figueroa’s History of Mendana’s Voyage, published at Madrid, A.D. 1613.

En belleza de figura, sobrepasaban todo lo que he visto ja

 (*) (NOTA DEL AUTOR.) Este pasaje lo encontré, en traducción casi literal del original, en un pequeño volumen titulado Circumnavigation of the Globe, en que hay varias citas de Dalmyple’s Historical Collections. Esta última obra no la he visto nunca, pero se dice que contiene una versión en inglés, muy correcta, de gran parte de la Historia del viaje de Mendana, del sabio doctor Christoval Suaverde [sic] de Figueroa, publicada en Madrid, 1613.
wretched inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands, to enjoy the mere name of Christians without experiencing any of the vital operations of true religion, whilst, at the same time, they are made the victims of the worst vices and evils of civilized life.

Apart, however, from these considerations, I am inclined to believe that there exists a radical difference between the two tribes, if indeed they are not distinct races of men. To those who have merely touched at Nukuheva Bay, without visiting other portions of the island, it would hardly appear credible the diversities presented between the various small clans inhabiting so diminutive a spot. But the hereditary hostility which has existed between them for ages, fully accounts for this.

Not so easy, however, is it to assign an adequate cause for the endless variety of complexions to be seen in the Typee Valley. During the festival, I had noticed several young females whose skins were almost as white as any Saxon damsels; a slight dash of the mantling brown being all that marked the difference. This comparative fairness of complexion, though in a great degree perfectly natural, is partly the result of an artificial process, and of an entire exclusion from the sun. The juice of the 'papa' root found in great abundance at the head of the valley, is held in great esteem as a cosmetic, with which many of the females daily anoint their whole person. The habitual use of it whitens and beautifies the skin. Those of the young girls who resort to this method of heightening their charms, never expose themselves to the rays of the sun; an observance, however, that produces little or no inconvenience, since there are but few of the inhabited portions of the vale which are not shaded over with a spreading canopy of boughs, so that one may journey from house to house, scarcely deviating from the direct course, and yet never once see his shadow cast upon the ground.

The 'papa', when used, is suffered to remain upon the skin for several hours; being of a light green colour, it consequently imparts for the time a similar hue to the complexion. Nothing, therefore, can be imagined more singular than the appearance of these nearly naked damsels immediately after the application of the cosmetic. To look at one of them you would almost suppose she was some vegetable in an unripe state; and that, instead of living in the shade for ever, she ought to be placed out in the sun to ripen.

All the islanders are more or less in the habit of anointing themselves; the women preferring the 'aker' to 'papa', and the men using the oil of the coconuant. Mehevi was remarkable fond of mol- lifying his entire cuticle with this ointment. Sometimes he might be seen, with his whole body fairly reeking with the perfumed oil of the nut, looking as if he had just emerged from a soap-boiler's vat, or had undergone the process of dipping in a tallow-chandlery. To this cause perhaps, united to their frequent bathing and extreme cleanliness, is ascribable, in a great measure, the marvellous purity and smoothness of skin exhibited by the natives in general.

The prevailing tint among the women of the valley was a light olive, and of this style of complexion Fayaway afforded the most beautiful example. Others were still darker; while not a few were of a genuine golden colour, and some of a swarthy hue. As agreeing with much previously mentioned in this narrative I may here observe that Mendanna, their discoverer, in his account of the Marquesas, described the natives as wondrously beautiful to behold, and as nearly resembling the people of southern Europe. The first of these islands seen by Mendanna was La Madelena, which is not far distant from Nukuheva; and its inhabitants in every respect resemble those dwelling on that and the other islands of the group. Figueroa, the chronicler of Mendanna's voyage, says, that on the morning the land was descried, when the Spaniards drew near the shore, there salted forth, in rude progression, as los desgraciados habitantes de las Islas Sandwich, disfrutar solamente del nombre de cristianos sin experimentar ninguno de los efectos vitales de la verdadera religión, mientras que, al mismo tiempo, son victimas de los peores vicios y males de la vida civilizada.

Sin embargo, aparte de estas consideraciones, me inclino a creer que existe una radical diferencia entre las dos tribus, si es que, más aún, no son razas distintas de hombres. A los que sólo han tocado en la bahía de Nukuheva, sin visitar otras partes de la isla, les parecería casi increíble las diversidades que se ofrecen entre los diversos pequeños clanes que habitan tan reducido lugar. Pero eso lo explica la hostilidad hereditaria que ha existido entre ellos durante siglos.

No es tan fácil, sin embargo, indicar una causa adecuada de la interminable variedad de coloridos de piel que se ven en el valle de Taipi. Durante el festival, había notado varias jóvenes cuya piel era casi tan blanca como la de cualquier damisela sajona, siendo toda la diferencia un leve toque de moreno matizado. Esta relativa claridad de tez, aunque en buena medida es perfectamente natural, en parte es resultado de un proceso artificial y de evitar enteramente el sol. El jugo de la raiz de papa, que se encuentra en gran abundancia en el extremo del valle, se tiene en gran estima como cosmético: con él muchas mujeres ugen diariamente toda su persona. Su uso habitudinal blanquea y embellece la piel. Las jóvenes que recurren a este método para realzar sus encantos, jamás se exponen a los rayos del sol, cuidado, sin embargo, que produce poca o ninguna molestia, ya que son pocas las partes habitadas del valle que no están sombreadas por un extenso dosel de ramas, de modo que se puede ir de casa en casa, desviándose apenas del camino recto, sin ver ni una sola vez la propia sombra proyectada en el suelo.

La papa, cuando se usa, se deja en la piel varias horas: por ser de color verde claro, comunica durante ese tiempo un matiz análogo a la tez. Por consiguiente, no se puede imaginar nada más singular que el aspecto de esas damiselas, casi [201] desnudas, después de aplicarse el cosmético. Al ver a una de ellas, casi se suponía que era un vegetal poco maduro; y que, en vez de vivir a la sombra para siempre, debiera colocarse al sol para madurar.

Todos los isleños tienen más o menos costumbre de untarse: las mujeres prefieren el aker o papa, y los hombres usan aceite de coco. A Mehevi le gustaba mucho suavizar todo su cutis con ese ungüento. A veces se le veía con todo el cuerpo echando valvo del perfumado aceite de coco, como si acabara de salir de la tina de un jabonero o de haber sufrido una inmersión en una candelería de sebo. Quizá a esta causa, así como a sus frecuentes baños y extremada limpieza, se puede atribuir en gran medida la maravillosa pureza y suavidad de piel que muestran los indígenas en general.

El color predominante entre las mujeres del valle era un aceitu- nado claro, y Fayaway daba el más hermoso ejemplo de este estilo de cutis. Otras eran aún más oscuras, mientras que no pocas eran de auténtico color dorado, y otras de matiz tostadito.

En conformidad con mucho de lo mencionado antes en este relato, puedo observar aquí que Mendaña, su descubridor, en su narración sobre las Islas Marquesas, describió a los indígenas como extraordinariamente hermosos, y muy parecidos a la gente del sur de Europa. La primera de esas islas que vio Mendaña fue La Magdalena, que no está lejos de Nukuheva, y cuyos habi- tantes se parecen en todos los aspectos a los que viven en esa y otras islas del archipiélago. Figueroa, el cronista del viaje de Mendaña, dice que, en la mañana que se avistó tierra, al acer- carse los españoles a la orilla, los indígenas salieron en tosa
about seventy canoes, and at the same time many of the inhabitants (females I presume) made towards the ships by swimming. He adds, that "in complexion they were nearly white; of good stature, and finely formed; and on their faces and bodies were delineated representations of ships and other devices". The old Don then goes on to say, "There came, among others, two lads paddling their canoe, whose eyes were fixed on the ship; they had beautiful faces and the most promising animation of countenance; and were in all things so becoming, that the pilot-major Quiros affirmed, nothing in his life ever caused him so much regret as the leaving such fine creatures to be lost in that country." More than two hundred years have gone by since the passage of which the above is a translation was written; and it appears to me now, as I read it, as fresh and true as if written but yesterday. The islanders are still the same; and I have seen boys in the Typee Valley of whose "beautiful faces" and promising "animation of countenance" no one who has not beheld them can form any adequate idea. Cook, in the account of his voyage, pronounces the Marquesans as by far the most splendid islanders in the South Seas. Stewart, the chaplain of the U.S. ship Vincennes, in his "Scenes in the South Seas", expresses, in more than one place, his amazement at the surpassing loveliness of the women; and says that many of the Nukuheva damsels reminded him forcibly of the most celebrated beauties in his own land. Fanning, a Yankee mariner of some reputation, likewise records his lively impressions of the physical appearance of these people; and Commodore David Porter of the U.S. frigate Essex, is said to have been vastly smitten by the beauty of the ladies. Their great superiority over all other Polynesians cannot fail to attract the notice of those who visit the principal groups in the Pacific. The voluptuous Tahitians are the only people who at all deserve to be compared with them; while the dark-haired Hawaiians and the woolly-headed Fjeees are immeasurably inferior to them. The distinguishing characteristic of the Marquesan islanders, and that which at once strikes you, is the European cast of their features—a peculiarity seldom observable among other uncivilized people. Many of their faces present profiles classically beautiful, and in the valley of Typee I saw several who, like the stranger Marnoo, were in every respect models of beauty.

Some of the natives present at the Feast of Cala-bashes had displayed a few articles of European dress; disposed however, about their persons after their own peculiar fashion. Among these I perceived two pieces of cotton-cloth which poor Toby and myself had bestowed upon our youthful guides the afternoon we entered the valley. They were evidently reserved for gala days; and during those of the festival they rendered the young islanders who wore them very distinguished characters. The small number who were similarly adorned, and the great value they appeared to place upon the most common and most trivial articles, furnished ample evidence of the very restricted intercourse they held with vessels touching at the island. A few cotton handkerchiefs, of a gay pattern, tied about the neck, and suffered to fall over the shoulder; strips of fanciful calico, swathed about the loins, were nearly all I saw.

Indeed, throughout the valley, there were few things of any kind to be seen of European origin. All I ever saw, besides the articles just alluded to, were the six muskets preserved in the Ti, and three or four similar implements of warfare hung up in other houses; some small canvas bags, partly filled with bullets and powder, and half a dozen old hatchet-heads, with the edges blunted and battered to such a degree as to render them utterly useless. These last seemed to be regarded as nearly useless by the natives; and several times they held up, one of them before them, a gesture of disgust, manifested their contempt for anything that could so soon become unserviceable.

Algunos de los indígenas presentes en la Fiesta de las Calabazas habían lucido unos pocos artículos de vestimenta europea, pero dispuestos sobre sus personas conforme a su fantasía peculiar. Entre ellos percibí las dos piezas de tejido de algodón que el pobre Toby y yo habíamos regalado a nuestros jóvenes guías el día que entramos en el valle. Evidentemente, se reservaban para los días de gala, y durante los del festival daban un aire muy distinguido a los jóvenes isleños que los llevaban. Los pocos que iban adornados de modo semejante, y el gran valor que parecían dar a los artículos más comunes y triviales, proporcionaba abunda evidencia del trato tan restringido que tenían con barcos que tocaran en la isla. Unos pocos pañuelos de algodón de alegre estampado, atados al cuello, y dejados caer por los hombros, y unas tiras de indiana de fantasía ceñidas por la cintura, fueron casi todo lo que vi.

En efecto, a través del valle se podían ver pocas cosas de origen europeo. Todo lo que vi, además de los artículos a que acabo de aludir, fueron los seis [203] mosquetes conservados en el Ti, y tres o cuatro análogos instrumentos de guerra colgados en otras casas; algunas pequeñas bolsas de lona, medio llenas de balas y pólvora, y media docena de cabezas de hacha con el filo romo y golpeado hasta tal punto que se habían vuelto casi inútiles. Estas últimas, los indígenas parecían considerarlas casi sin valor, y varias veces, mostrándome una y tirándola a un lado con gesto de disgusto, manifestaron su desprecio por algo que tan pronto quedaba inservible.
But the muskets, the powder, and the bullets were held in most extravagant esteem. The former, from their great age and the peculiarities they exhibited, were well worthy a place in any antiquarian’s armory. I remember in particular one that hung in the Ti, and which Mehevi—supposing as a matter of course that I was able to repair it—had put into my hands for that purpose. It was one of those clumsy, old-fashioned, English pieces known generally as Tower Hill muskets, and, for aught I know, might have been left on the island by Wallace, Carteret, Cook, or Vancouver. The stock was half rotten and worm-eaten; the lock was as rusty and about as well adapted to its ostensible purpose as an old door-hinge; the threading of the screws about the trigger was completely worn away; while the barrel shook in the wood. Such was the weapon the chief desired me to restore to its original condition. As I did not possess the accomplishments of a gunsmith, and was likewise destitute of the necessary tools, I was reluctantly obliged to signify my inability to perform the task. At this unexpected communication Mehevi regarded me, for a moment, as if he half suspected I was some inferior sort of white man, who after all did not know much more than a Typee. However, after a most laboured explanation of the matter, I succeeded in making him understand the extreme difficulty of the task. Scarcely satisfied with my apology, however, he marched off with the superannuated musket in something of a huff, as if he would no longer expose it to the indignity of being manipulated by such unskilful fingers.

During the festival I had not failed to remark the simplicity of manner, the freedom from all restraint, and, to certain degree, the equality of condition manifested by the natives in general. No one appeared to assume any arrogant pretensions. There was little more than a slight difference in costume to distinguish the chiefs from the other natives. All appeared to mix together freely, and without any reserve; although I noticed that the wishes of a chief, even when delivered in the mildest tone, received the same immediate obedience which elsewhere would have been only accorded to a peremptory command. What may be the extent of the authority of the chiefs over the rest of the tribe, I will not venture to assert; but from all I saw during my stay in the valley, I was induced to believe that in matters concerning the general welfare it was very limited. The required degree of deference towards them, however, was willingly and cheerfully yielded; and as all authority is transmitted from father to son, I have no doubt that one of the effects here, as elsewhere, of high birth, is to induce respect and obedience.

The civil institutions of the Marquesas Islands appear to be in this, as in other respects, directly the reverse of those of the Tahitian and Hawaiian groups, where the original power of the king and chiefs was far more despotic than that of any tyrant in civilized countries. At Tahiti it used to be death for one of the inferior orders to approach, without permission, under the shadow, of the king’s grovel.

* Accounts like these are sometimes copied into English and American journals. They lead the reader to infer that the arts and customs of civilized life are rapidly refining the natives of the Sandwich Islands. But let no one be deceived by these accounts. The chiefs swagger about in gold lace and broadcloth, while the great mass of the common people are nearly as primitive in their appearance as in the days of Cook. In the progress of events at these islands, the two classes are receding from each other; the chiefs are daily becoming more luxurious and extravagant in their style of living, and the common people more and more destitute of the necessaries and decencies of life. But the end to which both will arrive at last will be the same: the one are fast destroying themselves by sensual indulgences, and the other are fast being destroyed by a complication of disorders, and the want of wholesome food. The resources of the domineering chiefs are wrung from the starving serfs, and every additional baulk with which they bedeck themselves is purchased by the sufferings of their bondmen; so that the measure of grow-gaw refinement attained by the chiefs is only an index to the actual state in which the greater portion of the population lie groveling.

Pero los mosquetes, la pólvora y las balas se tenían en enorme estima. Los mosquetes, por su gran vejez y las peculiaridades que mostraban, eran muy dignos de tener lugar en cualquier armamento de anticuario. Recuerdo en particular uno que colgaba en el Ti, y que Mehevi—suponiendo por supuesto que yo sabía arreglarlo—había puesto en mis manos con ese propósito. Era una de esas chapurcas piezas inglesas, pasadas de moda, que se suelen conocer como mosquetes Tower Hill, y a mi juicio, la podían haber dejado en la isla Wallaca, Carteret, Cook o Vancouver. La caba estaba medio podrida y comida de gusanos; la llave estaba oxidada, y tan poco apta para su finalidad como una vieja charnela de puerta; el enroscado de los tornillos en torno al gatillo estaba completamente desgastado, mientras que el cañón se sacudía en la madera. Tal era el arma que el jefe deseaba que yo devolviera a su situación originaria. Como yo no tenía las cualidades de un armero, y estaba igualmente desprovisto de las necesarias herramientas, me vi obligado, de mala gana, a expresar mi incapacidad para realizar la tarea. Antes esta inesperada comunicación Mehevi me contempló, por un momento, como si casi sospechara que yo era un hombre blanco de especie inferior que, después de todo, no sabía mucho más que un taipi. No obstante, tras una laboriosa explicación del asunto, logró hacerme entender la extremada dificultad de la tarea. Con todo, no mucho después, se marchó con el superante mosquete en la mano, un tanto enojado, como si no quisiera seguir exponiéndolo a la dignidad de que lo manejaran tan inexpertos dedos.

Durante el festival, yo no había dejado de observar la sencillez de maneras, la libertad de toda sujeción, y hasta cierto punto, la igualdad de condición manifestada por los indígenas en general. Nadie parecía asumir pretensiones arrogantes. Había poco más que una ligerísima diferencia de atavío para distinguir a los jefes de los demás indígenas. Todos parecían entremezclarse con libertad y sin reserva alguna, aunque advertí que los deseos de un jefe, aun cuando se pronunciaran en el tono más benévolo, recibían la obediencia inmediata que en otro lugar sólo se habría concedido a un mandato perentorio. No me atreveré a [204] afirmar cuál sea el alcance de la autoridad de los jefes sobre el resto de la tribu, pero, por todo lo que vi durante mi estancia en el valle, me incliné a creer que era muy limitada en asuntos referentes al bienestar general. No obstante, de buen grado y alegremente se les concedía el grado de deferencia requerido, y como toda autoridad se transmite de padre a hijo, no cabe duda de que uno de los efectos de la cuna elevada, allí como en todas partes, es producir respeto y obediencia.

Las instituciones civiles de las Islas Marquesas parecen ser en este aspecto como en otros, exactamente lo contrario que en los archipiélagos tahitiano y hawaiano, donde el poder originario del rey y de los jefes era mucho más despótico que el de ningún tirano en países civilizados. En Tahiti solía significar la muerte, para uno de las clases inferiores, el acercarse sin permiso a la sombra de la casa...
I might obtain my liberty.

assiduous court to him, hoping that eventually through his kindness judge from appearances. For the future I determined to pay most

retain for me the warmest regard, as far at least as I was enabled to

to be under his royal protection, and that he still continued to enter-
gratulating myself that Mehevi had from the first taken me as it

were under his royal protection, and that he still continued to enter-

me at Marheyo’s house, and whom, until the Festival, I had never
distinguished chiefs resided, some of whom had separately visited

me at Marheyo’s house, and whom, until the Festival, I had never

danced of feathers that he wore raised him in height above all who

me at Marheyo’s house, and whom, until the Festival, I had never

was not to be mistaken; and he whom I had only looked at as

as the hospitable host of the Ti, and one of the military leaders of

as the hospitable host of the Ti, and one of the military leaders of

The revels, however, had brought together all the warriors whom I had seen individually and in groups at different times and

there was a number of distinguished chiefs resident, some of whom had separately visited

there was a number of distinguished chiefs resident, some of whom had separately visited

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

Calabashes I had been puzzled what particular station to assign to

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

Mehevi. But the important part he took upon that occasion con-

vinced me that he had no superior among the inhabitants of the

vinced me that he had no superior among the inhabitants of the

vinced me that he had no superior among the inhabitants of the

vinced me that he had no superior among the inhabitants of the

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

Mehevi was in fact the greatest of the chiefs—the head of his

clan—the sovereign of the valley; and the simplicity of the social institu-
tions of the people could not have been more completely proved than by the

fact, that after having been several weeks in the valley, and almost in daily

intercourse with Mehevi, I should have remained until the time of the festi-
dance of the sacred deer, the sovereign of the valley; and the simplicity of the social institu-
tions of the people could not have been more completely proved than by the

fact, that after having been several weeks in the valley, and almost in daily

intercourse with Mehevi, I should have remained until the time of the festi-

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The particular grades of rank existing among the chiefs of

Typee, I could not in all cases determine. Previous to the Feast of

The ‘blood royal’ is an extremely thick, depraved fluid; formed principally of raw fish, bad brandy, and European sweet-meats, and is charged with a variety of eruptive humour, which are developed in sundry blotesches and pimples upon the August face of majesty itself, and the angelic countenances of the ‘princes and princesses of the blood royal’!

Previously to seeing the Dancing Widows I had little idea that there were any matrimonial relations subsisting in Typee, and I should as soon have thought of a Platonic affection being cultivated between the sexes, as of the solemn connection of man and wife. To be sure, there were old Marheyo and Timor, who seemed to have a sort of nuptial understanding with one another; but for all that, I had sometimes observed a comical-looking old gentleman dressed in a suit of shabby tattooing, who had the audacity to take various liberties with the lady, and that too in the very presence of the old warrior her husband, who looked on as good-naturedly as if nothing was happening. This behaviour, until subsequent discoveries enlightened me, puzzled me more than anything else I witnessed in Typee.

As for Mehevi, I had supposed him a confirmed bachelor, as well as most of the principal chiefs. At any rate, if they had wives and families, they ought to have been ashamed of themselves; for sure I am, they never troubled themselves about any domestic affairs. In truth, Mehevi seemed to be the president of a club of hearty fellows, who kept ‘Bachelor’s Hall’ in fine style at the Ti. I had no doubt but that they regarded children as odious incumbrances; and their ideas of domestic felicity were sufficiently shown in the fact, that they allowed no meddlesome housekeepers to turn topsy-turvy.

EN EL REY MEHEVI. ALUSIÓN A SU MAJESTAD HAWAIANA. CONDUCTA DE MARHEYO Y MEHEVI EN CIERTOS ASUNTOS DELICADOS. PECULIAR MÉTODO DE MATRIMONIO. NÚMERO DE LA POBLACIÓN. UNIFORMIDAD. LUGARES DE SEPULCRO. EXEQUIAS FUNERALES EN NUKUHEVA. NÚMERO DE HABITANTES EN TAIPI. SITUACIÓN DE LAS VIVIENDAS. FELICIDAD DISFRUTADA EN EL VALLE. UNA ADVERTENCIA. ALGUNAS IDEAS RESPECTO A LA CIVILIZACIÓN DE LAS ISLAS. REFERENCIA A LA SITUACIÓN ACTUAL DE LOS HAWAIANOS. HISTORIA DE LA MUJER DE UN MISIONERO. TOCADOS DE MODA EN OAHU. REFLEXIONES

¡El Rey Mehevi! ¡Titulo _______ resonante! Y ¿por qué no habría de concedérselo al hombre principal del valle de Taipi? Las republicanas misioneras de Oahu hacen que el Diario de Corte, publicado en Honolulu, dé crónicas de los más triviales movimientos de ‘Su Graciosa Majestad’ el Rey Kammahamahama III, y ‘Sus Altzas los Principes de Sangre Reals’. Y ¿quién? ‘Su Graciosa Majestad’, [207] y cuál es la calidad de su ‘sangre real’? Su Graciosa Majestad es un imbécil, gordo, perezoso, con cara de negro, con tan escaso carácter como poder. Ha perdido los nobles rasgos del barbáro, sin adquirir la gracia redentora de un ser civilizado, y aunque miembro de la Sociedad Hawaiiana de Templanza, es un empedernido bebedor de aguardiente.

La ‘sangre real’ es un fluido muy denso y depravado, formado principalmente de pescado crudo, coñac malo y dulces europeos, y cargado de una variedad de humores eruptivos, que se desarrollan en diversos sarpullidos y granos en la augusta cara de su mismísima Majestad y en los angelicales rostros de los ‘príncipes y princesas de sangre real’.

Ahora, si a la marioneta farsante de un primer magistrado en las Islas Sandwich se le concede el título de rey, ¿por qué se lo voy a negar al noble salvaje Mehevi, que es mil veces más digno de esa denominación? ¡Salve, pues, oh Mehevi, Rey del Valle Canibal, y muchos años de vida y de prosperidad a Su Majestad Taipiana! Que Dios guarde su vida muchos años, como enemigo acérrimo de Nukuheva y de los franceses, si es que una actitud hostil puede proteger a sus deliciosos dominios de las inexorables aflicciones de la civilización en el Mar del Sur.

Antes de ver a las Viudas Danzantes, tenía escasa idea de que existieran relaciones matrimoniales en Taipi, y casi hubiera pensado que se cultivaba un afecto platónico entre los sexos, más bien que la solemne conexión entre marido y mujer. Desde luego, ahí estaban los viejos Marheyo y Timor, que parecían tener entre sí una suerte de entendimiento nupcial, pero, aun con todo eso, varias veces había observado a un viejo caballero de aspecto cómico vestido con una especie de tatuaje andrajoso, que tenía la audacia de tomarse ciertas libertades con la señora, y ello en la misma presencia de su marido el viejo guerrero, que lo contemplaba con tan buen humor como si no pasara nada. Este comportamiento, hasta que me iluminaron posteriores descubrimientos, me desconcertó más que ninguna otra cosa de las que observé en Taipi.

En cuanto a Mehevi, le había supuesto un solterón empedernido, igual que a la mayor parte de los jefes principales. En todo caso, si tenían mujeres y familias, debían haberse avergonzado de ellos mismos, pues estoy seguro de que jamás se ocupaban de asuntos domésticos. En realidad, Mehevi parecía el presidente de un club de alegres muchachos, que tenían una ‘casa de solteros’ en gran estilo en el Ti. Yo no dudaba de que consideraban a los niños como odiosos estorros; y sus ideas sobre la felicidad doméstica se mostraban suficientemente [208] en el hecho de que no permitían que amas de...
La Sociedad Arreory —«Ariori» o «Areoi»— era una asociación polinesia religiosa de iniciados, comediantes y actores, que realizaban dramas y danzas, según Melville. J. M. Valverde
I was not able to learn what particular ceremony was observed in forming the marriage contract, but am inclined to think that it must have been of a very simple nature. Perhaps the mere 'popping the question', as it is termed with us, might have been followed by an immediate nuptial alliance. At any rate, I have more than one reason to believe that tedious courtships are unknown in the valley of Typee.

The males considerably outnumber the females. This holds true of many of the islands of Polynesia, although the reverse of what is the case in most civilized countries. The girls are first wooed and won, at a very tender age, by some stripling in the household in which they reside. This, however, is a mere frolic of the affections, and no formal engagement is contracted. By the time this first love has a little subsided, a second suitor presents himself, of graver years, and carries both boy and girl away to his own habitation. This disinterested and generous-hearted fellow now wedds the young couple—marrying damsel and lover at the same time—and all three thenceforth live together as harmoniously as so many turtles. I have, heard of some men who in civilized countries rashly marry large families with their wives, but had no idea that there was any place where people married supplementary husbands with them. Infidelity on either side is very rare. No man has more than one wife, and no wife of mature years has less than two husbands,—sometimes she has three, but such instances are not frequent. The marriage tie, whatever it may be, does not appear to be indissoluble; for separations occasionally happen. These, however, when they do take place, produce no unhappiness, and are preceded by no bickerings; for the simple reason, than an ill-used wife or a henpecked husband is not obliged to file a bill in Chancery to obtain a divorce. As nothing stands in the way of a separation, the matrimonial yoke sits easily and lightly, and a Typee wife lives with her husband as man and wife, father and son, could hardly be said to exist. The marriage tie, whatever it may endure, is, as it were, unconsciously practised.

The contrast exhibited between the Marquesas and other islands of the Pacific in this respect, is worthy of being noticed. At Tahiti the marriage tie was altogether unknown; and the relation of husband and wife, father and son, could hardly be said to exist. The Arreory Society,—one of the most singular institutions that ever existed in any part of the world,—spread universal licentiousness over the island. It was the voluptuous character of these people which rendered the disease introduced among them by De Bougainville's ships; in 1768, doubly destructive. It visited them like a plague, an enduring promiscuous intercourse of the sexes is hereby avoided, and virtue, without being clamorously invoked, is, as it were, unconsciously practised.

Notwithstanding the existence of wedlock among the Typees, the Scriptural injunction to increase and multiply seems to be but indifferently attended to. I never saw any of those large families in arithmetical or step-ladder progression which one often meets with at home. I never knew of more than two youngsters living together in the same home, and but seldom even that number. As for the women, it was very plain that the anxieties of the nursery but seldom disturbed the serenity of their souls; and they were never seen going about the valley with half a score of little ones tagging at their apron-strings, or rather at the bread-fruit-leaf they usually wore in the rear.

The ratio of increase among all the Polynesian nations is very small; and in some places as yet uncorrupted by intercourse...
with Europeans, the births would appear not very little to outnumber the deaths; the population in such instances remaining nearly the same for several successive generations, even upon those islands seldom or never desolated by wars, and among people with whom the crime of infanticide is altogether unknown. This would seem expressively ordained by Providence to prevent the overstocking of the islands with a race too indolent to cultivate the ground, and who, for that reason alone, would, by any considerable increase in their numbers, be exposed to the most deplorable misery. During the entire period of my stay in the valley of Typee, I never saw more than ten or twelve children under the age of six months, and only became aware of two births.

It is to the absence of the marriage tie that the late rapid decrease of the population of the Sandwich Islands and of Tahiti is in part to be ascribed. The vices and diseases introduced among these unhappy people annually swell the ordinary mortality of the islands, while, from the same cause, the originally small number of births is proportionally decreased. Thus the progress of the Hawaiians and Tahitians to utter extinction is accelerated in a sort of compound ratio.

I have before had occasion to remark, that I never saw any of the ordinary signs of a pace of sepulture in the valley, a circumstance which I attributed, at the time, to my living in a particular part of it, and being forbidden to extend my rambles to any considerable distance towards the sea. I have since thought it probable, however, that the Typees, either desirous of removing from their sight the evidences of mortality, or prompted by a taste for rural beauty, may have some charming cemetery situation in the shadowy recesses along the base of the mountains. At Nukuheva, two or three large quadrangular ‘pi-pis’, heavily flagged, enclosed with regular stone walls, and shaded over and almost hidden from view by the interlacing branches of enormous trees, were pointed out to me as burial-places. The bodies, I understood, were deposited in rude vaults beneath the flagging, and were suffered to remain there without being disinterred. Although nothing could be more strange and gloomy than the aspect of these places, where the lofty trees threw their dark shadows over rude blocks of stone, a stranger looking at them would have discerned none of the ordinary evidences of a place of sepulture.

During my stay in the valley, as none of its inmates were so accommodating as to die and be buried in order to gratify my curiosity with regard to their funeral rites, I was reluctantly obliged to remain in ignorance of them. As I have reason to believe, however, the observances of the Typees in these matters are the same with those of all the other tribes in the island, I will here relate a scene I chanced to witness at Nukuheva.

A young man had died, about daylight, in a house near the beach. I had been sent ashore that morning, and saw a good deal of the preparations they were making for his obsequies. The body, neatly wrapped in a new white tappa, was laid out in an open shed of cocoanut boughs, upon a bier constructed of elastic bamboo ingeniously twisted together. This was supported about two feet from the ground, by large canes planted uprightly in the earth. Two females, of a deserted appearance, watched by his side, plaintively chanting and beating the air with large grass fans whitened with pipe-clay. In the dwelling-house adjoining a numerous company we assembled, and various articles of food were being prepared for consumption. Two or three individuals, distinguished by head-dresses of beautiful tappa, and wearing a great number of ornaments, appeared to officiate as masters of the ceremonies. By noon the entertainment had fairly begun and we were told that it would last during the whole of the two following days. With the exception of those who mourned by trato con los europeos, los nacimientos parecen superar en muy poco a las muertes, con lo que la población permanece casi igual durante varias generaciones sucesivas, incluso en las islas rara vez o nunca desoladas por guerras, y entre gentes que desconocen el delito de infanticidio. Ello parecería expresamente ordenado por la Providencia para evitar que las islas quedaran desmeliendo llena de una raza en exceso indolente para cultivar el suelo, y que, sólo por esa razón, se vería expuesta a la más deplorable miseria por un aumento considerable en su número. Durante toda mi estancia en el valle de Taiipi, nunca vi más de diez o doce niños de menos de seis meses, y sólo advertí dos nacimientos.

A la ausencia del vínculo matrimonial es a lo que debe atribuirse en parte la reciente disminución rápida de la población de las Islas Sandwich y de Tahiti. Los vicios y las enfermedades introducidos entre esa desdichada gente aumentan anualmente la mortalidad habitual en las islas, a la vez que, por la misma causa, decrece en proporción el número de nacimientos, ya originalmente pequeño. Así el avance de los hawaianos y tahitianos hacia la extinción completa se acelera con una especie de interés compuesto.

Durante mi estancia en el valle, como ninguno de sus habitantes tuvo la condescendencia de morirse y ser enterrado para satisfacer mi curiosidad sobre sus ritos funerarios, me vi obligado de mala gana a seguir ignorándolos. Sin embargo, como tengo todas las razones para creer que las observancias de los taipis en esos asuntos son las mismas que las de todas las demás tribus de la isla, contaré aquí una escena que por casualidad presencié en Nukuheva.

Había muerto un joven, a eso de amanecer, en una casa cercana a la playa. A mí me habían mandado a tierra aquella mañana, y vi buena parte de los preparativos que hacían para sus exequias. El cadáver, pulcramente envuelto en tappa blanca y nueva, quedó extendido en un cobertizo abierto, de ramas de cocotero, sobre un féretro construido de bambúes elásticos ingeniosamente entrelazados. Éste se sostenía a dos pies del suelo, con grandes cañas plantadas de pie en tierra. Dos mujeres, de aspecto abatido, velaban al lado canturreando plácidamente y llevando el compás con grandes abanicos de hierba enjalbegados en blanquizual. En la vivienda cercana, se había reunido un numeroso grupo, y se preparaban para su consumo diversos artículos de alimentación. Dos o tres individuos, distinguidos por tocados de hermosa tappa, y ostentando un gran número de ornamentos, parecían actuar de maestros de ceremonia. Hacia mediodía, la solemnidad había empezado del todo, y nos dijeron que duraría por lo menos durante los dos días siguientes, por entero. Con excepción de las que gemían junto al cadáver, to-
the corpse, every one seemed disposed to drown the sense of the late bereavement in convivial indulgence. The girls, decked out in their savage finery, danced; the old men chanted; the warriors smoked and chatted; and the young and lusty, of both sexes, feasted plentifully, and seemed to enjoy themselves as pleasantly as they could have done had it been a wedding.

The islanders understand the art of embalming, and practise it with such success that the bodies of their great chiefs are frequently preserved for many years in the very houses where they died. I saw three of these in my visit to the Bay of Tior. One was enveloped in immense folds of tappa, with only the face exposed, and hung erect against the side of the dwelling. The others were stretched out upon biers of bamboo, in open, elevated temples, which seemed consecrated to their memory. The heads of enemies killed in battle are invariably preserved and hung up as trophies in the house of the conqueror. I am not acquainted with the process which is in use, but believe that fumigation is the principal agency employed. All the remains which I saw presented the appearance of a ham after being suspended for some time in a smoky chimney.

But to return from the dead to the living. The late festival had drawn together, as I had every reason to believe, the whole population of the vale, and consequently I was enabled to make some estimate with regard to its numbers. I should imagine that there were about two thousand inhabitants in Typee; and no number could have been better adapted to the extent of the valley. The valley is some nine miles in length, and may average one in breadth; the houses being distributed at wide intervals throughout its whole extent, principally, however, towards the head of the vale. There are no villages; the houses stand here and there in the shadow of the groves, or are scattered along the banks of the winding stream; their golden-hued tent, principally, however, towards the head of the vale. There are no roads of any kind in the valley. Nothing but a labyrinth of footpaths twisting and turning among the thickets without end.

The penalty of the Fall presses very lightly upon the valley of Typee; for, with the one solitary exception of striking a light, I scarcely saw any piece of work performed there which caused the sweat to stand upon a single brow. As for digging and delving for a livelihood, the thing is altogether unknown. Nature has planted the bread-fruit and the banana, and in her own good time she brings them to maturity, when the idle savage stretches forth his hand, and satisfies his appetite.

Ill-fated people! I shudder when I think of the change a few years will produce in their parasitical abode; and probably when the most destructive vices, and the worst attendances on civilization, shall have driven all peace and happiness from the valley, the magnanimous French will proclaim to the world that the Marquesas Islands have been converted to Christianity! and this the Catholic world will doubtless consider as a glorious event. Heaven help the ‘Isles of the Sea’! — The sympathy which Christendom feels for them, has, alas! in too many instances proved their bane.

How little do some of these poor islanders comprehend when they look around them, that no inconsiderable part of their disasters originate in certain tea-party excitements, under the influence of which benevolent-looking gentlemen in white cravats solicit alms, and old ladies in spectacles, and young ladies in sober russet low gowns, contribute sixpences towards the creation of a fund, the object of which is to ameliorate the spiritual condition of the Polynesians, but whose end has almost invariably been to accomplish their temporal destruction!

Let the savages be civilized, but civilize them with bene-

dos los demás parecían dispuestos a ahogar la sensación de la reciente pérdida entregándose al banquete. Las muchachas bailaban cubiertas con sus ornamentos salvajes; los viejos canturreaban, los guerreros fumaban y charlaban, y los jóvenes animosos de ambos sexos se banqueataban abundantemente, y parecían disfrutar tanto como si hubiera sido una boda.

Los isleños entienden del arte de embalsamar, y lo practican con tal éxito, que los cadáveres de los grandes jefes muchas veces se conservan durante muchos años en las mismas casas donde murieron. Vi tres de ellos en mi visita a la bahía de Tior. Uno estaba envuelto en inmensos pliegues de tappa, tan sólo con la cara al descubierto, y colgado derecho contra el flanco de la vivienda. Los otros estaban tendidos en féretros de bambú, en templos abiertos y elevados, que parecían consagrados a su memoria. Las cabezas de los enemigos muertos en la batalla siempre se conservan y se cuelgan como trofeos en casa del conquistador. No conozco el proceso que se usa, pero creo que el principal elemento empleado [213] es la disecación. Todos los restos que yo vi presentaban el aspecto de un jamón después que se cuelga durante algún tiempo en una chimenea de mucho humo.

Pero, volviendo de los muertos a los vivos, el reciente festival, según tenía yo todos los motivos para creer, atrajo a la entera población del valle, y por tanto pude hacer algún cálculo sobre su número. Yo pensaba que había unos dos mil habitantes en Taipi, y ningún otro número se habría adaptado mejor a la extensión del valle. El valle tiene unas nueve millas de largo, y por término medio, quizás una milla de ancho: las casas están distribuidas a amplios intervalos por toda su extensión, pero sobre todo hacia el arranque del valle. No hay pueblos: las casas están acá y allá, a la sombra de los bosques, o se dispersan a lo largo de las márgenes del serpentante rio; sus doradas paredes de bambú y su resplandeciente techo blanco forman un hermoso contraste con el verdor perpetuo de que están recubiertos. No hay caminos de ninguna clase en el valle; nada, sino un laberinto de veredas que se retuercen y dan vueltas sin fin entre las espesuras.

El castigo del Pecado Original oprime con mucha ligereza el valle de Taipi, pues, con la excepción única y solitaria del modo de hacer fuego, apenas vi que se realizara allí ningún trabajo que hiciera brotar sudor en una sola frente. En cuanto a cavar y picar para ganarse la vida, el asunto es absolutamente desconocido. La Naturaleza ha plantado el árbol del pan y el plátano, y a su momento debido los hace madurar: entonces el ocioso salvaje extiende la mano y satisface su apetito.

¡Maldadada gente! Me estremezco al pensar en el cambio que unos pocos años producirán en esta morada parasitaria; y probablemente, cuando los vicios más destructores y las peores consecuencias de la civilización destierran toda paz y felicidad del valle, los magnánimos franceses proclamarán al mundo que las islas Marquesas se han convertido al cristianismo. Y sin duda, el mundo católico lo considerará como un acontecimiento glorioso. ¡Dios ayude a las islas del océano! La simpatía que la Cristiandad siente por ellas, ¡ay!, en demasiados casos ha resultado su calamidad.

¡Qué poco se imaginan estos pobres isleños, al mirar a su alrededor, que una parte nada desdeseable de sus desastres se origina en ciertas reuniones para tomar el té, bajo cuya influencia unos caballos de aspecto benévolo y de corbata blanca solicitan limosnas, y unas ancianas señoras con impertinentes y unas señoritas con recaudos y largos vestidos hermeos contribuyen con monedas de seis pesiques a la creación de un fondo cuyo objetivo es mejorar la situación [214] espiritual de los polinesios, pero cuyo fin casi siempre ha sido lograr su destrucción temporal!

Que se civilicen los salvajes, pero que se les civilice con benefi-
efits, and not with evils; and let heathenism be destroyed, but not by destroying the heathen. The Anglo-Saxon hive have extirpated Paganism from the greater part of the North American continent; but with it they have likewise extirpated the greater portion of the Red race. Civilization is gradually sweeping from the earth the lingering vestiges of Paganism, and at the same time the shrinking forms of its unhappy worshippers.

Among the islands of Polynesia, no sooner are the images overturned, the temples demolished, and the idolators converted into NOMINAL Christians, that disease, vice, and premature death make their appearance. The depopulated land is then recruited from the rapacious, hordes of enlightened individuals who settle themselves within its borders, and clamorously announce the progress of the Truth. Neat villas, trim gardens, shaven lawns, spires, and cupolas arise, while the poor savage soon finds himself an interloper in the country of his fathers, and that too on the very site of the hut where he was born. The spontaneous fruits of the earth, which God in his wisdom had ordained for the support of the indolent natives, remorselessly seized upon and appropriated by the stranger, are dero"
wretched old man until the ascent is mounted? Not she; she could not dream of it. To be sure, she used to think nothing of driving the cows to pasture on the old farm in New England; but times have changed since then. So she retains her seat and bawls out, ‘Hookee! hookee!’ (pull, pull.) The old gentleman, frightened at the sound, labors away harder than ever; and the younger one makes a great show of straining himself, but takes care to keep one eye on his mistress, in order to know when to dodge out of harm’s way. At last the good lady loses all patience; ‘Hookee! hookee!’ again she cries - ‘Hooked tata kannaka!’ (pull strong, men,) - but all in vain, and she is obliged in the end to dismount and, sad necessity! actually to walk to the top of the hill.

At the town where this paragon of humanity resides, is a spacious and elegant American chapel, where divine service is regularly performed. Twice every Sabbath towards the close of the exercise may be seen a score or two of little waggons ranged along the railing in front of the edifice, with two squalid native footmen in the livery of nakedness standing by each, and waiting for the dismissal of the congregation to draw their superiors home.

Lest the slightest misconception should arise from anything thrown out in this chapter, or indeed in any other part of the volume, let me here observe that against the cause of missions in, the abstract no Christian can possibly be opposed: it is in truth a just and holy cause. But if the great end proposed by it be spiritual, the agency employed to accomplish that end is purely earthly; and, although the object in view be the achievement of much good, that agency may nevertheless be productive of evil. In short, missionary undertaking, however it may blessed of heaven, is in itself but human; and subject, like everything else, to errors and abuses. And have not errors and abuses crept into the most sacred places, and may there not be unworthy or incapable missionaries abroad, as well as ecclesiastics of similar character at home? May not the unworthiness or incapacity of those who assume apostolic functions upon the remote islands of the sea more easily escape detection by the world at large than if it were displayed in the heart of a city? An unwarranted confidence in the sanctity of its apostles—a proneness to regard them as incapable of guile—and an impatience of the least suspicion to their rectitude as men or Christians, have ever been prevailing faults in the Church. Nor is this to be wondered at: for subject as Christianity is to the assaults of unprincipled foes, we are made to walk in many dangers, and take care to keep astamical misconduct as the offspring of malevolence or irreligious feeling. Not even this last consideration, however shall deter me from the honest expression of my sentiments.

There is something apparently wrong in the practical operations of the Sandwich Islands Mission. Those who from pure religious motives contribute to the support of this enterprise should take care to ascertain that their donations, flowing through many devious channels, at last effect their legitimate objects, and that the conversion of the Hawaiians. I urge this not because I doubt the moral probity of those who disburse the funds, but because I know that they are not rightly applied. To read pathetic accounts of missionary hardships, and glowing descriptions of conversions, and baptisms, taking place beneath palm-sus cuerpos y se bajará, dejando cómo al desdichado viejo hasta que se acabe la subida? No será ella: ella no podría ni soñarlo. Desde luego, no le importaría llevar las vacas a pastar en su vieja granja de New England, pero desde entonces los tiempos han cambiado. Así que permanece en su asiento y aullá: ¡Huki, huki! (tirar, tirar!).

El anciano, asustado al oírlo, sigue esforzándose más que nunca, y el joven hace grandes ostentaciones de ponerse en tensión, pero cuida de no perder de vista a su señora, para saber cuándo echarse a un lado. Por fin, la buena dama pierde la paciencia: ¡Huki, huki! y da un golpe con el pesado mango de su gran abanico en el cráneo descubierto del viejo salvaje, mientras el joven se esquiva a un lado y se pone fuera de su alcance. ¡Huki, huki!—vuelve a gritar:—¡Huki tata kannaka! (tirar fuerte, hombres!), pero todo es en vano, y se ve al fin obligada a desmontar, y ¡priste necesidad! a ir andando hasta lo alto de la cuesta. [216]

En la ciudad donde reside este ejemplo de humanidad hay una espaciosa y elegante capilla americana, en la que se celebra regularmente el servicio religioso. Dos veces en cada día festivo, hacia el final de las prácticas, se ven un par de docenas de cochechos ante la baranda que hay delante del edificio, con dos escolárulos lacayos indígenas ante cada coche, en la librea de la desnudez, esperando la despedida de la feligresia para llevar a casa a sus superiores.

Para que no se produzca el menor malentendido con nada de lo expuesto en este capítulo, ni en ninguna otra parte del libro, permitaseme observar aquí que ningún cristiano puede oponerse contra la causa de las misiones, en abstracto. Pero aunque la gran finalidad perseguida con ellas es espiritual, el medio empleado para lograr esa finalidad es puramente espiritual; y, aunque el objetivo buscado es el logro de mucho bien, es posible, sin embargo, que ese medio produzca males. En resumen, la labor misional, por más que esté bendecida por los cielos, en sí misma no es sino humana, y, como lo demás, sujeta a errores y abusos. Y ¿no se han deslizado errores y abusos en los lugares más sagrados, y no puede haber por ahí misioneros indignos o incapaces, como hay eclesiásticos semejantes en nuestra patria? ¿Acaso la indigidad o incapacidad de los que asumen funciones de apostolado en las islas remotas del mar no puede escapar más fácilmente a ser descubierta por el mundo en general en que si tuviera lugar en el corazón de una ciudad? La confianza ilimitada en la santidad de sus apóstoles —la propensión a considerarlos como incapaces de culpa— y la irritación ante la menor suspicacia sobre su rectitud como hombres o cristianos, han sido siempre defectos existentes en la Iglesia. Y no hay que extrañarse de ello, pues, sujeta como está la Cristiandad a los ataques de enemigos sin principios, estamos dispuestos por naturaleza a considerar todo lo extraño como producto de malevolencia o de sentimientos irreligiosos. Sin embargo, ni siquiera esta última consideración me arredrará de expresar honestamente mis opiniones.

Hay algo decididamente erróneo en las actuaciones prácticas de las misiones de las Islas Sandwich. Aquéllos que, por motivos puramente religiosos, contribuyen a sostener esta empresa, deberían cuidarse de comprobar si sus donativos, fluyendo por tantos canales torcidos, logran por fin su objetivo legítimo, la conversión de los hawaianos. Insisto en esto, no porque dude de la probidad moral de los que administran esos fondos, sino porque sé que no se aplican adecuadamente. Una cosa es leer noticias patéticas sobre esfuerzos misionales, y refugiantes descripciones de convergencias, y bautismos que tienen lugar bajo palmeras, y...
trees, is one thing; and to go to the Sandwich Islands and see the missionaries dwelling in picturesque and prettily furnished coral-rock villas, whilst the miserable natives are committing all sorts of immorality around them, is quite another.

In justice to the missionaries, however, I will willingly admit, that where-ever evils may have resulted from their collective mismanagement of the business of the mission, and from the want of vital piety evinced by some of their number, still the present deplorable condition of the Sandwich Islands is by no means wholly chargeable against them. The demoralizing influence of a dissipate foreign population, and the frequent visits of all descriptions of vessels, have tended not a little to increase the evils alluded to. In a word, here, as in every case where civilization has in any way been introduced among those whom we call savages, she has scattered her vices, and witheld her blessings.

As wise a man as Shakespeare has said, that the bearer of evil tidings hath but a losing office; and so I suppose will it prove with me, in communicating to the trusting friends of the Hawaiian Mission what has been disclosed in various portions of this narrative. I am persuaded, however, that as these disclosures will by their very nature attract attention, so they will lead to something which will not be without ultimate benefit to the cause of Christianity in the Sandwich Islands.

I have but one more thing to add in connection with this subject—those things which I have stated as facts will remain facts, in spite of whatever the bigotted or incredulous may say or write against them. My reflections, however, on those facts may not be free from error. If such be the case, I claim no further indulgence than should be conceded to every man whose object is to do good.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVEN

THE SOCIAL CONDITION AND GENERAL CHARACTER OF THE TYPEES

I HAVE already mentioned that the influence exerted over the people of the valley by their chiefs was mild in the extreme; and as to any general rule or standard of conduct by which the commonalty were governed in their intercourse with each other, so far as my observation extended, I should be almost tempted to say, that none existed on the island, except, indeed, the mysterious ‘Taboo’ be considered as such. During the time I lived among the Typees, no one was ever put upon his trial for any offence against the public. To all appearance there were no courts of law or equity. There was no municipal police for the purpose of apprehending vagrants and disorderly characters. In short, there were no legal provisions whatever for the well-being and conservation of society, the enlightened end of civilized legislation. And yet everything went on in the valley with a harmony and smoothness unparalleled, I will venture to assert, in the most select, refined, and pious associations of mortals in Christendom. How are we to explain this enigma? These islanders were heathens! savages! ay, cannibals! and how came they without the aid of established law, to exhibit, in so eminent a degree, that social order which is the greatest blessing and highest pride of the social state?

It may reasonably be inquired, how were these people governed? how were their passions controlled in their everyday transactions? It must have been by an inherent principle of honesty and charity towards each other. They seemed to be governed by that [217] otra cosa muy distinta es ir a las Islas Sandwich y ver a los misioneros viviendo en villas pintorescas, de roca de coral, pintorescas y lindamente amuebladas, mientras los miserables indígenas cometen toda clase de inmorralidades a su alrededor.

Sin embargo, para hacer justicia a los misioneros, de buen grado admito que, cualesquiera que sean los males que hayan resultado de su mal manejo colectivo del asunto de la misión y de la falta de piedad vitalizadora mostrada por algunos de ellos, con todo, la actual situación deplorable de las Islas Sandwich no se les puede atribuir por entero a ellos. La influencia desmoralizadora de una disolvente población europea, y las frecuentes visitas de toda clase de barcos, han contribuido no poco a aumentar los males aludidos. En pocas palabras, aquí la Civilización, como en todos los casos en que se ha introducido entre los que llamamos salvajes, ha dispersado sus vicios y se ha reservado sus bendiciones.

Un hombre tan sabio como Shakespeare ha dicho que el que lle- va malas noticias tiene un cargo de poco provecho, y así supongo que me pasará a mi, al comunicar a los confiados amigos de la misión hawaiana lo que se ha revelado en diversas partes de mi narración. Sin embargo, estoy persuadido de que, como estas revelaciones llamarán la atención por su misma naturaleza, llevarán a algo que no dejará en definitiva de ser beneficioso para la causa de la Cristiandad en las Islas Sandwich.

Sólo me queda una cosa que añadir en relación con este tema: las cosas que he presentado como hechos seguirán siendo hechos a pesar de todo lo que digan o escriban contra ello los fanáticos o incrédulos. Sin embargo, mis reflexiones sobre esos hechos quizá no estén libres de errores. Si es ese el caso, no pido más indulgencia sino la que debe concederse a todo aquel que pretenda hacer bien.

CAPÍTULO XXVII

LA SITUACIÓN SOCIAL Y EL, CARÁCTER GENERAL DE LOS TAIPIS

Ya he mencionado que la influencia ejercida por los jefes sobre la gente del valle era extremadamente suave, y por lo que toca a alguna regla general o canon de conducta que gobernara a la comunidad en su trato mutuo, en lo que alcanzaba mi observación, casi me sentiría tentado a decir que no existía en la isla, salvo, desde luego, que se considere como tal el misterioso ‘tabú’. Durante el tiempo que viví entre los taipis, ninguno fue juzgado por delito contra la comunidad. Según todas las apariencias, no había tribunales ni jueces de paz. No había policía municipal con el fin de detener a los vagos y turbulentos. En resumen, no había ninguna providencia legal para el bienestar y conservación de la sociedad, objetivo ilustrado de la legislación civilizada. Y sin embargo, todo en el valle marchaba con una armonía y una suavidad que no tiene comparación, me atrevo a decir, en la más selecta, refinada y piadosa asociación de mortales en la Cristiandad. ¿Cómo vamos a explicar este enigma? Esos isleños eran paganos, salvajes, ¡más aún, caníbales! ¿Y cómo, sin ayuda de un derecho establecido, llegaban a mostrar en tan sobresaliente grado ese orden social que es la mayor bendición y más alto orgullo del Estado social? [219]

Quizá sea razonable preguntar: ¿Cómo se gobernaba esa gente?, ¿cómo se dominaban sus pasiones en sus relaciones cotidianas? De- bía ser por un principio inherente de honradez y caridad unos con otros. Parecían gobernarse por esa especie de derecho tácito de sen-
sort of tacit common-sense law which, say what they will of the inborn lawlessness of the human race, has its precepts graven on every breast. The grand principles of virtue and honour, however they may be distorted by arbitrary codes, are the same all the world over: and where these principles are concerned, the right or wrong of any action appears the same to the uncultivated as to the enlightened mind. It is to this indwelling, this universally diffused perception of what is just and noble, that the integrity of the Marquesans in their intercourse with each other, is to be attributed. In the darkest nights they slept securely, with all their worldly wealth about them, in houses the doors of which were never fastened. The disquieting ideas of theft or assassination never disturbed them.

Each islander reposed beneath his own palmetto thatching, or sat under his own bread-fruit trees, with none to molest or alarm him. There was not a padlock in the valley, nor anything that answered the purpose of one: still there was no community of goods. This long spear, so elegantly carved, and highly polished, belongs to Wormoonoo: it is far handomer than the one which old Marheyo, is the most precious of the damself’s ornaments. In her estimation its price is far above rubies—and yet there hangs the dental jewel by its cord of braided bark, in the girl’s house, which is far back in the valley; the door is left open, and all the inmates have gone off to bathe in the stream.*

So much for the respect in which ‘personal property’ is held in Typee; how secure an investment of ‘real property’ may be, I cannot take upon me to say. Whether the land of the valley was the joint property of its inhabitants, or whether it was parcelled out among a certain number of landed proprietors who allowed everybody to ‘squat’ and ‘poach’ as much as he or she pleased, I never could ascertain. At any rate, musty parchments and title-deeds were none on the island; and I am half inclined to believe that its inhabitants hold their broad valleys in fee simple from Nature herself; to have and to hold, so long as grass grows and water runs; or until their French visitors, by a summary mode of conveyancing, shall appropriate them to their own benefit and behoof.

Yesterday I saw Kory-Kory hie him away, armed with a long pole, with which, standing on the ground, he knocked down the fruit from the topmost boughs of the trees, and brought them home in his basket of cocoanut leaves. Today I see an islander, whom I know to reside in a distant part of the valley, doing the same thing. On the sloping bank of the stream are a number of banana-trees I have often seen a score or two of young people making a merry foray on the great golden clusters, and bearing them off, one after another, to different parts of the vale, between grits and juggelos. No churlish old curmudgeon could have been the owner of that grove of bread-fruit trees, or of these gloriously yellow bunches of bananas.

curmudgeon cascarrabias a crusty irascible cantankerous old person *

From what I have said it will be perceived that there is a vast difference between ‘personal property’ and ‘real estate’ in the valley of Typee. Some individuals, of course, are more wealthy than others. For example, the ridge-pole of Marheyo’s house bends under the weight of many a huge packet of tappa; his long couch is laid with mats placed one upon the other seven deep. Outside, Tinor has ranged along in her bamboo cupboard—or whatever the place may be called—a goodly* array of calabashes and wooden trenchers. Now, the house just beyond the grove, and next to Marheyo’s, occupied by Ruaruga, is not quite so well furnished. There are only three moderate-sized packages, swinging overhead: there are only two layers of mats beneath; tido común que, digase lo que se quiera de la falta innata de justicia en la raza humana, ha grabado sus preceptos en todos los pechos. Los grandiosos principios de la virtud y el honor, por más que los deformen códigos arbitrarios, son los mismos en todo el mundo, y cuando se trata de estos principios, la justicia o injusticia de cada acción parece la misma ante la mente sin cultivar que ante la ilustrada. A esa percepción infusa y universalmente extendida de lo justo y lo noble se puede atribuir la integridad de los de las Marquesas en su trato mutuo. En las noches más oscuras dormían con seguridad, con toda la riqueza de este mundo alrededor, en casas cuyas puertas no se cerraban nunca. Jamás les agitaban las intranquilizadoras ideas de latrocinio y el asesinato.

Cada isleño reposaba bajo su techo de palma, o se sentaba bajo su árbol del pan, sin que nadie le molestara ni le intranquilizara. No había un candidado en todo el valle, ni nada que cumpliera su función: y sin embargo, no había comunidad de bienes. Esta larga lanzada, tan elegantemente tallada y refinadamente pulida, pertenece a Wormunu: es mucho más bonita que la que tanto aprecia el viejo Marheyo, es el objeto más valioso que posee su propietario. Y sin embargo yo la he visto apoyada contra un cocotero en el bosque, y allí se encontraba cuando hacia falta. Aquí hay un diente de cachalote; todo él grabado con extrañas figuras: es propiedad de Karluna, es el más precioso de los ornamentos de esta damisela. Ella lo estimaba por encima del precio de los rubíes: y sin embargo, allí cuelga esa joya dental, en su cordel de corteza trenzada, en casa de la muchacha, que está al fondo del valle. La puerta se deja abierta, y todos los habitantes se han ido a bañar al río*. [220]

Eso, por lo que toca al respeto que se tiene en Taipi a la ‘propiedad personal’: no puedo atreverme a decir lo seguro que pueda estar una inversión en ‘bienes raíces’. Nunca pude averiguar si la tierra del valle era propiedad conjunta de sus habitantes, o si estaba parcelada entre cierto número de propietarios que permitían a todo el mundo establecerse sin derecho o «cazar furtivamente» como se les antojara. En cualquiera caso, en la isla no había pergaminos molosos ni títulos de propiedad, y más bien me inclino a creer que sus habitantes habían adquirido sus amplios valles en dominio absoluto por donación de la propia Naturaleza: para tener y conservar mientras la hierba crezca y el agua corra; o hasta que sus habitantes franceses, por un procedimiento súmario de traspaso, se los apropien para su uso y beneficio.

Ayer vi a Kory-Kory apresurado, armado de un largo palo con el que, desde el suelo, derribaba el fruto de las ramas más altas de los árboles, llevándoselo a casa en su cesta. Hoy veo un isleño, que sólo vive en una parte distante del valle, haciendo lo mismo. En la ribera en declive del río hay muchos plátanos. A veces he visto un par de docenas de muchachos haciendo una alegre incursión en las grandes piñas doradas, y llevándolas en una tras otra a diferentes partes del valle, entre gritos y juguetos. Ningún tacaño grosero podría haber sido el propietario de ese bosquecillo de árboles del pan, ni de esas gloriosas piñas amarillas de plátanos.

Por lo que he dicho se habrá percibido que hay una enorme diferencia entre «propiedad personal» y «bienes raíces» en el valle de Taipi. Algunos individuos, desde luego, son más ricos que otros. Por ejemplo, el travesaño de la casa de Marheyo se dobla con el peso de muchos grandes fardos de tappa; su larga yaciza está llena de esteras puestas una sobre otra, de siete en fondo. Fueron Tamnir ha alineado en su aparador de bambú —o como se llame ese mueble— una buena provisión de calabazas y fuentes de madera. Ahora bien, la casa inmediatamente más allá de ese bosquecillo, al lado de la de Marheyo, ocupada por Ruaruga, no está tan bien provista. Hay sólo tres fardos de tamaño mediano balanceándose en el alto: hay sólo dos filas de esteras debajo, y las calabaza...

* goodly: large, imposing, suitable, ample, considerable, espléndido

139
and the calabashes and trelchers are not so numerous, nor so tastefully shaped and carved. But then, Ruaruga has a house—not so pretty a one, to be sure—but just as commodious as Marheyo’s; and, I suppose, if he wished to vie with his neighbour’s establishment, he could do so with very little trouble. These, in short, constituted the chief differences perceivable in the relative wealth of the people in Typee.

Civilization does not engross all the virtues of humanity: she has not even her full share of them. They flourish in greater abundance and attain greater strength among many barbarous people. The hospitality of the wild Arab, the courage of the North American Indian, and the faithful friendship of some of the Polynesian nations, far surpass anything of a similar kind among the polished communities of Europe. If truth and justice, and the better principles of our nature, cannot exist unless enforced by the statute-book, how are we to account for the social condition of the Typees? So pure and upright were they in all the relations of life, that entering their valley, as I did, under the most erroneous impressions of their character, I was soon led to exclaim in amazement: ‘Are these the ferocious savages, the blood-thirsty cannibals of whom I have heard such frightful tales! They deal more kindly with each other, and are more humane than many who study essays on virtue and benevolence, and who repeat every night that beautiful prayer breathed first by the lips of the divine and gentle Jesus.’ I will frankly declare that after passing a few weeks in this valley of the Marquesas, I formed a higher estimate of human nature than I had ever before entertained. But alas! since then I have been one of the crew of a man-of-war, and the pent-up wickedness of five hundred men has nearly overturned all my previous theories.

One day, in returning with Kory-Kory from my accustomed visit to the Ti, we passed by a little opening in the grove; on one side of which, my attendant informed me, was that afternoon to be built a dwelling of bamboo. At least a hundred of the natives were bringing materials to the ground, some carrying in their hands one or two of the canes which were to form the sides, others slender rods of the habiscus, strung with palmetto leaves, for the roof. Every one contributed something to the work; and by the united, but easy, and even indolent, labours of all, the entire work was completed before sunset. The islanders, while employed in erecting this tenement, reminded me of a colony of bevvers at work. To be sure, they were hardly as silent and demure as those wonderful creatures, nor were they by any means as diligent. To tell the truth they were somewhat inclined to be lazy, but a perfect tumult of hilarity prevailed; and they worked together so unitedly, and seemed actuated by such an instinct of friendliness, that it was truly beautiful to behold.

Not a single female took part in this employment: and if the degree of consideration in which the ever-adorable sex is held by the men be—as the philosophers affirm—a just criterion of the degree of refinement among a people, then I may truly pronounce the Typees to be as polished a community as ever the sun shone upon. The religious restrictions of the taboo alone excepted, the women of the valley were all and the fuentes no son tan numerosas, ni tan artisticamente pintadas y talladas. Pero de todos modos, Ruaruga tiene una casa— aunque no tan bonita, desde luego— igual de cómoda que la de Marheyo, y supongo que si quisiera rivalizar con la instalación de su vecino, lo podría hacer con muy poca molestia. Estas diferencias, en resumen, constituían las únicas observables en cuanto a la riqueza relativa de la gente de Taipi. [221]

La civilización no abarca todas las virtudes de la humanidad: ni siquiera tiene su porción completa de ellas. Las virtudes florecen con mayor abundancia y alcanzan mayor vigor entre muchos pueblos bárbaros. La hospitalidad del árabe primitivo, el valor del indio norteamericano, la fiel amistad de algunas naciones polinesias, superan en mucho a cualquier cosa semejante entre las comunidades refinadas de Europa. Si la verdad y la justicia, y los principios mejores de nuestra naturaleza, no pueden existir si no están sancionados por el código, ¿cómo vamos a explicar la situación social de los taipis? Tan puros y rectos eran en todas las relaciones de la vida, que habiendo llegado al valle, como me ocurrió, con la más errónea idea de su modo de ser, pronto me vi movido a exclamar sorprendido: ‘¡Y estos son los fieros salvajes, los sanguinarios canibales de quienes he oído tan espantosos relatos? Se portan con mayor amabilidad, y son más humanos que muchos que estudian tratados sobre la virtud y la benevolencia y que reproten todas las noches esa hermosa plegaria que por primera vez pronunciaron los labios del divino y dulce Jesús’. Declaro francamente que, después de pasar unas semanas en ese valle de las Marquesas, formé una estimación de la naturaleza humana más alta de lo que hasta entonces había tenido. Pero ¡ay!, luego he sido marinero de un buque de guerra, y la perversidad acorralada de quinientos hombres casi ha derribado todas mis teorías anteriores.

Había un rasgo admirable en el carácter general de los taipis que se ganó mi admiralión más que ninguna otra cosa: era la unanimidad de sentimientos que mostraban en toda ocasión. Entre ellos, dificilmente parecía haber ninguna diferencia de opinión sobre ningún tema. Pensaban y actuaban igual. No concibo que pudieran mantener una reunión para discutir durante una sola noche: no habría nada de qué discutir; y si convocaran un congreso para tomar en consideración el estado de la tribu, la sesión sería notablemente corta. En todas las acciones de la vida mostraban ese espíritu de unanimidad, todo se hacía de concierto y con buen compañerismo. Daré un ejemplo de este sentir fraternal.

Un día, al volver con Kory-Kory de mi acostumbrada visita al Ti, pasamos por un pequeño claro en el bosque, en uno de cuyos lados, según me informó mi acompañante, se iba a construir aquella tarde una vivienda de bambú. Por lo menos un centenar de indígenas traían materiales a ese terreno: unos transportando en las manos una o dos cañas de las que iban a formar las paredes; otros, delgadas varas de habiscus, entrelazadas con hojas de palma, para formar el techo. Cada cual contribuía con algo al trabajo; y con el esfuerzo unido, pero cómodo e incluso indolente de todos, el trabajo entero quedó completo antes de ponerse el [222] sol. Los isleños, mientras trabajaban levantando esa vivienda, me recordaron una colonia de castores en actividad. Desde luego, no estaban tan callados y formales como los prodigiosos animales, ni tampoco eran en absoluto tan diligentes como ellos. Para decir la verdad, eran bastante inclinados a la perezza, pero prevalecía un absoluto tumulto de hilaridad, y trabajaban juntos de modo tan unido, y parecían movidos por tal instinto amistoso, que era algo verdaderamente hermoso de observar.

Ni una sola mujer tomaba parte en ese trabajo, y si el grado de consideración en que los hombres tienen al sexo siempre admirable es—como afirman los filósofos—un criterio justo sobre el grado de refinamiento de un pueblo, entonces puedo declarar con veracidad que los taipis son una comunidad tan refinada como jamás haya alumbreado el sol. Exceptuando las restricciones religiosas del tabú, a las mujeres del valle se les permitía...
lowed every possible indulgence. Nowhere are the ladies more assiduously courted; nowhere are they better appreciated as the contributors to our highest enjoyments; and nowhere are they more sensible of their power. Far different from their condition among many rude nations, where the women are made to perform all the work while their unglamorous lords and masters lie buried in sloth, the gentle sex in the valley of Typee were exempt from toil, if toil it might be called that, even in the tropical climate, never distilled one drop of perspiration. Their light household occupations, together with the manufacture of tapa, the plating of mats, and the polishing of drinking-vessels, were the only employments pertaining to the women. And even these resembled those pleasant avocations which fill up the elegant morning leisure of our fashionable ladies at home. But in these occupations, slight and agreeable though they were, the giddy young girls very seldom engaged. Indeed these wilful care-killing damsels were averse to all useful employment.

Like so many spoiled beauties, they ranged through the groves—bathed in the stream—danced—flirted—played all manner of mischievous pranks, and passed their days in one merry round of thoughtless happiness.

During my whole stay on the island I never witnessed a single quarrel, nor anything that in the slightest degree approached even to a dispute. The natives appeared to form one household, whose members were bound together by the ties of strong affection. The love of kindred I did not so much perceive, for it seemed blended in the general love; and where all were treated as brothers and sisters, it was hard to tell who were actually related to each other by blood.

Let it not be supposed that I have overdrawn this picture. I have not done so. Nor let it be urged, that the hostility of this tribe to foreigners, and the hereditary feuds they carry on against their fellow-islanders beyond the mountains, are facts which contradict me. Not so; these apparent discrepancies are easily reconciled. By many a legendary tale of violence and wrong, as well as by events which have passed before their eyes, these people have been taught to look upon white men with abhorrence. The cruel invasion of their country by Porter has alone furnished them with ample provocation; and I can sympathize in the spirit which prompts the Typee warrior to guard all the passes to his valley with the point of his levelled spear, and, standing upon the beach, with his back turned upon his green home, to hold at bay the intruding European.

As to the origin of the enmity of this particular clan towards the neighbouring tribes, I cannot so confidently speak. I will not say that their foes are the aggressors, nor will I endeavour to palliate their conduct. But surely, if our evil passions must find vent, it is far better to expend them on strangers and aliens, than in the bosom of the community in which we dwell. In many polished countries civil contentions, as well as domestic enmities, are prevalent, and the same time that the most atrocious foreign wars are waged. How much less guilty, then, are our islanders, who of these three sins are only chargeable with one, and that the least criminal!

The reader will ere long have reason to suspect that the Typees are not free from the guilt of cannibalism; and he will then, perhaps, charge me with admiring a people against whom so odious a crime is chargeable. But this only enormity in their character is not half so horrible as it is usually described. According to the popular fictions, the crews of
vessels, shipwrecked on some barbarous coast, are eaten alive like so many dainty joints by the uncivil inhabitants; and unfortunate voyagers are lured into smiling and treacherous bays; knocked on the head with outlandish war-clubs; and served up without any preliminary dressing. In truth, so horrific and improbable are these accounts, that many sensible and well-informed people will not believe that any cannibals exist; and place every book of voyages which purports to give any account of them, on the same shelf with Blue Beard and Jack the Giant-Killer. While others, implicitly crediting the most extravagant fictions, firmly believe that there are people in the world with tastes so depraved that they would infinitely prefer a single mouthful of material humanity to a good dinner of roast beef and plum pudding. But here, Truth, who loves to be centrally located, is again found between the two extremes; for cannibalism to a certain moderate extent is practised among several of the primitive tribes in the Pacific, but it is upon the bodies of slain enemies alone, and horrible and fearful as the custom is, immeasurably as it is to be abhorred and condemned, still I assert that those who indulge in it are in other respects humane and virtuous.

CHAPTER TWENTY-EIGHT

FISHING PARTIES—MODE OF DISTRIBUTING THE FISH—MID-NIGHT BANQUET—TIME-KEEPING TAPERS—UNCEREMONIOUS STYLE OF EATING THE FISH

THERE was no instance in which the social and kindly dispositions of the Typees were more forcibly evinced than in the manner the conducted their great fishing parties. Four times during my stay in the valley the young men assembled near the full of the moon, and went together on these excursions. As they were generally absent about forty-eight hours, I was led to believe that they went out towards the open sea, some distance from the bay. The Polynesians seldom use a hook and line, almost always employing large well-made nets, most ingeniously fabricated from the twisted fibres of a certain bark. I examined several of them which had been spread to dry upon the beach at Nukuheva. They resemble very much our own seines, and I should think they were nearly as durable.

All the South Sea Islanders are passionately fond of fish; but none of them can be more so than the inhabitants of Typee. I could not comprehend, therefore, why they so seldom sought it in their waters, for it was only at stated times that the fishing parties were formed, and these occasions were always looked forward to with no small degree of interest.

During their absence the whole population of the place were in a ferment, and nothing was talked of but ‘pehee, pehee’ (fish, fish). Towards the time when they were expected to return the vocal telegraph was put into operation—the inhabitants, who were scattered throughout the length of the valley, leaped upon rocks and into trees, shouting with delight at the thoughts of the anticipated treat. As soon as the approach of the party was announced, there was a general rush of the men towards the beach; some of them remaining, however, about the Ti in order to get matters in readiness for the reception of the fish, which were brought to the Taboo Groves in immense packages of leaves, each one of them being suspended from a pole carried on the shoulders of two men.

CAPÍTULO XXVIII

EXPEDICIONES DE PESCA. MODO DE DISTRIBUIR EL PESCADO. BANQUETE DE MEDIANOCHE. CANDELAS PARA MARCAR LA HORA. ESTILO POCO CEREMONIOSO DE COMER EL PESCADO

No había ejemplo en que se mostraran con más intensidad las disposiciones sociales y benévolas de los taipis que en el modo como se conducían en sus grandes expediciones de pesca. Durante mi estancia en el valle, cuatro veces se reunieron los jóvenes, cerca del plenilunio, y se fueron juntos a esas excursiones. Como estuvieron por lo regular ausentes unas cuarenta y ocho horas, me incliné a creer que salían hacia el mar abierto, a alguna distancia de la bahía. Los polinesios rara vez usan anzuelo y sedal, sino que casi siempre emplean grandes redes muy bien hechas, ingeniosamente formadas de fibras entrelazadas de cierta corteza. Examín varias de ellas que se habían extendido a secar en la playa de Nukuheva. Se parecen mucho a nuestras jábegas, y creo que deben ser igual de duraderas.

Todos los isleños del Mar del Sur son apasionadamente aficionados al pescado, pero ninguno puede serlo tanto como los habitantes de Taipi. Por tanto, no pude comprender por qué lo perseguían tan raramente en sus aguas, puesto [226] que sólo en ocasiones establecidas se formaban las expediciones de pesca, y esas ocasiones siempre se aguardaban con poco interés.

Durante su ausencia, toda la población del lugar estaba en efervescencia, y no se hablaba más que de pehi, pehi (pez, pez). Hacia la hora en que se esperaba su regreso, se ponía en funciones el telégrafo vocal: los habitantes, que estaban dispuestos por todo el valle, saltaban sobre rocas y árboles, gritando con gozo al pensar en el esperado festín. Tan pronto como se anunciaba que se acercaba el grupo, se precipitaban los hombres a la playa, aunque algunos de ellos se quedaban junto al Ti, con el fin de arreglar las cosas para recibir el pescado, que se traía a los bosquecillos tabù en inmensos paquetes de hojas, cada cuál de ellos suspendido de un palo a hombros de dos indígenas.

Killer. While others, implicitly crediting the most extravagant fictions, firmly believe that there are people in the world with tastes so depraved that they would infinitely prefer a single mouthful of material humanity to a good dinner of roast beef and plum pudding. But here, Truth, who loves to be centrally located, is again found between the two extremes; for cannibalism to a certain moderate extent is practised among several of the primitive tribes in the Pacific, but it is upon the bodies of slain enemies alone, and horrible and fearful as the custom is, immeasurably as it is to be abhorred and condemned, still I assert that those who indulge in it are in other respects humane and virtuous.
I was present at the Ti on one of these occasions, and the sight was most interesting. After all the packages had arrived, they were laid in a row under the verandah [porch] of the building and opened. The fish were all quite small, generally about the size of a herring, and of every variety. About one-eighth of the whole being reserved for the use of the Ti itself, the remainder was divided into numerous smaller packages, which were immediately dispatched in every direction to the remotest parts of the valley. Arrived at their destination, these were in turn portioned out, and equally distributed among the various houses of each particular district. The fish were under a strict Taboo, until the distribution was completed, which seemed to be effected in the most impartial manner. By the operation of this system every man, woman, and child in the vale, were at one and the same time partaking of this favourite article of food.

Once I remember the party arrived at midnight; but the unseasonableness of the tour did not repress the impatience of the islanders. The carriers dispatched from the Ti were to be seen hurrying in all directions through the deep groves; each individual preceded by a boy bearing a flaming torch of dried cocoanut boughs, which from time to time was replenished from the materials scattered along the path. The wild glare of these enormous flambeaux, lighting up with a startling brilliancy the interiormost recesses of the vale, and seen moving rapidly along beneath the canopy of leaves, the savage shouts of the excited messengers sounding the news of their approach, which was answered on all sides, and the strange appearance of their naked bodies, seen against the gloomy background, produced altogether an effect upon my mind that I shall long remember.

It was on this same occasion that Kory-Kory awakened me at the dead hour of night, and in a sort of transport communicated the intelligence contained in the words 'pehee perni' (fish come). As I quietly up, and on going outside the house was not a little interested by the moving illumination which I beheld.

When old Marheyo received his share of the spoils, immediate preparations were made for a midnight banquet; calabashes of poee-poee were filled to the brim; green bread-fruit were roasted; and a huge cake of 'amar' was cut up with a sliver of bamboo and laid out on an immense banana-leaf.

At this supper we were lighted by several of the native tapers, held in the hands of young girls. These tapers are most ingeniously made. There is a nut abounding in the valley, called by the Typees 'armor', closely resembling our common horse-chestnut. The shell is broken, and the contents extracted whole. Any number of these are strung together, and being perfectly flexible, one end is held in a coil, while the other is lighted. The nut burns with a fitful bluish flame, and the oil that it contains is exhausted in about ten minutes. As one bug is drawn down, the next becomes ignited, and the ashes of the former are knocked into a cocoanut shell kept for the purpose. This primitive candle requires continual attention, and must be constantly held in the hand. The person so employed marks the lapse of time by the number of the cinders that are consumed.

Once I remember the party arrived at midnight; but the unseasonableness of the tour did not repress the impatience of the islanders. The carriers dispatched from the Ti were to be seen hurrying in all directions through the deep groves; each individual preceded by a boy bearing a flaming torch of dried cocoanut boughs, which from time to time was replenished from the materials scattered along the path. The wild glare of these enormous flambeaux, lighting up with a startling brilliancy the interiormost recesses of the vale, and seen moving rapidly along beneath the canopy of leaves, the savage shouts of the excited messengers sounding the news of their approach, which was answered on all sides, and the strange appearance of their naked bodies, seen against the gloomy background, produced altogether an effect upon my mind that I shall long remember.

It was on this same occasion that Kory-Kory awakened me at the dead hour of night, and in a sort of transport communicated the intelligence contained in the words 'pehee perni' (fish come). As I quietly up, and on going outside the house was not a little interested by the moving illumination which I beheld.

When old Marheyo received his share of the spoils, immediate preparations were made for a midnight banquet; calabashes of poee-poee were filled to the brim; green bread-fruit were roasted; and a huge cake of 'amar' was cut up with a sliver of bamboo and laid out on an immense banana-leaf.

At this supper we were lighted by several of the native tapers, held in the hands of young girls. These tapers are most ingeniously made. There is a nut abounding in the valley, called by the Typees 'armor', closely resembling our common horse-chestnut. The shell is broken, and the contents extracted whole. Any number of these are strung together, and being perfectly flexible, one end is held in a coil, while the other is lighted. The nut burns with a fitful bluish flame, and the oil that it contains is exhausted in about ten minutes. As one bug is drawn down, the next becomes ignited, and the ashes of the former are knocked into a cocoanut shell kept for the purpose. This primitive candle requires continual attention, and must be constantly held in the hand. The person so employed marks the lapse of time by the number of the cinders that are consumed.

Once I remember the party arrived at midnight; but the unseasonableness of the tour did not repress the impatience of the islanders. The carriers dispatched from the Ti were to be seen hurrying in all directions through the deep groves; each individual preceded by a boy bearing a flaming torch of dried cocoanut boughs, which from time to time was replenished from the materials scattered along the path. The wild glare of these enormous flambeaux, lighting up with a startling brilliancy the interiormost recesses of the vale, and seen moving rapidly along beneath the canopy of leaves, the savage shouts of the excited messengers sounding the news of their approach, which was answered on all sides, and the strange appearance of their naked bodies, seen against the gloomy background, produced altogether an effect upon my mind that I shall long remember.

It was on this same occasion that Kory-Kory awakened me at the dead hour of night, and in a sort of transport communicated the intelligence contained in the words 'pehee perni' (fish come). As I quietly up, and on going outside the house was not a little interested by the moving illumination which I beheld.

When old Marheyo received his share of the spoils, immediate preparations were made for a midnight banquet; calabashes of poee-poee were filled to the brim; green bread-fruit were roasted; and a huge cake of 'amar' was cut up with a sliver of bamboo and laid out on an immense banana-leaf.

At this supper we were lighted by several of the native tapers, held in the hands of young girls. These tapers are most ingeniously made. There is a nut abounding in the valley, called by the Typees 'armor', closely resembling our common horse-chestnut. The shell is broken, and the contents extracted whole. Any number of these are strung together, and being perfectly flexible, one end is held in a coil, while the other is lighted. The nut burns with a fitful bluish flame, and the oil that it contains is exhausted in about ten minutes. As one bug is drawn down, the next becomes ignited, and the ashes of the former are knocked into a cocoanut shell kept for the purpose. This primitive candle requires continual attention, and must be constantly held in the hand. The person so employed marks the lapse of time by the number of the cinders that are consumed.

Once I remember the party arrived at midnight; but the unseasonableness of the tour did not repress the impatience of the islanders. The carriers dispatched from the Ti were to be seen hurrying in all directions through the deep groves; each individual preceded by a boy bearing a flaming torch of dried cocoanut boughs, which from time to time was replenished from the materials scattered along the path. The wild glare of these enormous flambeaux, lighting up with a startling brilliancy the interiormost recesses of the vale, and seen moving rapidly along beneath the canopy of leaves, the savage shouts of the excited messengers sounding the news of their approach, which was answered on all sides, and the strange appearance of their naked bodies, seen against the gloomy background, produced altogether an effect upon my mind that I shall long remember.
Melville's Typee

I grieve to state so distressing a fact, but the inhabitants of Typee were in the habit of devouring fish much in the same way that a civilized being would eat a radish, and without any more previous preparation. They eat it raw; scales, bones, gills, and all the inside. The fish is held by the tail, and the head being introduced into the mouth, the animal disappears with a rapidity that would at first nearly lead one to imagine it had been launched bodily down the throat.

Raw fish! Shall I ever forget my sensations when I first saw my island beauty devour one. Oh, heavens! Fayaway, how could you ever have contracted so vile a habit? However, after the first shock had subsided, the custom grew less odious in my eyes, and I soon accustomed myself to the sight. Let no one imagine, however, that the lovely Fayaway was in the habit of swallowing great vulgar-looking fishes: oh, no; with her beautiful small hand she would clasp a delicate, little, golden-hued love of a fish and eat it as elegantly and as innocently as though it were a Naples biscuit. But alas! it was golden-hued love of a fish and eat it as elegantly and as in-

When at Rome do as the Romans do, I held to be so good a proverb, that being in Typee I made a point of doing as the Typeeids did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked bio as good a proverb, that being in Typee I made a point of doing as the Typeeids did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked about in a garb striking for its simplicity; and I reposed on a couch as the Typees did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked bio as

When at Rome do as the Romans do, I held to be so good a proverb, that being in Typee I made a point of doing as the Typeeids did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked about in a garb striking for its simplicity; and I reposed on a couch as the Typees did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked bio as good a proverb, that being in Typee I made a point of doing as the Typeeids did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked about in a garb striking for its simplicity; and I reposed on a couch as the Typees did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked bio as

When at Rome do as the Romans do, I held to be so good a proverb, that being in Typee I made a point of doing as the Typeeids did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked about in a garb striking for its simplicity; and I reposed on a couch as the Typees did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked bio as good a proverb, that being in Typee I made a point of doing as the Typeeids did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked about in a garb striking for its simplicity; and I reposed on a couch as the Typees did. Thus I ate poee-poee as they did; I walked bio as good a proverb, that being in Typee I made a point of doing as the Typeeids did. Thus I ate poee-p
Scurvy curs! they were my abhorrence; I should have liked nothing better than to have been the death of every one of them. In fact, on one occasion, I tampered with the propriety of a canine crusade to Mehevi; but the benevolent king would not consent to it. He heard me very patiently; but when I had finished, shook his head, and told me in confidence that they were ‘taboo’.

As for the animal that made the fortune of the ex-lord-mayor Whittington, I shall never forget the day that I was lying in the house about noon, everybody else being fast asleep; and happening to raise my eyes, met those of a big black spectral cat, which sat erect in the doorway, looking at me with its frightful goggling green orbs, like one of those monstrous imps that torment some of Teniers’ saints! I am one of those unfortunate persons to whom the sight of these animals are, at any time an insufferable annoyance.

Thus constitutionally averse to cats in general, the unexpected apparition of this one in particular utterly confounded me. When I had a little recovered from the fascination of its glance, I started up; the cat fled, and emboldened by this, I rushed out of the house in pursuit; but it had disappeared. It was the only time I ever saw one in the valley, and how it got there I cannot imagine. It is possible that it might have escaped from one of the ships at Nukuheva. It was in vain to seek information on the subject from the natives, since none of them had seen the animal, the appearance of which remains a mystery to me to this day.

Among the few animals which are to be met with in Typee, there was none which I looked upon with more interest than a beautiful golden-hued species of lizard. It measured perhaps five inches from head to tail, and was most gracefully proportioned. Numbers of those creatures were to be seen basking in the sunshine upon the roofs of the houses, and multitudes at all hours of the day showed their glittering sides as they ran frolicking between the spears of grass or raced in troops up and down the tall shafts of the cocoanut trees.

Thus, constitutionally averse to cats in general, the unexpected apparition of this one in particular utterly confounded me. When I had a little recovered from the fascination of its glance, I started up; the cat fled, and emboldened by this, I rushed out of the house in pursuit; but it had disappeared. It was the only time I ever saw one in the valley, and how it got there I cannot imagine. It is just possible that it might have escaped from one of the ships at Nukuheva. It was in vain to seek information on the subject from the natives, since none of them had seen the animal, the appearance of which remains a mystery to me to this day.

Among the few animals which are to be met with in Typee, there was none which I looked upon with more interest than a beautiful golden-hued species of lizard. It measured perhaps five inches from head to tail, and was most gracefully proportioned. Numbers of those creatures were to be seen basking in the sunshine upon the thatching of the houses, and multitudes at all hours of the day showed their glittering sides as they ran frolicking between the spears of grass or raced in troops up and down the tall shafts of the cocoanut trees. But the remarkable beauty of these little animals and their lively ways were not their only claims upon my admiration. They were perfectly tame and insensible to fear. Frequently, after seating myself upon the ground in some shady place during the heat of the day, I would be completely overrun with them. If I brushed one off my arm, it would leap perhaps into my hair; when I tried to frighten it away by gently pinching its leg, it would turn for protection to the arm, it would leap perhaps into my hair; when I tried to frighten it away by gently pinching its leg, it would turn for protection to the arm, it would leap perhaps into my hair; when I tried to frighten it away by gently pinching its leg, it would turn for protection to the arm, it would leap perhaps into my hair; when I tried to frighten it away by gently pinching its leg, it would turn for protection to the arm.

The birds are also remarkably tame. If you happened to see one perched upon a branch within reach of your arm, and advanced towards it, it did not fly away immediately, but waited quietly looking at you, until you could almost touch it, and then took wing slowly, less alarmed at your presence, it would seem, than desirous of removing itself from your path. Had salt been less scarce in the valley than it was, this was the very place to have gone birding with it. I remember that, once on an uninhabited island of the Gallipagos, a bird alighted on my outstretched arm, while its mate chirped from an adjoining tree. Its tameness, far from shocking me, as a similar occurrence did Selkirk, imparted to me the most exquisite thrill of delight I ever experienced, and with somewhat of the same pleasure did I afterwards behold the birds and lizards of the valley show their confidence in the kindness of man.

Among the numerous afflictions which the Europeans have entailed upon some of the natives of the South Seas, is the accidental introduction among them of that enemy of all repose and ruffler of even tempers—the Mosquito. At the Sandwich Islands and at two or three of the Society group, there are now thriving colonies of ¡Chulos ruines! Eran mi aborrecimiento: nada me habría gustado tanto como acabar con todos ellos. Efectivamente, en una ocasión, indiqué a Mehevi la conveniencia de una cruzada canina, pero el benévolo rey no lo quiso consentir. Me escuchó con mucha paciencia, pero, cuando terminé, movió la cabeza y me dijo, en confianza, que eran tabú. [230]

En cuanto al animal que hizo la fortuna del ex-alcalde de Londres, Whittington***, nunca olvidaré el día en que yo estaba tendido en casa hacía mediodía, mientras todos los demás dormían profundamente, y al levantar los ojos, por casualidad, me encontré los ojos de un gran gato negro, espectante, sentado muy teso en la puerta y mirándome con sus terribles órbitas verdes como gafas, igual que uno de los monstruosos trasgos que atormentaban a algunos santos de Teniers**. Soy una de estas desgraciadas personas para quienes ver estos animales es en cualquier momento una molestia insuperable.

Entre los pocos animales que se pueden encontrar en Taipi, no había ninguno que yo mirase con tanto interés como una hermosa especie dorada de lagarto. Media quizá cinco pulgadas de la cabeza a la cola, y tenía proporciones muy graciosas. Muchos de esos animales se veían tomando el sol sobre los techos de las casas, y a todas horas del día, multitudes de ellos mostraban sus costados reflectores. Cuando me recuperé de este espectáculo, me di cuenta de que era una mujer de dos o tres años de edad, que era la dueña de una casa en el valle. Fue muy interesante hablar con ella, y me contó que era una mujer muy conocida en el vecindario, y que todos la respetaban porque era una persona muy bondadosa.

Entre las numerosas calamidades que los europeos han infligido a algunos indígenas del Mar del Sur, está la introducción accidental de ese enemigo de todo reposo y agitador de todo temperamento ecuánime: el mosquito. En las Islas Sandwich y en dos o tres del Archipiélago de la Sociedad hay ahora prósperas colonias de esos
Melville’s Typee

J. M. Valverde

these insects, who promise ere long to supplant altogether the aboriginal sand-flies. They sting, buzz, and torment, from one grievous visitation, however the Typees are as yet wholly exempt; but its place is unfortunately in some degree supplied by the occasional presence of a minute species of fly, which, without stinging, is nevertheless productive of no little annoyance. The tameness of the birds and lizards is as nothing when compared to the fearless confidence of this insect. He will perch upon one of your eyelashes, and go to roost there if you do not disturb him, or force his way through your hair, or along the cavity of the nostril, till you almost fancy he is resolved to explore the very brain itself. On one occasion I was so inconsiderate as to yawn while a number of them were hovering around me. I never repeated the act. Some half-dozen darted into the open apartment, and began walking about its ceiling; the sensation was dreadful. I involuntarily closed my mouth, and the poor creatures being enveloped in inner darkness, must in their consternation have stumbled over my palate, and been precipitated into the gulf beneath. At any rate, though I afterwards charitably held my mouth open for at least five minutes, with a view of affording egress to the stragglers, none of them ever availed themselves of the opportunity.

There are no wild animals of any kind on the island unless it be decided that the natives themselves are such. The mountains and the clefts of the interior present to the eye nothing but silent solitude, unbroken by the roar of beasts of prey, and the wondering conversational exclamations of its elderly citizens. No there do even occur any of those eccentric meteorological changes which elsewhere surprise us. In the valley of Taipi ice-creams of a few genial showers he hails with pleasure. There is never any of that ‘remarkable weather’ on the islands which from time immemorial has been experienced in America, and still continues to call forth the wondering conversational exclamations of its elderly citizens. Nor do there even occur any of those eccentric meteorological changes which elsewhere surprise us. In the valley of Typee ice-creams would never be rendered less acceptable by sudden frosts, nor would any of the valleys.

It is this genial climate which causes the coconuts to flourish as they do. This invaluable fruit, brought to perfection by the rich soil of the Marquesas, and home aloft on a stately column more than a hundred feet from the ground, would seem at first almost inaccessible to the simple natives. Indeed the slender, smooth, and soaring shaft, without a single limb or protuberance of any kind to assist one in mounting it, presents an obstacle only to be overcome by the surprising agility and ingenuity of the islanders. It might be supposed that their indolence would lead them patiently to await the period when the ripened nuts, slowly parting from their stems, fall one by one to the ground. This certainly would be the case, were it not that the young fruit, encased in a soft green husk, with the incipient meat adhering in a jelly-like pellicle to its sides, and containing a bumper of the most delicious nectar, is what they chiefly prize. They have at least twenty different terms to express as many progressive stages in the growth of the nut. Many of them reject the fruit altogether except at a insectos que prometen no tardar en sustituir por completo a los aborígenes jejenis. Pican, zumban y atormentan, de un extremo del año al otro y, desesperando sin cesar a los indígenas, dificultan materialmente los esfuerzos benévolos de los misioneros.

Sin embargo, los taipés están todavía exentos de esa enojosa calamidad, pero su lugar queda ocupado hasta cierto punto, por desgracia, por la presencia ocasional de una especie menuda de mosquitos, pues allí, sin picar, produce sin embargo no pocas molestias. La manse-dumbre de los pájaros y lagartos no es nada comparada con la confianza sin miedo de este insecto. Se le sube a uno a una pestaña, y se instala allí a poner huevos, si no se le molesta, o se abre paso por el pelo, o por la cavidad de las narices, hasta que uno se imagina que ha decidido explorar el mismísimo cerebro. En una ocasión tuve el desdicho de bostezar mientras muchas de ellas revoltolaban a mi alrededor. Nunca lo volvi a hacer. Una media docena se metió en el local abierto, y empezó a andar por su techo: la sensación fue espantosa. Involuntariamente cerré la boca, y los pobres animales, al quedar envueltos en total oscuridad, debieron salir tropezando cons-ternados [232] por mi paladar, precipitándose al abismo de abajo. En todo caso, aunque luego tuve la boca abierta cariátidamente durante cinco minutos por lo menos, para proporcionar salida a las intrusas, ninguna de ellas aprovechó la oportunidad.

No hay fieras de ninguna clase en la isla, a no ser que se decida lo que son los propios indígenas. Las mameyes dan en el interior no presentan a la vista más que soledades silenciosas, pues no rompen rugidos de animales de presa, y que animan pocas muestras incluso de menudos seres animados. No hay reptiles venenosos, ni se encuentran serpientes de ninguna clase en ninguno de los valles.

En una reunión de indígenas de las Marquesas, el tiempo no ofrece tema de conversación. Apenas se puede decir que tenga vicisitudes. La estación de las lluvias, es cierto, produce frecuentes chaparrones, pero son intermitentes y refrescantes. Cuando un isleño que ha de emprender una excursión se levanta de su yacija por la mañana, nunca se preocupa de atisbar a ver qué aspecto tiene el cielo, ni de averiguar de qué cuadrante sopla el viento. Siempre está seguro de que hace buen día, y sale con placer la promesa de unos pocos chubascos amables. ¡Jamás hay en la isla ese «tiempo sorprendente» que desde tiempo inmemorial se ha experimentado en América, y que aún sigue provoking las asombradas exclamaciones en las conversaciones de los más ancianos ciudadanos. Ni ocu- tren siquiera esos excéntricos cambios meteorológicos que nos sorprenden en cualquier otro lugar. En el valle de Taipe, los helados no roturarían nunca menos atractivos por súbitas escarchas, ni las excursiones campes- tress espectaculares que en nuestros países son comunes, pues allí un día sigue a otro día en un solo giro invariable de verano y fulgor solar, y el año entero es un único largo mes tropical de junio en el momento de fun-dirse pasando a julio.

Tan estupendo clima es lo que hace prosperar los cocos de tal manera. Este inapreciable fruto, llevado a su perfección por el rico suelo de las Marquesas, y elevado a las alturas sobre una solemne columna de más de cien pies desde el suelo, a primera vista parecería casi inaccesible a los sencillos indígenas. En efecto, el tronco esbelto, liso y altísimo, sin una sola rama ni protuberancia de ningún género para ayudar a la subida, ofrece un obstáculo que sólo superan la sorprendente agilidad y el ingenio de los isleños. Podría suponerse que su indolencia les llevaría a esperar pacientemente el momento en que los cocos maduros, separándose lentamente de sus tallos caen al suelo uno por uno. Seguramente ocurriría así si no fuera porque lo que ellos estiman más es el fruto tierno, envuelto en una suave cáscara verde, con la pulpa incipiente adherida a [232] sus lados en una película gelatinosa, y conteniendo un cuenco del más delicioso néctar. Tienen por lo menos veinte palabras diferentes para expresar otras tantas etapas sucesivas en el crecimiento del coco. Muchos de ellos rehúsan en absoluto el fruto, salvo en un período determinado de su crecimiento,
particular period of its growth, which, incredible as it may appear, they seemed to me to be able to ascertain within an hour or two. Others are still more capricious in their tastes; and after gathering together a heap of the nuts of all ages, and ingeniously tapping them, will first sip from one and then from another, as fastidiously as some delicate wine-bibber experimenting glass in hand among his dusty demi-johns of different vintages.

Some of the young men, with more flexible frames than their comrades, and perhaps with more courageous souls, bad a way of walking up the trunk of the cocoanut trees which to me seemed little less than miraculous; and when looking at them in the act, I experienced that curious perplexity a child feels when he beholds a fly moving feet uppermost along a ceiling.

I will endeavour to describe the way in which Narnee, a noble young chief, sometimes performed this feat for my peculiar gratification; but his preliminary performances must also be recorded. Upon my signifying my desire that he should pluck me the young fruit of some particular tree, the handsomc savage, throwing himself into a sudden attitude of surprise, feigns astonishment at the apparent absurdity of the request. Maintaining this position for a moment, the strange emotions depicted on his countenance soften down into one of humorous resignation to my will, and then looking wistfully up to the tufted[fronda] top of the tree, he stands on tip-toe, straining his neck and elevating his arm, as though endeavouring to reach the fruit from the ground where he stands. As if defeated in this childish attempt, he now sinks to the earth despondingly, beating his breast in well-acted despair; and then, starting to his feet all at once, and throwing back his head, raises both hands, like a schoolboy about to catch a falling ball. After continuing this for a moment or two, as if in expectation that the fruit was going to be tossed down to him by some good spirit in the tree-top, he turns wildly round in another fit of despair, and then 

Algunos jóvenes, de cuerpo más flexible que sus compañeros, y quizá de alma más valerosa, tenían un modo de trepar por el tronco de los cocoteros que me pareció poco menos que milagroso, y al mirarles mientras lo hacían, experimenté esa curiosa perplejidad que siente un niño cuando observa una mosca moviéndose patas arriba por un techo.

Intentaré describir el modo como Marni, un noble jefe joven, a veces realizaba esa hazaña para mi personal satisfacción, pero también hay que anotar sus rituales preliminares. Al manifestarme mi deseo de que me alcanzara el fruto de un árbol determinado, el hermoso salvaje, colocándose en una subita actitud de sorpresa, finge asombro ante el aparente absurdo de la petición. Manteniendo esa posición un momento, las extrañas emociones pintadas en su rostro se suavizan en una actitud de resignación bienhumorada a mi voluntad, y luego, levantando la vista con aire experto hasta la empenachada copa del árbol, da la vuelta locamente, con otro acceso de desesperación, y sale disparado a una distancia de treinta o cuarenta yardas. Allí se queda un rato, contemplando el árbol, hecho la viva imagen de la pena; pero un momento después, como si recibiera un destello de inspiración, se vuelve a precipitar hacia él, y echa las dos manos alrededor del tronco, una elevada por encima de la otra, aprieta fuertemente contra el árbol las plantas de los pies, extendiendo las piernas hasta que casi están horizontales, [234] y el cuerpo se le dobla en arco; luego, mano sobre mano y pie tras pie, se eleva de la tierra con firme rapidez, y casi antes de que uno se dé cuenta de ello, ha alcanzado el mecido y sombreado nido de cocos, y con estrepitoso júbilo lanza los frutos al suelo.

Lo primero que presenció una de esas exhibiciones, pensó:
tions, would the nervous mothers of America and England say to a similar display of hardihood in any of their children? The Lacedemonian nation might have approved of it, but most modern dames would have gone into hysterics at the sight.

hardihood n. boldness, daring. Oxadia, atrevimiento, audacia.

At the top of the coconut tree the numerous branches, radiating on all sides from a common centre, form a sort of green and waving basket, between the leaflets of which you just discern the nuts thickly clustering together, and on the loftier trees looking no bigger from the ground than bunches of grapes. I remember one adventurous little fellow—Too-Too was the rascal’s name—who had built himself a sort of aerial baby-house in the picturesque tuft of a tree adjoining Marheyo’s habitation. He used to spend hours there,—rustling among the branches, and shouting with delight every time the strong gusts of wind rushing down from the mountain side, swayed to and fro the tall and flexible column on which he was perched. Whenever I heard Too-Too’s musical voice sounding strangely to the ear from so great a height, and beheld him peeping down upon me from out his leafy covert, he always recalled to my mind Dibdin’s lines—

‘There’s a sweet little cherub that sits up aloft,
To look out for the life of poor Jack.’

Birds,—bright and beautiful birds,—fly over the valley of Typee. You see them perched aloft among the immovable boughs of the majestic bread-fruit trees, or gently swaying on the elastic branches of the Omoo; skimming over the palmetto thatching of the bamboo huts; passing like spirits on the wings through the shadows of the grove, and sometimes descending into the bosom of the valley in gleaming flights from the mountains. Their plumage is purple and azure, crimson and white, black and gold; with bills of every tint: bright bloody red, jet black, and ivory white; and their eyes are bright and sparkling; they go sailing through the air in starry throngs; but, alas! the spell of dumbness is upon them all—there is not a single warbler in the valley!

I know not why it was, but the sight of these birds, generally the ministers of gladness, always oppressed me with melancholy. As in their dumb beauty they hovered by me whilst I was walking, or looked down upon me with steady curious eyes from out the foliage, I was almost inclined to fancy that they knew they were gazing upon a stranger, and that they commiserated his fate.
into some admiring exclamation at the beauty of his designs. An imaginary performance of his art, and every moment bursting flourished them about in fearful vicinity to my face, going through determined not to credit my assertion, and grasping his implements, he arm in a fit of desperation, signed to him to commence operations. Endeavoured to draw off his attention from it, and holding out my shuddering at the ruin he might inflict upon my figure-head, I now overwhelmed with sorrow at losing so noble an opportunity of dis-reiterated refusals the excited artist got half beside himself, and was and besought me to comply with the outrageous request. On my to get away from him, while Kory-Kory, turning traitor, stood by, life if the wretch were to execute his purpose upon me, I struggled proceed his grief and disappointment. But recovering from this, he seemed stand that he had altogether mistaken my views, nothing could ex-

The artist was not at this time engaged on an original sketch, his subject being a venerable savage, whose tattooing had become somewhat faded with age and needed a few repairs, and accordingly he was merely employed in touching up the works of some of the old masters of the Typee school, as delineated upon the human canvas before him. The parts operated upon were the eyelids, where a longitudinal streak, like the one which adorned Kory-Kory, crossed the countenance of the victim.

In spite of all the efforts of the poor old man, sun-dry twitchings and screwings of the muscles of the face denoted the exquisite sensibility of these shutters to the windows of his soul, which he was now having repainted. But the artist, with a heart as callous as that of an army surgeon, continued his performance, en-

So deeply engaged was he in his work, that he had not observed our approach, until, after having, enjoyed an unmolested view of the operation, I chose to attract his attention. As soon as he perceived me, supposing that I sought him in his professional capacity, he seized hold of me in a paroxysm of delight, and was an eagerness to begin the work. When, however, I gave him to under-

Horrified at the bare thought of being rendered hideous for life if the wretch were to execute his purpose upon me, I struggled to get away from him, while Kory-Kory, turning traitor, stood by, and besought me to comply with the outrageous request. On my reiterated refusals the excited artist got half beside himself, and was overwhelmed with sorrow at losing so noble an opportunity of distin-

The idea of engraving his tattooing upon my white skin filled him with all a painter’s enthusiasm; again and again he gazed into my countenance, and every fresh glimpse seemed to add to the vehemence of his ambition. Not knowing to what extremities he might proceed, and shuddering at the ruin he might inflict upon my figure-head, I now endeavoured to draw off his attention from it, and holding out my arm in a fit of desperation, signed to him to commence operations.

7The idea of injeetar su tatuaje en mi piel blanca le llenaba de todo el entusiasmo de un pintor: una vez tras otra, me miraba a la cara, y cada nueva observación parecía aumentar la vehemencia de su ambición. No sabiendo a qué extremos llegaría, y estremecido ante la catástrofe que podría infligir a mi rostro, intenté entonces desviar de él su atención, y extendiendo el brazo en un acceso de desesperación, le hice señál que de empezara sus operaciones. Pero

hhabia un casco de coco lleno de ese fluido. Se prepara mezclando con un jugo vegetal las cenizas del armor y la nuez de las candel-

A pesar de todos los esfuerzos del pobre viejo, diversos espasmos y retorcimientos de los músculos de la cara denotaban la exquis-

ta vida sensitiva de esos postigos de las ventanas de su alma que ahora hacía repintar. Pero el artista, con un corazón tan endurecido como el de un médico militar, continuaba su realización, animando sus esfuerzos con un salvaje cantourreo, y golpeando todo el tiempo tan contenido como un pajarito carpintero.

Tan profundamente absorbido estaba en su trabajo, que no había observado nuestro acercamiento, hasta que, tras de disfrutar de una visión sin molestias de la operación, decidi atraer su atención. Tan pronto como me percibió, suponiendo que le buscaba en su calidad profesional, me agarró con un paroxismos de placer, y mostró una gran ansia por empezar el trabajo. Sin embargo, cuando le di a entender que había equivocado por completo mis intenciones, nada pudo superar su dolor y decepción. Pero, recuperándose, pareció decidido a no dar crédito a mi afirmación, y empuñando sus herra-

El artista, en esta ocasión, no estaba ocupado en un dibujo origi-

Tan profundamente absorbido estaba en su trabajo, que no había observado nuestro acercamiento, hasta que, tras de disfrutar de una visión sin molestias de la operación, decidi atraer su atención. Tan pronto como me percibió, suponiendo que le buscaba en su calidad profesional, me agarró con un paroxismos de placer, y mostró una gran ansia por empezar el trabajo. Sin embargo, cuando le di a entender que había equivocado por completo mis intenciones, nada pudo superar su dolor y decepción. Pero, recuperándose, pareció decidido a no dar crédito a mi afirmación, y empuñando sus herramien-

7La idea de injeetar su tatuaje en mi piel blanca le llenaba de todo el entusiasmo de un pintor: una vez tras otra, me miraba a la cara, y cada nueva observación parecía aumentar la vehemencia de su ambición. No sabiendo a qué extremos llegaría, y estremecido ante la catástrofe que podría infligir a mi rostro, intenté entonces desviar de él su atención, y extendiendo el brazo en un acceso de desesperación, le hice señál de que empezara sus operaciones. Pero
But he rejected the compromise indignantly, and still continued his attack on my face, as though nothing short of that would satisfy him. When his forefinger swept across my features, in laying out the borders of those parallel bands which were to encircle my countenance, the flesh fairly crawled upon my bones. At last, half wild with terror and indignation, I succeeded in breaking away from the three savages, and fled towards old Marheyo’s house, pursued by the indomitable artist, who ran after me, implements in hand. Kory-Kory, however, at last interfered and drew him off from the chase.

This incident opened my eyes to a new danger, and I now felt convinced that in some luckless hour I should be disfigured in such a manner as never more to have the FACE to return to my countrymen, even should an opportunity offer.

These apprehensions were greatly increased by the desire which King Mehevi and several of the inferior chiefs now manifested that I should be tattooed. The pleasure of the king was first signified to me some three days after my casual encounter with Karky the artist. Heavens! what imprecations I showered upon that Karky. Doubtless he had plotted a conspiracy against me and my countenance, and would never rest until his diabolical purpose was accomplished. Several times I met him in various parts of the valley, and, invariably, whenever he described me, he came running after me with his mallet and chisel, flourishing them about my face as if he longed to begin. What an object he would have made of me!

When the king first expressed his wish to me, I made known to him my utter abhorrence of the measure, and worked myself into such a state of excitement, that he absolutely stared at me in amazement. It evidently surpassed his majesty’s comprehension how any sober-minded and sensible individual could entertain the least possible objection to so beautifying an operation.

Soon afterwards he repeated his suggestion, and meeting with a little repulse, showed some symptoms of displeasure at my obduracy. On his a third time renewing his request, I plainly perceived that something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congratulating myself with having thus compromised the matter, when he intimated that as a thing of course my face was first to undergo the operation. I was fairly driven to decide something must be done, or my visage was ruined for ever; I therefore screwed up my courage to the sticking point, and declared my willingness to have both arms tattooed from just above the wrist to the shoulder. His majesty was greatly pleased at the proposition, and I was congr...
In the decoration of the chiefs it seems to be necessary to exercise the most elaborate pencilling; while some of the inferior natives looked as if they had been daubed over indiscriminately with a house-painter’s brush. I remember one fellow who prided himself hugely upon a great oblong patch, placed high upon his back, and who always reminded me of a man with a blister of Spanish flies, stuck between his shoulders. Another whom I frequently met had the hollow of his eyes tattooed in two regular squares and his visual organs being remarkably brilliant, they gleamed forth from out this setting like a couple of diamonds inserted in ebony.

Although convinced that tattooing was a religious observance, still the nature of the connection between it and the superstitious idolatry of the people was a point upon which I could never obtain any information. Like the still more important system of the ‘Taboo’, it always appeared inexplicable to me.

There is a marked similarity, almost an identity, between the religious institutions of most of the Polynesian islands, and in all exists the mysterious ‘Taboo’, restricted in its uses to a greater or less extent. So strange and complex in its arrangements is this remarkable system, that I have in several cases met with individuals who, after residing for years among the islands in the Pacific, and acquiring a considerable knowledge of the language, have nevertheless been altogether unable to give any satisfactory account of its operations. Situated as I was in the Typee valley, I perceived every hour the effects of this all-controlling power, without in the least comprehending it. Those effects were, indeed, wide-spread and universal, pervading the most important as well as the minutest transactions of life. The savage, in short, lives in the continual observance of its dictates, which guide and control every action of his being.

For several days after entering the valley I had been saluted at least fifty times in the twenty-four hours with the talismanic word ‘Taboo’ shrieked in my ears, at some gross violation of its provisions, of which I had unconsciously been guilty. The day after our arrival I happened to hand some tobacco to Toby over the head of a native who sat between us. He started up, as if stung by an adder; while the whole company, manifesting an equal degree of horror, simultaneously screamed out ‘Taboo!’ I never again perpetrated a similar piece of ill-manners, which, indeed, was forbidden by the canons of good breeding, as well as by the mandates of the taboo. But it was not always so easy to perceive wherein you had contravened the spirit of this institution. I was many times called to order, if I may use the phrase, when I could not for the life of me conjecture what particular offence I had committed.

One day I was strolling through a secluded portion of the valley, and hearing the musical sound of the cloth-mallet at a little distance, I turned down a path that conducted me in a few moments to a house where there were some half-dozen girls employed in making tappa. This was an operation I had frequently witnessed, and had handled the bark in all the various stages of its preparation. On the present occasion the females were intent upon their occupation, and after looking up and talking gaily to me for a few moments, they resumed their employment. I regarded them for a while in silence, and then carelessly picking up a handful of the material that lay around, proceeded unconsciously to pick it apart. While thus engaged, I was suddenly startled by a scream, like that of a whole boarding-school of young ladies just on the point of going into hysterics. Leaping up with the idea of seeing a score of Happar soldiers about to perform anew the Sabine atrocity, I found myself confronted by the company of girls, who, having dropped their work, stood before me with starting eyes, swelling bosoms, and fingers pointed in horror towards me.

En la decoración de los jefes parece ser necesario ejercitar el más elaborado dibujo, mientras que algunos de los indígenas inferiores parecían estar emborronados indistintamente con una brocha de pintor de paredes. Recuerdo un tipo que se enorgullecía mucho de un gran parche alargado, puesto en la espalda, y que siempre me hacía pensar en un hombre con una ampolla de cantáridas plantada entre los hombros. Otro a quien encontraba frecuentemente tenía las órbitas de los ojos tatuadas en dos cuadrados regulares, y como sus órganos visuales [240] eran notablemente brillantes, resplandecían desde esta montura como un par de diamantes insertos en ébano.

Aunque convencido de que el tatuaje era un rito religioso, la naturaleza de la relación entre él y la idolatría supersticiosa del pueblo era un punto sobre el cual jamás pude obtener información. Igual que el sistema, aún más importante, del tabú, siempre me resultaba inexplicable.

Hay una marcada semejanza, casi identidad, entre las instituciones religiosas de la mayor parte de las islas polinesias, y en todas ellas existe el misterioso tabú, limitado en sus aplicaciones a un alcance mayor o menor. Tan extraño y complejo en sus disposiciones es este notable sistema que, en varios casos, he encontrado individuos que, después de residir durante años en las islas del Pacífico, y de adquirir un considerable conocimiento del lenguaje, sin embargo, no eran capaces en absoluto de dar una explicación satisfactoria de sus efectos. Situado como estaba yo en el valle de Taiperi, percibía a cada momento las consecuencias de ese poder omnipresente, sin comprenderlo en absoluto. Esos efectos, desde luego, eran amplios y universales, invadiendo tanto los asuntos más importantes de la vida como los más menudos. En resumen, el salvaje vive en la continua observancia de sus dictados, que guían y dominan todas las acciones de su ser.

Durante varios días después de entrar en el valle, me había encontrado por lo menos cincuenta veces cada veinticuatro horas con la talismánica palabra, aunada a mis oídos, ante alguna grave violación de sus mandatos que yo había cometido inconscientemente. El día después de nuestra llegada, ocurrió que por casualidad le alargué a Toby un poco de tabaco por encima de la cabeza del indígena que estaba sentado entre nosotros. Él se puso en pie de un salto, como picado por una víbora, mientras que todos los presentes, manifestando igual grado de horror, chillaban a la vez. ¡tabú! Jamás volví a cometer semejante muestra de mala educación, como por los cánones de la buena educación tanto como por los mandatos del tabú. Pero no siempre era tan fácil percibir cuándo se había contravenido al espíritu de esa institución. Muchas veces me llamaron al orden, si puedo usar la expresión, cuando no, ni aunque me fuera en ello la vida, no podía conjeturar que transgresión determinada habría cometido.
Thinking that some venomous reptile must be concealed in the bark which I held in my hand, I began cautiously to separate and examine it. Whilst I did so the horrified girls re-doubled their shrieks. Their wild cries and frightened motions actually alarmed me, and throwing down the tappa, I was about to rush from the house, when in the same instant their clamours ceased, and one of them, seizing me by the arm, pointed to the broken fibres that had just fallen from my grasp, and screamed in my ears the fatal word Taboo!

I subsequently found out that the fabric they were engaged in making was of a peculiar kind, destined to be worn on the heads of the females, and through every stage of its manufacture was guarded by a rigorous taboo, which interdicted the whole masculine gender from even so much as touching it.

Frequently in walking through the groves I observed breadfruit and cocoanut trees, with a wreath of leaves twined in a peculiar fashion about their trunks. This was the mark of the taboo. The trees themselves, their fruit, and even the shadows they cast upon the ground, were consecrated by its presence. In the same way a pipe, which the king had bestowed upon me, was rendered sacred to me, and throwing down the tappa, I was about to rush from the house by the beach.

A similar badge was once braided about my wrist by the royal hand of Mehevi himself, who, as soon as he had concluded the operation, pronounced me ‘Taboo’. This occurred shortly after Toby’s disappearance; and, were it not that from the first moment I had entered the valley the natives had treated me with uniform kindness, I should have supposed that their conduct afterwards was to be ascribed to the fact that I had received this sacred investiture.

The capricious, operations of the taboo are not its least remarkable feature: to enumerate them all would be impossible. Black hogs—infants to a certain age—women in an interesting situation—young men while the operation of tattooing their faces is going on—and certain parts of the valley during the continuance of a shower—are alike fenced about by the operation of the taboo.

I witnessed a striking instance of its effects in the bay of Tior, my visit to which place has been alluded to in a former part of this narrative. On that occasion our worthy captain formed one of the party. He was a most insatiable sportsman. Outward bound, and off the pitch of Cape Horn, he used to sit on the taffrail, and keep the steward loading three or four old fowling pieces, with which he would bring down albatrosses, Cape pigeons, jays, petrels, and divers other marine fowl, who followed chattering in our wake. The sailors were struck aghast at his impiety, and one and all attributed our forty days’ beating about that horrid headland to his sacrilegious slaughter of these inoffensive birds.

At Tior he evinced the same disregard for the religious prejudices of the islanders, as he had previously shown for the superstititions of the sailors. Having heard that there were a considerable number of fowls in the valley the project of some cooks and hens accidentally left there by an English vessel, and which, being strictly tabooed, flew about almost in a wild state—he determined to break through all restraints, and be the death of them. Accordingly, he provided himself with a most formidable looking gun, and announced his landing on the beach by shooting down a noble cock that was crowing what proved to be his own funeral dirge, on the limb of an adjoining tree. ‘Taboo’, shrieked the affrighted savages. ‘Oh, hang your taboo,’ says the nautical

Pensando que debía haber algún reptil venenoso escondido en la corteza que tenía en la mano, empecé cuidadosamente a abrirlo y examinarla. Al hacerlo así, las horrorizadas muchachas redoblaron sus gritos. Sus salvajes chillidos y sus movimientos asustados me llevaron a alarmar efectivamente, y tirando la tappa, iba a salir precipitadamente de la casa, cuando en ese momento cesaron sus clamores, y una de ellas me agarró por el brazo, señaló las fibras rotas que acababa yo de soltar, y gritó en mis oídos la palabra fatal: ¡Tabú!

Luego averigüé que el tejido que estaban ocupadas en hacer era de una clase peculiar, destinado a que lo llevaran las mujeres en la cabeza, y que estaba guardado, en todas las fases de su fabricación, por un riguroso tabú que prohibía a todo el sexo masculino tocarlo siquiera.

Frecuentemente, al andar por los bosques, observaba árboles del pan y cocoteros con una guirnalda de hojas entrelazadas de modo peculiar en torno al tronco. Ésta era la señal del tabú. Los árboles mismos, sus frutos, e incluso la sombra que proyectaban en el suelo, estaban consagrados por su presencia. Del mismo modo, una pipa que el rey me había regalado se había hecho sagrada ante los ojos de los indígenas, a ninguno de los cuales pude convencer para que fumara de ella. Su cazoleta estaba rodeada por una banda de hierba entrelazada, algo parecido a esas cabezas de turco que a veces se teñían en los mangos de nuestras fustas.

Una insignia semejante me había trencado una vez a la muñeca la real mano del propio Mehevi que, cuando terminó la operación, me declaró tabú. Esto ocurrió poco después de la desaparición de Toby, y si no fuera porque desde el [242] primer momento en que entré en el valle los indígenas me habían tratado con invariable benevolencia, habría supuesto que su conducta posterior se debía atribuir al hecho de que había recibido esa investidura sagrada.

Los caprichosos efectos del tabú no son un rasgo menos notable, sería imposible enumerarlos todos. Los cerdos negros, los niños pequeños hasta cierta edad, las mujeres en estado interesante, los jóvenes mientras está en marcha la operación de tatuárselas la cara, y ciertas partes del valle mientras dura un chubasco, todas estas cosas están igualmente cercadas por el efecto del tabú.

Presencié un sorprendente efecto de su influjo en la bahía de Tior, lugar en que ya se había dado que se había visitado o, en una parte anterior de mi relato. En esa ocasión, nuestro digno capitán formó parte del grupo. Era un deportista insaciable. En el viaje de ida, y a la altura del Cabo de Hornos, solía sentarse en el coronamiento de popa, y hacer que el mayordomo le fuera cargando tres o cuatro viejas escopetas para aves, con las que derribaba albatros, pichones del Cabo, chovas, petreles y otras diversas aves marineras, que seguían graznando nuestro rumbo. Los marineros estaban horrorizados de esa impiedad, y con unanimidad, atribuyeron nuestra tardanza de cuarenta días en dar la vuelta a ese horrendo cabo a su sagrada matanza de esos inofensivos pájaros.

En Tior mostró la misma desatención hacia los prejuicios religiosos de los isleños que había mostrado antes hacia las supersticiones de los marineros. Habiendo oido decir que había considerable número de aves en el valle —la descendencia de algunos gallos y gallinas dejados allí accidentalmente por un barco inglés, y que, estando bajo estricto tabú, volaban por allí casi en estado salvaje— decidió romper toda restricción y aniquilarlas. Por tanto, se proveyó de una escopeta de aspecto temible, y anunció su desembarco en la playa derribando un noble gallo que cantaba lo que resultó ser su propia endecha fúnebre en la rama de un árbol cercano.

—¡Tabú! —gritaron los horrorizados salvajes.

—Al demonio nuestro tabú —dijo el deportista náutico—:
Melville’s Typee

J. M. Valverde

sportsman; ‘talk taboo to the marines’; and bang went the piece again, and down came another victim. At this the natives ran scampering through the groves, horror-struck at the enormity of the act.

scamper v. & n. — v.intr. (usu. foll. by about, through) run and skip impulsively or playfully.

All that afternoon the rocky sides of the valley rang with successive reports, and the superb plumage of many a beautiful fowl was ruffled by the fatal bullet. Had it not been that the French admiral, with a large party, was then in the glen, I have no doubt that the natives, although their tribe was small and dispirited, would have inflicted summary vengeance upon the man who thus outraged their most sacred institutions; as it was, they contrived to annoy him not a little.

Thirsting with his exertions, the skipper directed his steps to a stream; but the savages, who had followed at a little distance, perceiving his object, rushed towards him and forced him away from its bank—his lips would have polluted it. Wearied at last, he sought to enter a house that he might rest for a while on the mats; its inmates gathered tumultuously about the door and denied him admittance. He coaxed and blustered by turns, but in vain; the natives were neither to be intimidated nor appeased, and as a final resort he was obliged to call together his boat’s crew, and pull away from what he termed the most infernal place he ever stepped upon.

Lucky was it for him and for us that we were not honoured on our departure by a salute of stones from the hands of the exasperated Tiors. In this way, on the neighbouring island of Ropo, were killed, but a few weeks previously, and for a nearly similar offence, the master and three of the crew of the K—.

I cannot determine with anything approaching to certainty, what power it is that imposes the taboo. When I consider the slight disparity of condition among the islanders—the very limited and inconceivable prerogatives of the king and chiefs—and the loose and indefinite functions of the priesthood, most of whom were hardly to be distinguished from the rest of their countrymen, I am wholly at a loss where to look for the authority which regulates this potent institution. It is imposed upon something today, and withdrawn to-morrow; while its operations in other cases are perpetual. Sometimes its restrictions only affect a single individual—sometimes a particular family—sometimes a whole tribe; and in a few instances they extend not merely over the various clans on a single island, but over all the inhabitants of an entire group. In illustration of this latter peculiarity, I may cite the law which forbids a female to enter a canoe—a prohibition which prevails upon all the northern Marquesas Islands.

The word itself (taboo) is used in more than one significance. It is sometimes used by a parent to his child, when in the exercise of parental authority he forbids it to perform a particular action. Anything opposed to the ordinary customs of the islanders, although not expressly prohibited, is said to be ‘taboo’.

The Typee language is one very difficult to be acquired; it bears a close resemblance to the other Polynesian dialects, all of which show a common origin. The duplication of words, as ‘lumee lumee’, ‘poe poe’, ‘moe moe’, is one of their peculiar features. But another, and a more annoying one, is the different senses in which one and the same word is employed; its various meanings all have a certain connection, which only makes the matter more puzzling. So one brisk, lively little word is obliged, like a servant in a poor family, to perform all sorts of duties; for instance, one particular combination of syllables expresses the ideas of sleep, rest, reclining, sitting, leaning, and all other things anywise analogous thereto, the particular meaning being shown chiefly by a variety of gestures and the eloquent expression of the countenance.

La palabra misma, tabú, se usa en más de un significado. A veces la usa un padre con su hijo cuando, en el ejercicio de su autoridad paternal, le prohíbe realizar una determinada acción. Cualquier cosa opuesta a las costumbres ordinarias de los isleños, aunque no expresamente prohibida, se dice que es tabú.

La lengua taipi es muy difícil de aprender; muestra una cercana semejanza a los demás dialectos polinesios, todos los cuales manifiestan un origen común. La duplicación de palabras, como lumi-lumi, poi-poi, mui-mui, es uno de sus [244] rasgos peculiares. Pero otro, más molesto, es la diversidad de sentidos en que se emplea una misma palabra: sus diversos significados tienen todos ellos una cierta conexión, lo que no hace sino complicar más el asunto. Así, una sola palabra, vivaz y diligente, está obligada, como una criada en una familia pobre, a realizar toda clase de tareas: por ejemplo, una determinada combinación de sílabas expresa las ideas de sueño, descanso, reclinarse, sentarse, apoyarse, y todas las demás cosas análogas a éstas, indicándose los significados diferentes principalmente por una variedad de gestos y por la expresión elocuente del rostro.
CHAPTER THIRTY-ONE


SADLY discursive as I have already been, I must still further entreat the reader’s patience, as I am about to string together, without any attempt at order, a few odds and ends of things not hitherto mentioned, but which are either curious in themselves or peculiar to the Types.

There was one singular custom observed in old Marheyo’s domestic establishment, which often excited my surprise. Every night, before retiring, the inmates of the house gathered together on the mats, and so squatting upon their haunches, after the universal practice of these islanders, would commence a low, dismal and monotonous chant, accompanying the voice with the instrumental melody produced by two small half-rotten sticks tapped slowly together, a pair of which were held in the hands of each person present. Thus would they employ themselves for an hour or two, sometimes longer. Lying in the gloom above the hands of each person present. Thus would they employ themselves for an hour or two, sometimes longer. Lying in the gloom above the extreme of the house, I could not avoid looking at them, although the spectacle suggested nothing but unpleasant reflection. The flickering rays of the ‘armor’ nut just served to reveal their savage lineaments, without dispelling the darkness that hovered about them.

Sometimes when, after falling into a kind of doze, and awaking suddenly in the midst of these doleful chantings, my eye would fall upon the wild-looking group engaged in their strange occupation, with their naked tattooed limbs, and shaven heads disposed in a circle, I was almost tempted to believe that I gazed upon a set of evil beings in the act of working at a frightful incantation.

What was the meaning or purpose of this custom, whether it was practiced merely as a diversion, or whether it was a religious exercise, a sort of family prayers, I never could discover.

The sounds produced by the natives on these occasions were of a most singular description; and had I not actually been present, I never would have believed that such curious noises could have been produced by human beings.
To savages generally is imputed a guttural articulation. This however, is not always the case, especially among the inhabitants of the Polynesian Archiplego. The labial melody with which the Typee girls carry on an ordinary conversation, giving a musical prolongation to the final syllable of every sentence, and chirping out some of the words with a liquid, bird-like accent, was singularly pleasing.

The men however, are not quite so harmonious in their utterance, and when excited upon any subject, would work themselves up into a sort of wordy paroxysm, during which all descriptions of rough-sided sounds were projected from their mouths, with a force and rapidity which was absolutely astonishing.

Although these savages are remarkably fond of chanting, still they appear to have no idea whatever of singing, at least as the art is practised in other nations.

I shall never forget the first time I happened to roar out a stave in the presence of noble Mehevi. It was a stanza from the ‘Bavarian broom-seller’. His Typeean majesty, with all his court, gazed upon me in amazement, as if I had displayed some preternatural faculty which Heaven had denied to them. The King was delighted with the verse; but the chorus fairly transported him. At his solicitation I sang it again and again, and nothing could be more ludicrous than his vain attempts to catch the air and the words. The royal savage seemed to think that by screwing all the features of his face into the end of his nose he might possibly succeed in the undertakings, but it failed to answer the purpose; and in the end he gave it up, and consoled himself by listening to my repetition of the sounds fifty times over.

Previous to Mehevi’s making the discovery, I had never been aware that there was anything of the nightingale about me; but I was now promoted to the place of court-minstrel, in which capacity I was afterwards perpetually called upon to officiate.

Besides the sticks and the drums, there are no other musical instruments among the Typees, except one which might appropriately be denominated a nasal flute. It is somewhat longer than an ordinary fife; is made of a beautiful scarlet-coloured reed; and has four or five stops, with a large hole near one end, which latter is held just beneath the left nostril. The other nostril being closed by a peculiar movement of the muscles about the nose, the breath is forced into the tube, and produces a soft dulcet sound which is varied by the fingers running at random over the stops. This is a favourite recreation with the females and one in which Fayaway greatly excelled. Awkward as such an instrument may appear, it was, in Fayaway’s delicate little hands, one of the most graceful I have ever seen. A young lady, in the act of tormenting a guitar strung about her neck by a couple of yards of blue ribbon, is not half so engaging.

Singing was not the only means I possessed of diverting the royal Mehevi and his easy-going subject. Nothing afforded them more pleasure than to see me go through the attitude of pugilistic encounter. As not one of the natives had soul enough in him to stand up like a man, and allow me to hammer away at him, for my own personal gratification and that of the king, I was necessitated to fight with an imaginary enemy, whom I invariably made to knock under to my superior prowess. Sometimes when this sorely battered

Se suele atribuir a los salvajes una articulación gutural. Sin embargo, no siempre es así, en especial entre los habitantes de los archipiélagos polinesios. La melodía labial con que las muchachas Taipis mantienen una conversación ordinaria, dando una prolongación musical a la sílaba final de cada frase, y gorjeando algunas de las palabras con líquido acento de pájaro, era singularmente grata.

Aunque a esos salvajes les gustan notablemente sus canturreos, parecen no tener idea del canto tal como se practica entre otras naciones.

Jamás olvidaré la primera vez que, por casualidad, entoné a voz en cuello una estrofa en presencia del noble Mehevi. Era un trozo de «El vendedor de escobas bávaro». Su Majestad Taipiana, con toda su corte, me miró con asombro, como si hubiera exhibido alguna facultad preternatural que el cielo les hubiera negado a ellos. El rey quedó encantado con las estrofas, pero el estribillo le puso fuera de sí. A instancias suyas, lo volvi a cantar una vez y otra, y nada podía ser más ridículo que sus vanos intentos por captar la melodía y las palabras. El real salvaje parecía pensar que atornillando todos los rasgos de la cara en la punta de [247] la nariz quizá conseguiría su empeño, pero ello no respondió a su intención, y al final renunció y se consoló escuchando cómo repetía yo los sonidos más de cincuenta veces.

Antes de que Mehevi hiciera el descubrimiento, no me había dado cuenta de que hubiera en mí nada de ruseñor; pero entonces fui ascendido al puesto de ministro de corte, cargo en el que siempre fui requerido desde entonces a actuar.

Además de los palos y los tambores, no hay otros instrumentos musicales entre los taipis, salvo uno que podría llamarse adecuadamente flauta nasal. Ésta es algo más larga que un pífano normal, está hecha de caña con un hermoso color rojo, y tiene cuatro o cinco agujeros, con un gran orificio junto a un extremo que se sostiene debajo mismo del agujero izquierdo de la nariz. Cerrando el otro agujero de la nariz con un peculiar movimiento de los músculos, se obliga a que entre la respiración en el tubo, y se produce un suave sonido de dulzaina, que se varía haciendo correr los dedos al azar por los agujeros. Es un recreo favorito de las mujeres, y en él sobresalía mucho Fayaway. Por tosco que parezca tal instrumento, en las delicadas manos de Fayaway era uno de los más graciosos que he visto jamás. Una señorita atormentando una guitarra colgada del cuello por una larga tira de cinta azul no es ni la mitad de seductora.

El canto no era el único medio que poseía yo para divertir al real Mehevi y a sus complacientes súbditos. Nada les proporcionaba mayor diversión que verme hacer las posturas de un encuentro pugilístico. Como ninguno de los indígenas tenía bastante valor para enfrentárselme como un hombre, me veía obligado, para mi diversión personal y la del rey, a luchar con un enemigo imaginario, al que siempre hacía desplomarse bajo la superioridad de mis fuerzas. A veces, cuando esa sombra gravemente maltratada se retiraba pre-
shadow retreated precipitately towards a group of the savages, and, following him up, I rushed among them dealing my blows right and left, they would disperse in all directions much to the enjoyment of Mehevi, the chiefs, and themselves.

The noble art of self-defence appeared to be regarded by them as the peculiar gift of the white man, and I make little doubt that they supposed armies of Europeans were drawn up provided with nothing else but bony fists and stout hearts, with which they set to in column, and pummelled one another at the word of command.

One day, in company with Kory-Kory, I had repaired to the stream for the purpose of bathing, when I observed a woman sitting upon a rock in the midst of the current, and watching with the liveliest interest the gambols of something, which at first I took to be an uncommonly large species of frog that was sporting in the water near her. Attracted by the novelty of the sight, I waded towards the spot where she sat, and could hardly credit the evidence of my senses when I beheld a little infant, the period of whose birth could not have extended back many days, paddling about as if it had just risen to the surface, after being hatched into existence at the bottom. Occasionally, the delighted parent reached out her hand towards it, when the little thing, uttering a faint cry, and striking out its tiny limbs, would sidle* for the rock, and the next moment be clasped to its mother’s bosom. This was repeated again and again, the baby remaining in the stream about a minute at a time. Once or twice it made wry* faces at swallowing a mouthful of water, and choked a spluttered as if on the point of strangling. Sin embargo, en tales ocasiones, la madre lo sacaba, y le obligaba a arrojar el líquido por un procedimiento que es mejor no mencionar. Durante varias semanas después, observé a esa mujer bajando a su niño al río todos los días con regularidad, en el frescor de la mañana y de la tarde, para convidarle a un baño. No es extraño que los isleños del Mar del Sur sean una raza tan anfibia si se les lanza así al agua tan pronto como ven la luz. Estoy convencido de que el nadar es algo tan natural para el ser humano como para el pato. Y sin embargo, en las comunidades civilizadas, ¿cuántos individuos capaces mueren, como gatitos ahogados, a causa de los accidentes más triviales!

The long luxuriant and glossy tresses of the Typee damsels often attracted my admiration. A fine head of hair is the pride and joy of every woman’s heart. Whether against the express will of Providence, it is twisted upon the crown of the head and there coiled away like a rope on a ship’s deck; whether it be stuck behind the ears and hangs down like the swag of a small window-curtain; or whether it be permitted to flow over the shoulders in natural ringlets, it is always the pride of the owner, and the glory of the toilette.

The Typee girls devote much of their time to the dressing of their fair and redundant locks. After bathing, as they sometimes do five or six times every day, the hair is carefully dried, and if they have been in the sea, invariably washed in fresh water, and anointed with a highly scented oil extracted from the meat of the cocoanut. This oil is obtained in great abundance by the following very simple process:

A large vessel of wood, with holes perforated in the bottom, is filled with the pounded meat, and exposed to the rays of the sun. As the oleaginous matter exudes, it falls in drops through
cipitadamente hacia un grupo de salvajes, y yo la seguía lanzándome entre ellos y dando golpes a derecha e izquierda, ellos se dispersaban en todas direcciones, con gran diversión de Mehevi, de los jefes y de ellos mismos.

El noble arte de la defensa personal parecía ser considerado por ellos como dote peculiar del hombre blanco, y tengo pocas dudas de que suponían que los ejércitos europeos se alineaban provistos sólo de sus huesudos puños y sus [248] robustos corazones, con los que se desplegaban en orden de combate y se aparebaban mutuamente a la voz de mando.

Un día, en compañía de Kory-Kory, había acudido al río con propósito de bañarme, cuando vi una mujer sentada en una roca en medio de la corriente, que observaba con el más vivo interés los brincos de algo que al principio tomé por una rana de especie extraordinariamente grande, que estaría jugando en el agua junto a ella. Atraído por la novedad del espectáculo, vadeé hacia el lugar donde estaba ella, y apenas pude dar crédito a mis sentidos cuando observé un niñoito pequeño, que no podría haber nacido hacía muchos días agitándose como si acabara de subir a la superficie, tras de haber sido traído a la existencia en el fondo. De vez en cuando, la complacida madre le tendía las manos, cuando el pobre, lanzando un débil grito y pataleando con sus piernecillas, quería agarrarse a la roca, y un momento después lo abrazaba en su regazo maternal. Esto se repetía una vez y otra, permaneciendo el niño en el río cerca de un minuto en cada ocasión. Una vez o dos, puso X mala cara al tragar un sorbo de agua, y se atragantó y tosió como si estuviera a punto de asfixiarse. Sin embargo, en tales ocasiones, la madre lo sacaba, y le obligaba a arrojar el líquido por un procedimiento que es mejor no mencionar. Durante varias semanas después, observé a esa mujer bajando a su niño al río todos los días con regularidad, en el frescor de la mañana y de la tarde, para convidarle a un baño. No es extraño que los isleños del Mar del Sur sean una raza tan anfibia si se les lanza así al agua tan pronto como ven la luz. Estoy convencido de que el nadar es algo tan natural para el ser humano como para el pato. Y sin embargo, en las comunidades civilizadas, ¿cuántos individuos capaces mueren, como gatitos ahogados, a causa de los accidentes más triviales!

The long luxuriant and glossy tresses of the Typee damsels often attracted my admiration. A fine head of hair is the pride and joy of every woman’s heart. Whether against the express will of Providence, it is twisted upon the crown of the head and there coiled away like a rope on a ship’s deck; whether it be stuck behind the ears and hangs down like the swag of a small window-curtain; or whether it be permitted to flow over the shoulders in natural ringlets, it is always the pride of the owner, and the glory of the toilette.

The Typee girls devote much of their time to the dressing of their fair and redundant locks. After bathing, as they sometimes do five or six times every day, the hair is carefully dried, and if they have been in the sea, invariably washed in fresh water, and anointed with a highly scented oil extracted from the meat of the cocoanut. This oil is obtained in great abundance by the following very simple process:

A large vessel of wood, with holes perforated in the bottom, is filled with the pounded meat, and exposed to the rays of the sun. As the oleaginous matter exudes, it falls in drops through
the sweetest perfume. This elegant little odorous globe
poured into the small spherical shells of the nuts of the moo-tree, which are hollowed out to
receive it. These nuts are then hermetically sealed with a resinous gum, and the vegetable fragrance of their green rind soon imparts to the oil a delightful odour. After the lapse of a few weeks the exterior shell of the nuts becomes quite dry and hard, and assumes a beautiful carnation tint; and when opened they are found to be
about two-thirds full of an ointment of a light yellow colour and **diffusing** the sweetest perfume. This elegant little odorous globe would not be out of place even upon the toilette of a queen. Its merits as a preparation for the hair are undeniable—it imparts to it a superb gloss and a silky fineness.

---

* unmanned I lacked personnel or crew example: an unmanned (no tripula-
do) ship ; sin nadie a bordo, desguarnecidas
2 of aircraft, spacecraft, etc. operated by automatic or remote control
3 uninhabited
4 (Falconary) (of a hawk or falcon) not yet trained to accept humans
5 Emasculated, desvirilizado

**APPREHENSIONS OF EVIL—FRIGHTFUL DIS-**
**COVERY—SOME REMARKS ON CANNIBALISM—**
**SECOND BATTLE WITH THE HAPPARS—SAVAGE**
**SPECTACLE—MYSTERIOUS FEAST—SUBSE-
**QUENT DISCLOSURES**

FROM the time of my casual encounter with Karky the artist, my life was one of absolute wretchedness. Not a day passed but I was persecuted by the solicitations of some of the natives to subject myself to the odious operation of tattooing. Their importunities drove me half wild, for I felt how easily they might work their will upon me regarding this or anything else which they took into their heads. Still, however, the behaviour of the islanders towards me was as kind as ever. Fayaway was quite as engaging; Kory-Kory as devoted; and Mehevi the king just as gracious and condescending as before. But I had now been three months in their valley, as nearly as I could estimate; I had grown familiar with the narrow limits to which my wandering had been confined; and I began bitterly to feel the state of captivity in which I was held. There was no one with whom I could freely converse; no one to whom I could communi-
cate my thoughts; no one who could sympathize with my suffer-
ings. A thousand times I thought how much more endurable would have been my lot had Toby still been with me. But I was left alone, and the thought was terrible to me. Still, despite my griefs, I did all in my power to appear composed and cheerful, well knowing that by manifesting any uneasiness, or any de-
sire to escape, I should only frustrate my object.

It was during the period I was in this unhappy frame of mind that the painful malady under which I had been labouring—after having almost completely subsided—began again to show itself, and with symptoms as violent as ever. This added calam-
ity nearly **unmanned** me; the recurrence of the complaint proved that without powerful remedial applications all hope of cure was futile; and when I reflected that just beyond the elevations, which bound me in, was the medical relief I needed, and that although so near, it was impossible for me to avail myself of it, the thought was misery.

In this wretched situation, every circumstance which evinced the savage nature of the beings at whose mercy I was, augmented the fearful apprehensions that consumed me. An occurrence which hap-

---

CAPÍTULO XXXII

TEMORES DE ALGO MALO. TERRIBLE DESCUBRIMIENTO. ALGUNAS OBSERVACIONES SOBRE EL CANIBALISMO. SEGUNDA BATALLA CON LOS HAPPARS. SALVAJE ESPECTÁCULO. FIESTA MISTERIOSA. DESCUBRIMIENTOS POSTERIORES

Desde el momento de mi encuentro casual con Karky, el artista, mi vida fue una vida de absoluta desgracia. No pasaba día sin que me persiguieran las solicitudes de algunos indígenas para que me sometiera a la odiosa operación del tatuaré. Su modo de importunarme me puso medio loco, pues notaba con qué facilidad podrían realizar en mi su voluntad, respecto a esto o respecto a cualquier otra cosa que se les metiera en la cabeza. Sin embargo, la conducta de los isleños hacia mí siguió siendo tan benevol a como siempre. Fayaway seguía igual de encantadora, Kory-Kory igual de adicto, y el rey Mehevi, igual de indulgente y condescendiente que antes. Pero ya llevaba tres meses en el valle, en lo que podía calcular, me había familiarizado con los estrechos límites a que se habían sujetado mis vagabundeos, y empezaba a sentir con amargura el estado de cautivi-
ero en que me tenían. No había nadie con quien pudiera conversar libremente, nadie a quien pudiera comunicar mis pensamientos, nadie que pudiera compomutrarse con mis sufrimentos. Mil veces pen-
saba cuanto más soportable hubiera sido mi suerte si Toby hubiera seguido conmigo. Pero había [251] quedado solo, y esta idea era terrible para mí. Sin embargo, a pesar de mis dolores, hice todo lo que pude para parecer dominado y alegre, sabiendo muy bien que, si manifestaba inquietudes o deseos de escapar, no haría más que frustrar mi intención.

Durante el periodo en que estaba en ese desgraciado estado de ánimo, la dolorosa enfermedad que había sufrido, después de haberme aliviado casi por completo, empezó a mostrarse otra vez, con síntomas tan violentos como nunca. Esta nueva calamidad casi me aniquiló; la repetición de la dolencia demostraba que, sin aplicación de remedios poderosos, era vana toda esperanza de curación, y cuando reflexionaba que detrás mismo de las al-
turas que me rodeaban estaba la asistencia médica que necesi-
taba, y que, aun estando tan cerca, me resultaba imposible apro-
vecharla, el pensarlo me abrumaba.

En esta lamentable situación, todas las circunstancias que mostraban el carácter salvaje de los seres a cuya merced estaba aumentaban los horribles temores que me consumían. Un suceso...
I have already mentioned that from the ridge-pole of Marheyo’s house were suspended a number of packages enveloped in tappa. Many of these I had often seen in the hands of the natives, and their contents had been examined in my presence. But there were three packages hanging very nearly over the place where I lay, which from their remarkable appearance had often excited my curiosity. Several times I had asked Kory-Kory to show me their contents, but my servant, who, in almost every other particular had acceded to my wishes, refused to gratify me in this.

One of the three I distinctly saw. It was in a state of perfect preservation, and from the slight glimpse I had of it, seemed to have been subjected to some smoking operation which had reduced it to the dry, hard, and mummy-like appearance it presented. The long scalp locks were twisted up into balls upon the crown of the head in the same way that the individual who had worn them during life. The sunken cheeks were rendered still more ghastly by the rows of glistening teeth which protruded from between the lips, while the sockets of the eyes—filled with sickly yellow—sharpened the hideousness of its aspect.

Two of the three were heads of the islanders; but the third, to my horror, was that of a white man. Although it had been quickly removed from my sight, still the glimpse I had of it was enough to convince me that I could not be mistaken.

Gracious God! what dreadful thoughts entered my head; in solving this mystery perhaps I had solved another, and the fate of my lost companion might be revealed. I longed to have torn off the folds of cloth and satisfied the awful doubts under which I laboured. But before I had recovered from the consternation into which I had been thrown, the fatal packages were hoisted aloft, and once more swung over my head. The natives now gathered round me tumultuously, and labouring to convince me that what I had just seen were the heads of three Hapar warriors, who had been slain in battle. This glaring falsehood added to my alarm, and it was not until I reflected that I had observed the packages swinging from their elevation before Toby’s disappearance, that I could at all recover my composure.

But although this horrible apprehension had been dispelled, I had discovered enough to fill me, in my present state of mind, with the most bitter reflections. It was plain that I had seen the last relic of some unfortunate wretch, who must have been massacred on the beach by the savages, in one of those perilous trading adventures which I have before described.

It was not, however, alone the murder of the stranger that overcame me with gloom. I shuddered at the idea of the subsequent fate his inanimate body might have met with. Was the same doom reserved for me? Was I destined to perish that occurred by then, me afectó con gran fuerza.

Una de las tres las vi claramente. Se hallaba en estado de perfecta conservación, y por la leve ojada que le eché, parecía haberse sometido a una operación [252] de ahumado que la había dejado con el aspecto seco, duro y momificado que presentaba. Los dos largos rizos del cráneo estaban trenzados en bolas sobre la coronilla, del mismo modo que los había llevado en vida aquel individuo. Las hundidas mejillas resultaban aún más espectrales que las filas de resplandecientes dientes que salían entre los labios, mientras las cuencas de los ojos—llenas con trozos ovalados de madreperla, con un punto negro en el centro—realizaban lo horrible de su aspecto.

Dos de las tres eran cabezas de isleños, pero la tercera, para mi horror, era de un blanco. Aunque la apartaron rápidamente de mi vista, la ojeada que le eché bastó para convencerme de que no podía equivocarme.

¡Dios mío, qué horribles pensamientos entraron en mi ánimo! Al resolver este misterio, quizás había resuelto otro, y el destino de mi compañero perdido podría revelarse en el horrible espectáculo que acababa de presenciar. Hubiera querido arrancar los pliegues de pana, y satisfacer las espantosas dudas que sufría. Pero antes de recobrarme de la consternación en que había caído, los fatales paquetes estaban izados en lo alto y volvían a mecerse sobre mi cabeza. Entonces los indígenas me rodearon tumultuosamente, y se esforzaron en convencerme de que no el que acababa de ver eran las cabezas de tres guerreros hoppap, que habían muerto en batalla. Esta evidente falsedad aumentó mi alarma, y sólo pude recuperar totalmente mi compostura cuando reflexioné que había visto los paquetes colgando en su elevación desde antes que desapareciera Toby.

Pero aunque se disipó ese horrible temor, había descubierto bastante como para llenarme de las más amargas reflexiones en mi actual estado de ánimo. Estaba claro que había visto el último resto de algún pobre infortunado que debía haber sido muerto en la playa por los salvajes, en una de esas peligrosas aventuras de intercambio que antes me describí.

No fue sólo, sin embargo, el asesinato del desconocido lo que me inundó de tristeza. Me estremecía ante la idea del destino posterior que habría recibido el cuerpo inanimado. ¿Me estaba reservada la misma condena? ¿Estaba yo destinado a perecer como...
like him—like him perhaps, to be devoured and my head to be preserved as a fearful memento of the events? My imagination ran riot in these horrid speculations, and I felt certain that the worst possible evils would befall me. But whatever were my misgivings, I studiously concealed them from the islanders, as well as the full extent of the discovery I had made.

Although the assurances which the Typees had often given me, that they never eat human flesh, had not convinced me that such was the case, yet, having been so long a time in the valley without witnessing anything which indicated the existence of the practice, I began to hope that it was an event of very rare occurrence, and that I should be spared the horror of witnessing it during my stay among them: but, alas, these hopes were soon destroyed.

It is a singular fact, that in all our accounts of cannibal tribes we have seldom received the testimony of an eye-witness account to this revolting practice. The horrible conclusion has almost always been derived from the second-hand evidence of Europeans, or else from the admissions of the savages themselves, after they have in some degree become civilized. The Polynesians are aware of the detestation in which Europeans hold this custom, and therefore invariably deny its existence, and with the craft peculiar to savages, endeavour to conceal every trace of it.

The excessive unwillingness betrayed by the Sandwich Islanders, even at the present day, to allude to the unhappy fate of Cook, has often been remarked. And so well have they succeeded in covering the event with mystery, that to this very hour, despite all that has been said and written on the subject, it still remains doubtful whether they wreaked* upon his murdered body the vengeance they sometimes inflicted upon their enemies.

At Kealakekau, the scene of that tragedy, a strip of ship’s copper nailed against an upright post in the ground used to inform the traveller that beneath reposed the ‘remains’ of the great circumnavigator. But I am strongly inclined to believe not only the corpse was refused Christian burial, but that the heart which was brought to Vancouver some time after the event, and which the Hawaiians stoutly maintained was that of Captain Cook, was no such thing; and that the whole affair was a piece of imposture which was sought to be palmed off upon the credulous Englishman.

A few years since there was living on the island of Maui (one of the Sandwich group) an old chief, who, actuated by a morbid desire for notoriety, gave himself out among the foreign residents of the place as the living tomb of Captain Cook’s big toe,—affirming that at the cannibal entertainment which ensued after the lamented Briton’s death, that particular portion of his body had fallen to his share. His indignant countrymen actually caused him to be prosecuted in the native courts, on a charge nearly equivalent to what we term defamation of character; but the old fellow persisting in his assertion, and no invalidating proof being adduced, the plaintiffs were cast in the suit, and the cannibal reputation of the defendant firmly established. This result was the making of his fortune; ever afterwards he was in the habit of giving very profitable audiences to all curious travellers who were desirous of beholding the man who had eaten the great navigator’s great toe.

About a week after my discovery of the contents of the mysterious packages, I happened to be at the Ti, when another war-alarm was sounded, and the natives rushing to their arms, sallied out to resist a second incursion of the Happar invaders. The same scene was again repeated, only that on this occasion I el; to be devoured, quizá como él, conservándose mi cabeza como terrible recordatorio del acontecimiento? Mi imaginación se desordenó en esas horribles especulaciones, y sentí con seguridad que me tocarían los peores males posibles. Pero, cualesquiera que fueran mis temores, se los oculté cuidadosamente a los isleños, así como el pleno alcance del descubrimiento que había hecho. [253]

Aunque las seguridades que me habían dado los taipis de que nunca comían carne humana no me habían convencido de que fuera así, no obstante, después de llevar tanto tiempo en el valle sin prestar atención a nada que indicara la existencia de tal práctica, empecé a tener esperanzas de que ello fuera un suceso de muy escasa frecuencia, y que se me evitaría el horror de presenciarlo durante mi estancia entre ellos. Pero ¡ay!, esas esperanzas fueron destruidas muy pronto.

Es un hecho singular que en todos nuestros relatos sobre las tribus caníbales raramente hemos recibido el testimonio de un testigo ocular de esa repugnante práctica. La horrible conclusión se ha deducido casi siempre de declaraciones de segunda mano de los europeos, o por admisiones de los propios salvajes, después que se han civilizado hasta cierto punto. Los polinesios se dan cuenta de cómo detestan esa costumbre los europeos, y por tanto siempre niegan su existencia, y, con la astucia peculiar de los salvajes, se esfuerzan por ocultar todas sus huellas.

A menudo se ha notado la excesiva reluctancia que muestran los indígenas de las Islas Sandwich a aludir al infeliz destino de Cook, incluso en los días presentes. Y de tal modo han logrado envolver en misterio ese suceso, que hasta hoy mismo, a pesar de todo lo que se ha dicho y escrito sobre el tema, todavía sigue siendo dudoso si infligieron a su cuerpo asesinado la venganza que a veces infligen a sus enemigos.

En Karakikova, la escena de esa tragedia, una tira de cobre de un barco, clavada en un poste vertical en el suelo, informaba al viajero de que debajo reposaban los «restos» de ese gran navegante. Pero me inclino mucho a creer, no sólo que se le negó al cadáver sepultura cristiana, sino que el corazón que llevaron a Vancouver algún tiempo después del suceso, y que los hawaianos mantenían firmemente que era del capitán Cook, no era tal corazón, y que el asunto entero era una impostura que se trataba de encajar a los crédulos ingleses.

Pocos años después vivía en la isla de Maui (del archipiélago de las Sandwich) un viejo jefe que, movido por un morbosodeseo de celebridad, se presentó entre los residentes extranjeros de aquel lugar como la tumba viva del dedo gordo del pie del capitán Cook, afirmando que, en el festín caníbal que siguió a la lamentada muerte del británico, le había tocado en suerte esa determinada parte de su cuerpo. Sus indignados compatriotas le hicieron juzgar en los tribunales indígenas, bajo una acusación equivalente a lo que llamamos nosotros difamación, pero como el viejo insistía en su afirmación y no se presentó ninguna prueba que la invalidara, los demandantes perdieron el pleito, y la [254] reputación caníbales del demandado quedó plenamente establecida. Este resultado hizo su fortuna: desde entonces, tomó la costumbre de dar audiencias muy lucrativas a todos los curiosos viajeros que deseaban observar al hombre que se había comido el dedo gordo del pie del gran navegante.

Cerca de una semana después de mi descubrimiento del contenido de los misteriosos paquetes, estaba yo por casualidad en el Ti, cuando se dio otra alarma de guerra, y los indígenas, precipitándose a sus armas, salieron a resistir un segundo ataque de los invasores happer. Se volvió a repetir la misma escena, sólo

* wreak v.tr. 1 (usu. foll. by upon) give play or satisfaction to; put in operation (vengeance or one’s anger etc.).
heard at least fifteen reports of muskets from the mountains during the time that the skirmish lasted. An hour or two after its termination, loud pacans chanted through the valley announced the approach of the victors. I stood with Kory-Kory leaning against the railing of the pi-pi awaiting their advance, when a tumultuous crowd of islanders emerged with wild clamours from the neighbouring groves. In the midst of them marched four men, one preceding the other at regular intervals of eight or ten feet, with poles of a corresponding length, extending from shoulder to shoulder, to which were lashed with *thongs* of bark three long narrow bundles, carefully wrapped in ample coverings of freshly plucked palm-leaves, tacked together with slivers of bamboo. Here and there upon these green wind-ing-sheets might be seen the stains of blood, while the war-coverings of freshly plucked palm-leaves, tacked together with slivers of bamboo. The shaven head of the foremost had a deep gash upon it, and the clotted gore which had flowed from the wound remained in dry patches around it. The savage seemed to be sinking under the weight he bore. The bright tattooing upon his body was covered with blood and dust; his inflamed eyes rolled in their sockets, and his whole appearance denoted extraordinary suffering and exertion; yet sustained by some powerful impulse, he continued to advance, while the throng around him with wild cheers sought to encourage him. The other three men were marked about the arms and breasts with several slight wounds, which they somewhat ostentatiously displayed.

These four individuals, having been the most active in the late encounter, claimed the honour of bearing the bodies of their slain enemies to the Ti. Such was the conclusion I drew from my own observations, and, as far as I could understand, from the explanation which Kory-Kory gave me.

The royal Mehevi walked by the side of these heroes. He carried in one hand a musket, from the barrel of which was suspended a small canvas pouch of powder, and in the other he grasped a short javelin, which he held before him and regarded with fierce exultation. This javelin he had wrested* from a celebrated champion of the Happars, who had ignominiously fled, and was pursued by his foes beyond the summit of the mountain.

When within a short distance of the Ti, the warrior with the wounded head, who proved to be Narmone, tottered forward two or three steps, and fell helpless to the ground; but not before another had caught the end of the pole from his shoulder, and placed it upon his own.

The excited throng of islanders, who surrounded the person of the king and the dead bodies of the enemy, approached the spot where I stood, brandishing their rude implements of warfare, many of which were bruised and broken, and uttering continual shouts of triumph. When the crowd drew up opposite the Ti, I set myself to watch their proceedings most attentively; but scarcely had they halted when my servant, who had left me for a instant, touched my arm and proposed our returning to Marheyo’s house. To this I object; but, to my surprise, Kory-Kory reiterated his request, and with an unusual vehemence of manner. Still, however, I refused to comply, and was retreating before him, as in his importunity he pressed upon me, when I felt a heavy hand laid upon my shoulder, and turning round, encountered the bulky form of Mow-Mow, a one-eyed chief, who had just detached himself from the crowd below, and had mounted the rear of the pi-pi upon which we stood. His cheek had been pierced by the point of a spear, and the wound imparted a still more frightful expression to his hideously tattooed face, already deformed by the loss of an eye. The warrior, without uttering a syllable, pointed fiercely in the direction of Marheyo’s house, that he might be signalled for to serve as a guide. Esos cuatro individuos, habiendo sido los más activos en el anterior encuentro, reclamaban el honor de llevar allí los cadáveres de sus enemigos caídos. Tal fue la conclusión que saqué de mis observaciones, y en lo que pude entender, de la explicación que me dio Kory-Kory.

El egregio Mehevi caminaba al lado de esos héroes. Llevaba en una mano un mosquete, de cuyo cañón colgaba una bolsita de lona con pólvora, y en la otra [255] empuñaba una corta jabalina, que levantaba ante sí y consideraba con feroz exaltación. Esa jabalina se la había arrancado a un famoso campeón de los happar, que había huido ignominiosamente perseguido por su enemigo más allá de la cima de la montaña.

Cuando estuvieron a poca distancia del Ti, el guerrero de la cabeza herida, que resultó ser Narmone, dio dos o tres pasos tambaleantes, y cayó exánime en el suelo, pero no antes de que otro le quitara del hombro el extremo del palo y se lo pusiera en el suyo.

La excitada multitud de isleños que rodeaban la persona del rey y los cuerpos muertos de los enemigos se aproximaron al lugar donde estaba yo, blandiendo sus toscos instrumentos de guerra, muchos de los cuales estaban mellados y rotos, y lanzando continuos gritos de triunfo. Cuando la multitud se reunió enfrente del Ti, yo me dispuse a observar lo que hacían con la máxima atención, pero apenas me había detenido, cuando mi servidor, que se había apartado un momento de mi lado, me tocó en el brazo y me propuso que volviéramos a casa de Marheyo. Yo me opuse a ello, pero, con sorpresa mía, Kory-Kory reiteró su petición en una forma desacostumbradamente vehemente. Sin embargo, seguí, ansioso de obedecer, y ya me apartaba de él, porque se echaba sobre mi importunándome, cuando sentí una mano pesada puesta en mi hombro, y al dar media vuelta, encontré la voluminosa figura de Mau-Mau, un jefe fuerte, que acababa de separarse de la multitud de abajo, y había subido por detrás al pai-pai donde estaban. La punta de una lanza le había atravesado la mejilla, y esa herida daba una expresión aún más horrible a su cara horriblemente tatuada, ya deformada por la pérdida de un ojo. El guerrero, sin pronunciar una sílaba, señaló ferozmente en dirección a

---

* wrest / force or wrench away from a person’s grasp. 2 forl. by (one) obtain by effort or with difficulty. 3 distort into accordance with one’s interests or views (wrest the law to suit themselves). arrebatabos, hurtado, desposeído, usurpado
while Kory-Kory, at the same time presenting his back, desired me to mount.

I declined this offer, but intimated my willingness to withdraw, and moved slowly along the piazza, wondering what could be the cause of this unusual treatment. A few minutes’ consideration convinced me that the savages were about to celebrate some hideous rite in connection with their peculiar customs, and at which they were determined I should not be present. I descended from the pi-pi, and attended by Kory-Kory, who on this occasion did not show his usual commissariation for my lameness, but seemed only anxious to hurry me on, walked away from the place. As I passed through the noisy throng, which by this time completely enveloped the Ti, I looked with fearful curiosity at the three packages, which now were deposited upon the ground; but although I had no doubt as to their contents, still their thick coverings prevented my actually detecting the form of a human body.

The next morning, shortly after sunrise, the same thundering sounds which had awakened me from sleep on the second day of the Feast of Calabashes, assured me that the savages were on the eve of celebrating another, and, as I fully believed, a horrible solemnity.

All the inmates of the house, with the exception of Marheyo, his son, and Tinor, after assuming their gala dresses, departed in the direction of the Taboo Groves.

Although I did not anticipate a compliance with my request, still, with a view of testing the truth of my suspicions, I proposed to Kory-Kory that, according to our usual custom in the morning, we should take a stroll to the Ti: he positively refused; and when I renewed the request, he evinced his determination to prevent my going there; and, to divert my mind from the subject, he proposed to Kory that, according to our usual custom in the morning, we should take a stroll to the Ti: he positively refused; and when I renewed the request, he evinced his determination to prevent my going there; and, to divert my mind from the subject, he offered to accompany me to the stream. We accordingly went, and ventured my going there; and, to divert my mind from the subject, he

The rest of the day I spent with Kory-Kory and Fayaway, wandering about a part of the valley situated in an opposite direction from the Ti, and whenever I so much as looked towards that building, although it was hidden from view by intervening trees, and at the distance of more than a mile, my attendant would exclaim, ‘Taboo, taboo!’

At the various houses where we stopped, I found many of the inhabitants reclining at their ease, or pursuing some light occupation, as if nothing unusual were going forward; but amongst them all I did not perceive a single chief or warrior. When I asked several of the people why they were not at the ‘Hoolah Hoolah’ (the feast), their uniformly answered the question in a manner which implied that it was not intended for them, but for Mehevi, Narmonie, Mow-Mow, Kolor, Wonmoo, Kalow, running over, in their desire to make me comprehend their meaning, the names of all the principal chiefs.

Everything, in short, strengthened my suspicions with regard to the nature of the festival they were now celebrating; and which amounted almost to a certainty. While in Nukuheva I had frequently been informed that the whole tribe were never present at these cannibal banquets, but the chiefs and priests only; and everything I now observed agreed with the account.

The sound of the drums continued without intermission the whole day, and falling continually upon my ear, caused me a sensation of horror which I am unable to describe. On the following day, hearing none of those noisy indications of revelry, I concluded

A la mañana siguiente, poco después de salir el sol, los mismos ruidos de trueno que me habían despertado al sueño el segundo día de la Fiesta de las Calabazas, me aseguraron que los salvajes estaban a punto de celebrar otra solemnidad, horrible, según estaba yo convencido.

Todos los habitantes de la casa, con la excepción de Marheyo, su hijo y Tinor, después de ponerse los atuendos de gala, marcharon en dirección a los bosques tabú.

Aunque no esperaba ser obedecido en mi petición, sin embargo, para poner a prueba la veracidad de mis sospechas propuse a Kory-Kory que, conforme a lo que acostumbrábamos por las mañanas, diéramos un paseo hasta el Ti: él rehusó decididamente, y cuando renové la petición, mostró que estaba decidido a impedir que yo fuera allí; y para apartar mi ánimo del tema, me ofreció acompañarme al río. En vista de eso, fuimos a bañarnos. Al volver a la casa, me sorprendió encontrar que habían regresado todos sus habitantes, y estaban reposando en las esteras como de costumbre, aunque los tambores seguían resonando en los bosques.

Pasé el resto del día con Kory-Kory y Fayaway, vagabundeando por una parte del valle situada en dirección opuesta al Ti, y en cuanto miraba siquiera hacia ese edificio, aunque estaba oculto a mi vista por los árboles interpuestos, y a distancia de más de una milla, mi acompañante exclamaba: ¡Tabá, tabá!

En las diversas casas donde nos detuvimos encontré a muchos de los habitantes cómodamente tumbados, o dedicados a alguna ligera ocupación, como si no ocurriera nada extraordinario, pero entre todos ellos no observé ni un solo jefe ni guerrero. Cuando pregunté a varios de ellos por qué no estaban en el huila-huila (la fiesta), contestaron unánimemente a la pregunta de un modo que implicaba que no era para ellos, sino para Mehevi, Narmonie, Mau-Mau, Wonmoo, Kalau... recorriendo los nombres de todos los jefes principales en su deseo de hacerme comprender lo que querían decir.

En resumen, todo fortaleció mis sospechas respecto al carácter del festival que celebraban entonces, llevándolas casi a la certidumbre. Mientras estuve en Nukuheva, me habían informado frecuentemente de que la tribu entera nunca estaba presente en esos banquetes caníbales, sino sólo los jefes y sacerdotes, y todo lo que observé ahora estaba de acuerdo con el informe. [257]

El sonido de los tambores continuó sin interrupción todo el día, y al herir continuamente mis oídos, me produjo una sensación de horror que soy incapaz de describir. Al día siguiente, no oyendo esas ruidosas indicaciones de festejo, decidí que ha-
that the inhuman feast was terminated; and feeling a kind of morbid curiosity to discover whether the Ti might furnish any evidence of what had taken place there, I proposed to Kory-Kory to walk there. To this proposition he replied by pointing with his finger to the newly risen sun, and then up to the zenith, intimating that our visit must be deferred until noon. Shortly after that hour we accordingly proceeded to the Taboo Groves, and as soon as we entered their precincts, I looked fearfully round in, quest of some memorial of the scene which had so lately been acted there; but everything appeared as usual. On reaching the Ti, we found Mehevi and a few chiefs reclining on the mats, who gave me as friendly a reception as ever. No allusions of any kind were made by them to the recent events; and I refrained, for obvious reasons, from referring to them myself.

After staying a short time I took my leave. In passing along the piazza, previously to descending from the pi-pi, I observed a curiously carved vessel of wood, of considerable size, with a cover placed over it, of the same material, and which resembled in shape a small canoe. It was surrounded by a low railing of bamboos, the top of which was scarcely a foot from the ground. As the vessel had been placed in its present position since my last visit, I at once concluded that it must have some connection with the recent festival, and, prompted by a curiosity I could not repress, in passing it I raised one end of the cover; at the same moment the chiefs, perceiving my design, loudly ejaculated, ‘Tabu! Tabou!’

But the slight glimpse sufficed; my eyes fell upon the disordered members of a human skeleton, the bones still fresh with moisture, and with particles of flesh clinging to them here and there!

Kory-Kory, who had been a little in advance of me, attracted by the exclamations of the chiefs, turned round in time to witness the expression of horror on my countenance. He now hurried towards me, pointing at the same time to the ground. As the vessel had been placed in its present position since my last visit, I at once concluded that it must have some connection with the recent festival, and, prompted by a curiosity I could not repress, in passing it I raised one end of the cover; at the same moment the chiefs, perceiving my design, loudly ejaculated, ‘Tabou! Tabou!’

But the slight glimpse sufficed; my eyes fell upon the disordered members of a human skeleton, the bones still fresh with moisture, and with particles of flesh clinging to them here and there!

Kory-Kory, who had been a little in advance of me, attracted by the exclamations of the chiefs, turned round in time to witness the expression of horror on my countenance. He now hurried towards me, pointing at the same time to the canoe, and exclaiming rapidly, ‘Puarkee! puarkee!’ (Pig, pig). I pretended to yield to the deception, and repeated the words after him several times, as though acquiescing in what he said. The other savages, either deceived by my conduct or unwilling to manifest their displeasure at what could not now be remedied, took no further notice of the occurrence, and I immediately left the Ti.

All that night I lay awake, revolving in my mind the fearful situation in which I was placed. The last horrid revelation had now been made, and the full sense of my condition rushed upon my mind with a force I had never before experienced.

Where, thought I, desponding, is there the slightest prospect of escape? The only person who seemed to possess the ability to assist me was the stranger Marnoo; but would he ever return to the valley? and if he did, should I be permitted to hold any communication with him? It seemed as if I were cut off from every source of hope, and that nothing remained but passively to await whatever fate was in store for me. A thousand times I endeavoured to account for the mysterious conduct of the natives.

For what conceivable purpose did they thus retain me a captive? What could be their object in treating me with such apparent kindness, and did it not cover some treacherous scheme? Or, if they had no other design than to hold me a prisoner, how should I be able to pass away my days in this narrow valley, deprived of all intercourse with civilized beings, and for ever separated from friends and home?

One only hope remained to me. The French could not long defer a visit to the bay, and if they should permanently locate any of their troops in the valley, the savages could not bia terminado el inhumano festín, y sintiendo una especie de curiosidad morbos por observar si el Ti ofrecía alguna evidencia de lo que había tenido lugar en él, propuse a Kory-Kory pa-sarse hasta allí. A esta propuesta, él contestó señalando con el dedo el sol recién salido, y luego hacia el cénit, en lo alto, indicando que nuestra visita debía aplazarse hasta mediodía. Poco después de esa hora, por tanto, marchamos a los bosquecillos tabú, y en cuanto entramos en su recinto, miré temerosamente a mi alrededor buscando algún resto de las escenas que habían ocurrido allí tan recientemente: pero todo parecía como de costumbre. Al alcanzar el Ti, encontramos a Mehevi y a unos cuan-
tos jefes tumbados como siempre. No hicieron ninguna alusión a los recientes acontecimientos, y yo, por razones obvias, me contuve de aludir a ellos.

Después de quedarme un breve rato, me despedí. Al pasar por la galería, antes de bajar del pai-pai, observé una vasija de madera curiosamente tallada, de considerable tamaño, con una tapa encima, del mismo material y tamaño, y que parecía, por la forma, una ca-
noa pequeña. La rodeaba una baja baranda de bambúes, cuya parte superior se alzaba apenas a un pie del suelo. Como la vasija se había puesto en su lugar presente después de mi última visita, deduje en seguida que debía tener alguna relación con el reciente festival, y movido por una curiosidad que no pude reprimir, al pasar junto a ella levanté la tapa por un lado; en el mismo instante los jefes, tomando mi intención, exclamaron ruidosamente:

—Tabú, tabú!

Pero bastó el leve atisbo: ¡mis ojos cayeron en los desordenados miembros de un esqueleto humano, con los huesos aún frescos de hue-
medad, y con particulares de carne todavía pegadas a ellos acá y allá!

Kory-Kory, que había ido un poco delante de mí, atraído por las exclamaciones, se volvió a tiempo de observar la expresión de ho-
rror en mí rostro. Entonces se apresuró hacia mi, señalando al mis-
timo tiempo la canoa, y exclamó rápidamente.

—¡Puarki, puarki! (cerdo, cerdo).

Yo fingí caer en el engaño, y repetí las palabras después de él varias veces, como asintiendo a lo que decía. Los demás salvajes, bien fuera porque les engañó mi conducta o bien porque no querían manifestar su disgusto por [258] lo que ya no tenía remedio, no se fijaron más en el asunto, y yo me marché inmediatamente del Ti.

Toda la noche permaneci despierto, revolviendo en mi ánimo la terrible situación en que estaba colocado. La última revelación ho-
rrenda estaba hecha, y ya había perfeccionado mi situación inva-
dió la mente con una fuerza que no había sentido jamás.

¿Dónde —pensaba yo, desesperado— hay la más leve perspec-
tiva de escapatoria? La única persona que parecía ser capaz de ayudarme era Marnoo, el forastero; pero ¿podría volver jamás al va-
llé? Y si volvía, ¿se me permitiría tener comunicación con él? Pare-
cia como si estuviera separado de toda fuente de esperanza, y no me quedara más que aguardar pasivamente cualquier destino que me estuviera reservado. Mil veces intenté explicarme la misteriosa con-
ducta de los indígenas.

¿Con qué propósito imaginable me retenían cautivo? ¿Cuál po-
da ser su objetivo al tratarme con tal amabilidad aparente? ¿No ocultaba ello algún proyecto traidor? O, si no tenían más desig-nio que conservarme prisionero, ¿cómo sería yo capaz de pasar mis días en ese estrecho valle, privado de todo trato con seres civilizados, y separado para siempre de amigos y patria?

Sólo me quedaba una esperanza. Los franceses no podían tardar en visitar la bahía, y si colocaban permanentemente tropas en el valle, los salvajes no podían ocultarles mi existencia durante mu-

162
for any length of time conceal my existence from them. But what reason had I to suppose that I should be spared until such an event occurred, an event which might be postponed by a hundred different contingencies?

CHAPTER THIRTY-THREE

THE STRANGER AGAIN ARRIVES IN THE VALLEY—SINGULAR INTERVIEW WITH HIM—ATTEMPT TO ESCAPE—FAILURE—MELANCHOLY SITUATION—SYMPATHY OF MARNHEYO

‘MARNOO, Marnoo pemi!’ Such were the welcome sounds which fell upon my ear some ten days after the events related in the preceding chapter. Once more the approach of the stranger was heralded, and the intelligence operated upon me like magic. Again I should be able to converse with him in my own language; and I resolve at all hazards to concert with him some scheme, however desperate, to rescue me from a condition that had now become insupportable.

As he drew near, I remembered with many misgivings the inauspicious termination of our former interview, and when he entered the house, I watched with intense anxiety the reception he met with from its inmates. To my joy, his appearance was hailed with the liveliest pleasure; and accosting me kindly, he seated himself by my side, and entered into conversation with the natives around him. It soon appeared however, that on this occasion he had not any intelligence of importance to communicate. I inquired of him from whence he had just come? He replied from Pueearka, his native valley, and that he intended to return to it the same day.

At once it struck me that, could I but reach that valley under his protection, I might easily from thence reach Nukuheva by water; and animated by the prospect which this plan held, out I disclosed in it a few brief words to the stranger, and asked him how it could be best accomplished. My heart sunk within me, when in his broken English he answered me that it could never be effected. ‘Kanaka no let you go nowhere,’ he said; ‘you taboo. Why you no like to stay? Plenty moee-moee (sleep)—plenty ki-ki (eat)—plenty wahene (young girls)—Oh, very good place Typee! Suppose you take this lake way, why you come? You no hear about Typee? All white men afraid Typee, so no white men come.’

These words distressed me beyond belief; and when I had again related to him the circumstances under which I had descended into the valley, and sought to enlist his sympathies in my behalf by appealing to the bodily misery I had endured, he listened with impatience, and cut me short by exclaiming passionately, ‘Me no hear you talk any more; by by Kanaka get mad, kill you and me too. No you see he no want you to speak at all?—you see—ah! by you no mind—you get well, he kill you, eat you, hang you head up there, like Happr Kanaka.—Now you listen—but no talk any more. By by I go;—you see way I go—Ah! then some night Kanaka all moom-eoee (sleep)—you run away now, you come Pueearka. I speak Pueearka Kanaka—he no harm you—ah! then I take you my canoe Nukuheva—and you run away ship no more.’ With these words, enforced by a vehemence of gesture I cannot describe, Marnoo started from my side, and immediately engaged in conversation with some of the chiefs who had entered the house.

It would have been idle for me to have attempted resuming the interview so peremptorily terminated by Marnoo, who was evidently little disposed to compromise his own safety by any rash endeavour to ensure mine. But the plan he had suggested struck me...
as one which might possibly be accomplished, and I resolved to act upon it as speedily as possible.

Accordingly, when he arose to depart, I accompanied him with the natives outside of the house, with a view of carefully not ing the path he would take in leaving the valley. Just before leaping from the pi-pi he clasped my hand, and looking significantly at me, exclaimed, ‘Now you see—you do what I tell you—ah! then you do good;—you no do so—ah! then you die.’ The next moment he waved his spear to the islanders, and following the route that conducted to a defile in the mountains lying opposite the Happar side, was soon out of sight.

A mode of escape was now presented to me, but how was I to avail myself of it? I was continually surrounded by the savages; I could not stir from one house to another without being attended by some of them; and even during the hours devoted to slumber, the slightest movement which I made seemed to attract the notice of those who shared the mats with me. In spite of these obstacles, however, I determined forthwith to make the attempt. To do so with any prospect of success, it was necessary that I should have at least two hours start before the islanders should discover my absence; for with such facility was any alarm spread through the valley, and so familiar, of course, were the inhabitants with the intricacies of the groves, that I could not hope, lame and feeble as I was, and ignorant of the route, to secure my escape unless I had this advantage. It was also by night alone that I could hope to accomplish my object, and then only by adopting the utmost precaution.

The entrance to Marheyo’s habitation was through a low narrow opening in its wicker-work front. This passage, for no conceivable reason that I could devise, was always closed after the household had retired to rest, by drawing a heavy slide across it, composed of a dozen or more bits of wood, ingeniously fastened together by seizings of sinnate. When any of the inmates chose to go outside, the noise occasioned by the removing of this rude door awakened every body else; and on more than one occasion I had remarked that the islanders were nearly as irritable as more civilized beings under similar circumstances.

The difficulty thus placed in my way I determined to obviate in the following manner. I would get up boldly in the course of the night, and drawing the slide, issue from the house, and pretend that my object was merely to procure a drink from the calabash, which always stood without the dwelling on the corner of the pi-pi. On re-entering I would purposely omit closing the passage to prevent them from repairing my neglect, would return to my mat, and waiting patiently until all were again asleep, I would then steal forth, and at once take the route to Pueearka.

The very night which followed Marnoo’s departure, I proceeded to put this project into execution. About midnight, as I imagined, I arose and drew the slide. The natives, just as I had expected, started up, while some of them asked, ‘Arware poo awa, Tommo?’ (where are you going, Tommo?) ‘Wai’ (water) I laconically answered, grasping the calabash. On hearing my reply they sank back again, and in a minute or two I returned to my mat, anxiously awaiting the result of the experiment.

One after another the savages, turning restlessly, appeared to resume their slumber, and rejoicing at the stillness which prevailed, I was about to rise again from my couch, when sionó como el único que era posible cumplir, y decidi ponerlo en práctica tan pronto como pudiera.

Por tanto, cuando se levantó para marchar, le acompañé con los indígenas fuera de la casa, con intención de observar cuidadosamente el camino que tomara al salir del valle. Antes mismo de bajar de un salto del pai-pai, me estreché la mano, y mirándome significativamente exclamó: —¡Ahora ver tú!... tú hacer lo que digo yo... ¡ah! Entonces hacer bien... Si no hacer así... ¡ah!, entonces tú morir. [261]

Un momento después agitó la lanza despidiéndose de los isleños, y siguiendo el camino que llevaba a un desfiladero en las montañas enfrente del lado happar, pronto se perdió de vista.

Ahora se me presentaba un modo de escapar, pero ¿cómo iba a aprovecharlo? Continuamente me rodeaban los salvajes: no podía moverme de una casa a otra sin ser acompañado por unos cuantos de ellos, e incluso durante las horas dedicadas al sueño el más leve movimiento que hacia parecía llamar la atención de los que compartían las esteras conmigo. No obstante, a pesar de esos obstáculos, decidí en seguida hacer el intento. Para hacerlo con alguna perspectiva de éxito, era necesario que les sacara por lo menos dos horas de ventaja antes que los isleños descubri- ran mi ausencia, pues con tal facilidad se extendía cualquier alarma por el valle, ‘y tal familiaridad, por supuesto, tenían los habitan- tes con las complicaciones de los bosquecillos, que yo, in- válido y débil como estaba, y no conociendo la ruta, no podí- tener esperanza de lograr mi escacipatoria si no tenía dicha ven- taja. Por tanto, sólo de noche era cuando podía tener esperanzas de cumplir mi objetivo, y aun entonces, sólo adoptando la may- or precaución.

The night same después de la partida de Marnu, me dispuse a realizar ese proyecto. Hacia la medianoche, como había pensado, me levanté y aparté la corredera. Los indígenas, como había esperado, se sobresaltaron y algunos de ellos preguntaron: —¿Arrare pu aua, Totumo? (¿Dónde vas, Totumo?) —Uai (agua) —contestó yo, lacónicamente, echando mano a la cala- baza. Al oír mi respuesta volvieron a recostarse, y unos momentos después volvía mi estera, esperando ansiosamente el resultado del experimento.

Uno tras otro, los salvajes, dando vueltas inquietas, parecieron continuar su sopor, y yo, alegrándome del silencio domi- nante, iba a levantar me de nuevo de mi yacita cuando oí un leve
I heard a slight rustling—a dark form was intercepted between me and the doorway—the slide was drawn across it, and the individual, whoever he was, returned to his mat. This was a sad blow to me; but as it might have aroused the suspicions of the islanders to have made another attempt that night, I was reluctantly obliged to defer it until the next. Several times after I repeated the same manoeuvre, but with as little success as before. As my pretence for withdrawing from the house was to allay my thirst, Kory-Kory either suspecting some design on my part, or because he had a wish to see me and the doorway—the slide was drawn across it, and the individual, whoever he was, returned to his mat. This was a sad blow to me; but as it might have aroused the suspicions of the islanders to have made another attempt that night, I was reluctantly obliged to defer it until the next. Several times after I repeated the same manoeuvre, but with as little success as before. As my pretence for withdrawing from the house was to allay my thirst, Kory-Kory either suspecting some design on my part, or because he had a wish to see me and the doorway—the slide was drawn across it, and the individual, whoever he was, returned to his mat.

Even, under these auspicious circumstances I again and again renewed the attempt, but when I did so, my valet always rose with me, as if determined I should not remove myself from his observation. For the present, therefore, I was obliged to abandon the attempt; but I endeavoured to console myself with the idea that by this mode I might yet effect my escape.

Shortly after Marnoo’s visit I was reduced to such a state that it was with extreme difficulty I could walk, even with the assistance of a spear, and Kory-Kory, as formerly, was obliged to carry me daily to the stream.

For hours and hours during the warmest part of the day I lay upon my mat, and while those around me were nearly all dozing away in careless ease, I remained awake, gloomily pondering over the fate which it appeared now idle for me to resist, when I thought of the loved friends who were thousands and thousands of miles from the savage island in which I was held a captive, when I reflected that my dreadful fate would for ever be concealed from them, and that with hope deferred they might continue to await my return long after my inanimate form had blended with the dust of the valley—I could not repress a shudder of anguish.

How vividly is impressed upon my mind every minute feature of the scene which met my view during those long days of suffering and sorrow. At my request my mats were always spread directly facing the door, opposite which, and at a little distance, was the hut of boughs that Marheyo was building.

Whenever my gentle Fayaway and Kory-Kory, laying themselves down beside me, would leave me awhile to uninterrupted repose, I took a strange interest in the slightest movements of the eccentric old warrior. All alone during the stillness of the tropical mid-day, he would pursue his quiet work, sitting in the shade and weaving together the leaflets of his cocoanut branches, or rolling upon his knee the twisted fibres of bark to form the cords with which he tied together the thatching of his tiny house. Frequently suspending his employment, and noticing my melancholy eye fixed upon him, he would raise his hand with a gesture expressive of deep commiseration, and then moving towards me slowly, would enter on tip-toes, fearful of disturbing the slumbering natives, and, taking the fan from my hand, would sit before me, swaying it gently to and fro, and gazing earnestly into my face.

Just beyond the pi-pi, and disposed in a triangle before the entrance of the house, were three magnificent bread-fruit trees. At this moment I can recall to my mind their slender shafts, and the graceful inequalities of their bark, on which my eye was accustomed to dwell day after day in the midst of my solitary musings. It is strange how inanimate objects will twine themselves into our affections, especially in the hour of affliction. Even now, amidst all the bustle and stir of the proud and busy city in which I am dwelling, the image of those three trees seems to come as vividly before my eyes as if they were actually present, and I still feel the soothing quiet pleasure which I then had in watching hour after hour their topmost boughs waving gracefully in the breeze.
CHAPTER THIRTY-FOUR

THE ESCAPE

NEARLY three weeks had elapsed since the second visit of Marnoo, and it must have been more than four months since I entered the valley, when one day about noon, and whilst everything was in profound silence, Mow-Mow, the one-eyed chief, suddenly appeared at the door, and leaning towards me as I lay directly facing him, said in a low tone, 'Toby pemi ena' (Toby has arrived here). Gracious heaven! What a tumult of emotions rushed upon me at this startling intelligence! Insensible to the pain that had before distracted me, I leaped to my feet, and called wildly to Kory-Kory who was reposing by my side. The startled islanders sprang from their mats; the news was quickly communicated to them; and the next moment I was making my way to the Ti on the back of Kory-Kory; and surrounded by the excited savages.

All that I could comprehend of the particulars which Mow-Mow rehearsed to his audience as we proceeded, was that my long-lost companion had arrived in a boat which had just entered the bay. These tidings made me most anxious to be carried at once to the sea, lest some circumstance should prevent our meeting; but to this, and called upon me, I leaped to my feet, and called wildly to Kory-Kory, and nos llamaron ruidosamente para que.

Almost frenzied at being held in this state of suspense, I passionately besought Mehevi to permit me to proceed. Whether my companion had arrived or not, I felt a presentiment that my own fate was about to be decided. Again and again I renewed my petition to Mehevi. He regarded me with a fixed and serious eye, and in doubt with regard to the fact of his arrival, at every fresh report that was brought from the shore they betrayed the liveliest emotions.

Accompanied by some fifty of the natives, I now rapidly continued my journey; every few moments being transferred from the back of one to another, and urging my bearer forward all the while with earnest entreaties. As I thus hurried forward, no doubt as to the truth of the information I had received ever crossed my mind.

I was alive only to the one overwhelming idea, that a chance of deliverance was now afforded me, if the jealous opposition of the savages could be overcome.

Having been prohibited from approaching the sea during the whole of my stay in the valley, I had always associated with it the idea of escape. Toby too—if indeed he had ever voluntarily

CAPÍTULO XXXV

LA EVASIÓN

Casi tres semanas habían pasado desde la segunda visita de Marnoo, y debía haber más de cuatro meses desde que llegué al valle cuando una vez, hacia mediodía, mientras todo estaba en profundo silencio, Mau-Mau, el jefe tuerto, apareció de repente en la puerta, e inclinándose hacia mí, que estaba enfrente de él, dijo en voz baja: —Toby pemi ena (Toby llegó aquí).

¡Válgame Dios! ¡Qué tumulto de emociones me invadió ante esa noticia tan agitadora! Insensible al dolor que antes me había trastornado, me puse en pie de un brinco, y llamé locamente a Kory-Kory, que reposaba a mi lado. Los agitados isleños saltaron de sus esteras; las noticias les fueron comunicadas rápidamente, y un momento después iba yo de camino hacia el Ti a espaldas de Kory-Kory y rodeado por los excitados salvajes.

Todo lo que pude comprender de los detalles que Mau-Mau repetía a sus oyentes mientras avanzábamos, fue que mi compañero, tanto tiempo perdido, había llegado en una lancha que acababa de entrar en la bahía. Esas noticias me hicieron sentir gran afán de ser llevado cuanto antes al mar, no fuera que alguna circunstancia inoportuna nos impidiera reunirnos, pero ellos no quisieron [265] consentir, y continuaron su camino hacia la residencia real. Al acercarnos a ella, Mehevi y varios jefes se mostraron desde el mirador, y nos llamaron ruidosamente para que nos acercáramos.

Una vez que nos acercamos, traté de hacerles comprender que yo iba a bajar al mar para encontrarme con Toby. El rey objeteó a esto, e hizo una señal a Kory-Kory para que me metiera en la casa. Fué vano resistir, y pocos momentos después me encontré en el Ti, rodeado por un ruidoso grupo dedicado a comentar la reciente noticia. Se repetía frecuentemente el nombre de Toby, unido a violentas exclamaciones de asombro. Parecía como si todavía estuvieran dudosos respecto al hecho de su llegada, y a cada nueva información procedente de la orilla mostraban las más vivas emociones.

Acompañado por unos cincuenta indígenas, continué entonces rápidamente mi viaje, trasladándome cada poco momentos de la espalda de uno a la de otro, y apremiando todo el tiempo a mi porteador a avanzar con afanosos ruegos. Apresurándome así hacia adelante, no me pasó jamás por la mente ninguna duda sobre la verdad de la información que había recibido.

Sólo era sensible a la única idea abrumadora de que ahora se me ofrecía una ocasión de quedar libre, si se podía superar la celosa oposición de los salvajes.

Como se me había prohibido acercarme al mar durante toda mi estancia en el valle, siempre lo había asociado a la idea de escapatoria. También Toby —si es que, efectivamente, me había abandonado

166
had brought my companion. Every time therefore that we gained
he had never felt before. It was evident that a boat had entered the
deserted me—must have effected this flight by the sea; and now
be so important, I motioned to a muscular fellow near me to
sooner stopping my head to avoid the branches which crossed
and never ceasing to implore those who carried me to
accelerate their already swift pace.

In this manner we had proceeded about four or five miles, when we were met by a party of some twenty islanders, between whom and those who accompanied me ensued an animated confer-
ence. Impatient of the delay occasioned by this interruption, I was
beseeching the man who carried me to proceed without his loitering
companions, when Kory-Kory, running to my side, informed me,
in three fatal words, that the news had all proved, false—that Toby
had not arrived—"Toby owlee pem!" Heaven only knows how, in the
state of mind and body I then was, I ever sustained the agony
which this intelligence caused me; not that the news was altogether
unexpected; but I had trusted that the fact might not have been made
known until we should have arrived upon the beach. As it was, I at
once foresew the course the savages would pursue. They had only
yielded thus far to my entreaties, that I might give a joyful welcome
to my long-lost comrade; but now that it was known he had not
arrived they would at once oblige me to turn back.

My anticipations were but too correct. In spite of the resis-
tance I made, they carried me into a house which was near the spot, and
left me upon the mats. Shortly afterwards several of those who had
accompanied me from the Ti, detaching themselves from the others,
proceeded in the direction of the sea. Those who remained—among
whom were Marheyo, Mow-Mow, Kory-Kory, and Tinor—gathered
about the dwelling, and appeared to be awaiting their return.

This convinced me that strangers—perhaps some of my
own countrymen—had for some cause or other entered the bay.
Distracted at the idea of their vicinity, and reckless of the pain
which I suffered, I heeded not the assurances of the islanders, that
there were no boats at the beach, but starting to my feet endeav-
oured to gain the door. Instantly the passage was blocked up by
several men, who commanded me to resume my seat. The fierce
looks of the irritated savages admonished me that I could gain
nothing by force, and that it was by entreaty alone that I could
hope to compass my object.

Nothing by force, and that it was by entreaty alone that I could
hope to compass my object.

My anticipations were but too correct. In spite of the resis-
tance I made, they carried me into a house which was near the spot, and
left me upon the mats. Shortly afterwards several of those who had
accompanied me from the Ti, detaching themselves from the others,
proceeded in the direction of the sea. Those who remained—among
whom were Marheyo, Mow-Mow, Kory-Kory, and Tinor—gathered
about the dwelling, and appeared to be awaiting their return.

This convinced me that strangers—perhaps some of my
own countrymen—had for some cause or other entered the bay.
Distracted at the idea of their vicinity, and reckless of the pain
which I suffered, I heeded not the assurances of the islanders, that
there were no boats at the beach, but starting to my feet endeav-
oured to gain the door. Instantly the passage was blocked up by
several men, who commanded me to resume my seat. The fierce
looks of the irritated savages admonished me that I could gain
nothing by force, and that it was by entreaty alone that I could
hope to compass my object.

Guided by this consideration, I turned to Mow-Mow, the
only chief present whom I had been much in the habit of seeing,
and carefully concealing, my real design, tried to make him com-
prehend that I still believed Toby to have arrived on the shore, and
besought him to allow me to go forward to welcome him.

To all his repeated assertions, that my companion had not
been seen, I pretended to turn a deaf ear, while I urged my solicita-
tions with an eloquence of gesture which the one-eyed chief ap-
peared unable to resist. He seemed indeed to regard me as a forward
child, to whose wishes he had not the heart to oppose force, and
whom he must consequently humour. He spoke a few words to the
natives, who at once retreated from the door, and I immediately
passed out of the house.

Here I looked earnestly round for Kory-Kory; but that
hitherto faithful servant was nowhere to be seen. Unwilling
to linger even for a single instant when every moment might be so important, I motioned to a muscular fellow near me to
de modo voluntario— debía haber efectuado su huida por mar; y
ahora que me acercaba a él, me entregaba a esperanzas que jamás
había sentido. Era evidente que una lancha había entrado en la ba-
hía, y veía pocas razones para dudar del informe de que traía a mi
compañero. Por consiguiente, cada vez que ganábamos una eleva-
ción, miraba a mi alrededor con ansia, esperando descubrirle. En
medio de una tritornidad excitada, que por sus gestos violentos y sus
gritos salvajes parecía estar bajo el efecto de una excitación tan in-
tensa como la mía, fui llevado entonces a un rápido trote, agachan-
do a menudo la cabeza para evitar [266] las ramas que cruzaban el
camino y sin dejar de implorar a los que me transportaban que ace-
eraran su ya rápido paso.

De este modo habíamos avanzado unas cuatros o cinco millas, cuando
nos salió al encuentro un grupo de veinte isleños, entre los cuales y los que
me acompañaban tuvo lugar una animada conversación. Impaciente por la
tardanza que ocasionaba esa interrupción, rogaría al hombre que me lleva-
ba que siguiera adelante sin sus compañeros retrasados, cuando Kory-Kory
vino corriendo hasta mí y me informó, en tres palabras fatales, de que las
noticias habían resultado falsas: que Toby no había llegado:
—Toby cali permis.

En el estado de ánimo y de cuerpo que entonces estaba, sólo Dios sabe
hasta podría soportar la angustia que me causó esta noticia: y no es que las
noticias fueran del todo inesperadas, pero yo había confiado en que el he-
cho no se hubiera dado a conocer hasta que estuviéramos en la playa. Sien-
do así, inmediatamente prevé qué decisión tomarían los salvajes. Si habían
accedido a mis ruegos hasta aquel punto, era sólo para que diera una alegre
bienvenida a mi camarada, tanto tiempo ausente, pero ahora que sabía que
no había llegado, al momento me obligarían a volver atrás.

Mis expectativas resultaron demasiado acertadas. A pesar de la
resistencia que hice, me llevaron a una casa que estaba junto a aquel
punto, y me dejaron en las esteras. Poco después, varios de los que
me habían acompañado desde el Ti, separándose de los demás con-
tinuaron en dirección al mar. Los que se quedaron, entre los cuales
estaban Marheyo, Mau-Mau, Kory-Kory y Tinor, se reunieron en
lorno a la vivienda, como si esperaran su regreso.

Eso me convenció de que los extranjeros— quizá compatrio-
tas míos— habían entrado en la bahía por alguna razón. Agitado
ante la idea de su proximidad, y sin cuidarme del dolor que su-
fría, no presté atención a las seguridades de los isleños de que
no había lanchas en la bahía, sino que, poniéndome de pie, in-
tenté alcanzar la puerta. Al momento el paso quedó cerrado por
varios hombres, que me mandaron volver a ocupar mi sitio. Las
fieras miradas de los irritados salvajes me advirtieron que no
conseguida nada por la fuerza, y que sólo por ruegos podría tener
esperanza de lograr mi objetivo.

Guiado por esta consideración, me dirigí a Mau-Mau, el único
jefe presente a quien tenía costumbre de ver, y ocultando cuidado-
samente mi verdadero designio, traté de hacerle entender que aún
creía que Toby había llegado a la orilla, y le rogé que me permitie-
ra seguir adelante para darle la bienvenida.

A [267] todas sus repetidas afirmaciones de que mi compañero
no había sido visto, fingí hacerme el sordo, a la vez que apremiaba
mis solicitudes con una eloquencia de gestos que el jefe tuerto pare-
ció incapaz de resistir. Incluso pareció considerarme como un niño
atrevido, a cuyos deseos no tenía ánimo de oponerse por la fuerza, y
a quien, por tanto, debía seguirle el humor. Di dijo unas pocas pal-
bras a los indígenas, que al momento se apartaron de la puerta, e
inmediatamente salió fuera de la casa.

Entonces me volví ansiosamente a mirar dónde estaba Kory-Kory,
pero aquel servidor hasta entonces fiel no se veía por ninguna parte.
No queriendo entretenerme un sólo instante cuando cada momento
podía ser tan importante, hice una señal, a un tipo musculoso que
take me upon his back; to my surprise he angrily refused. I turned to another, but with a like result. A third attempt was as unsuccessful, and I immediately perceived what had induced Mow-Mow to grant my request, and why the other natives conducted themselves in so strange a manner. It was evident that the chief had only given me liberty to continue my progress towards the sea, because he supposed that I was deprived of the means of reaching it.

Convinced by this of their determination to retain me a captive, I became desperate; and almost insensible to the pain which I suffered, I seized a spear which was leaning against the projecting eaves of the house, and supporting myself with it, resumed the path that swept by the dwelling. To my surprise, I was suffered to proceed alone; all the natives remaining in front of the house, and engaging in earnest conversation, which every moment became more loud and vehement; and to my unspeakable delight, I perceived that some difference of opinion had arisen between them; that two parties, in short, were formed, and consequently that in their divided counsels there was some chance of my deliverance.

Before I had proceeded a hundred yards I was again surrounded by the savages, who were still in all the heat of argument, and appeared every moment as if they would come to blows. In the midst of this tumult old Marheyo came to my side, and I shall never forget the benevolent expression of his countenance. He placed his arm upon my shoulder, and emphatically pronounced the only two English words I had taught him ‘Home’ and ‘Mother’. I at once understood what he meant, and eagerly expressed my thanks to him. Fayaway and Kory-Kory were by his side, both weeping violently; and it was not until the old man had twice repeated the command that his son could bring himself to obey him, and take me again upon his back. The one-eyed chief opposed his doing so, but he was overruled, and, as it seemed to me, by some of his own party.

We proceeded onwards, and never shall I forget the ecstasy I felt when I first heard the roar of the surf breaking upon the beach. Before long I saw the flashing billows themselves through the opening between the trees. Oh glorious sight and sound of ocean! I almost fancied I could distinguish the voices of my own countrymen.

When we reached the open space which lay between the groves and the sea, the first object that met my view was an English whale-boat, lying with her bow pointed from the shore, and only a few fathoms distant from it. It was manned by five islanders, dressed in shirt tunics of calico. My first impression was that they were in the very act of pulling out from the bay; and that, after all my exertions, I had come too late. My soul sunk within me: but a second glance convinced me that the boat was only hanging off to keep out of the surf; and the next moment I heard my own name shouted out by a voice from the midst of the crowd.

Looking in the direction of the sound, I perceived, to my indescribable joy, the tall figure of Karakoee, an Oahu Kannaka, who had often been aboard the ‘Dolly’, while she lay in Nukuheva.

He wore the green shooting-jacket with gilt buttons, which had been given to him by an officer of the Reine Blanche—the French flag-ship—and in which I had always seen him dressed. I now remembered the Kannaka had frequently told me that his person was close to his, of which I had no idea; but he had said that he was going to sail as soon as he could. I was quite at a loss what to do. I felt that I was in a desperate situation; and, in the midst of all the confusion, I called out to him, and entreated him to come to me.

Llevaba la cazadora verde con botones dorados que le había dado un oficial del Reine Blanche —el buque insignia francés—, y con la cual le había visto vestido siempre. Recordé entonces que ese kannaka me había dicho frecuentemente que su persona era tabú en...
was tabooed in all the valleys of the island, and the sight of him at such a moment as this filled my heart with a tumult of delight.

Karakoee stood near the edge of the water with a large roll of cotton-cloth thrown over one arm, and holding two or three canvas bags of powder, while with the other hand he grasped a musket, which he appeared to be offering to several of the chiefs around him. But they turned with disgust from his offers and seemed to be impatient at his presence, with vehement gestures waving him off to his boat, and commanding him to depart.

The Kanaka, however, still maintained his ground, and at once perceived that he was seeking to purchase my freedom. Animated by the idea, I called upon him loudly to come to me; but he replied, in broken English, that the islanders had threatened to pierce him with their spears, if he stirred a foot towards me. At this time I was still advancing, surrounded by a dense throng of the natives, several of whom had their hands upon me, and more than one javelin was threateningly pointed at me. Still I perceived clearly that many of those least friendly towards me looked irresolute and anxious. I was still some thirty yards from Karakoee when my farther progress was prevented by the natives, who compelled me to sit down upon the ground, while they still retained their hold upon my arms. The din and tumult now became tenfold, and I perceived that several of the priests were on the spot, all of whom were evidently urging Mow-Mow and the other chiefs to prevent my departure; and the detestable word ‘Roo-ne! Roo-ne!’ which I had heard repeated a thousand times during the day, was now shouted out on every side of me. Still I saw that the Kanaka continued his exertions in my favour—that he was boldly debating the matter with the savages, and was striving to entice them by displaying his cloth and powder, and snapping the lock of his musket. But all he said or did appeared only to augment the clamours of those around him, who seemed bent upon driving him into the sea.

When I remembered the extravagant value placed by these people upon the articles which were offered to them in exchange for me, and which were so indignantly rejected, I saw a new proof of the same fixed determination of purpose they had all along manifested with regard to me, and in despair, and reckless of consequences, I exerted all my strength, and shaking myself free from the grasp of those who held me, I sprang upon my feet and rushed towards Karakoee.

The rash attempt nearly decided my fate; for, fearful that I might slip from them, several of the islanders now raised a simultaneous shout, and pressing upon Karakoee, they menaced him with furious gestures, and actually forced him into the sea. Appalled at their violence, the poor fellow, standing nearly to the waist in the surf, endeavoured to pacify them; but at length fearful that they would do him some fatal violence, he beckoned to his comrades to pull in at once, and take him in the boat.

It was at this agonizing moment, when I thought all hope was ended, that a new contest arose between the two parties who had accompanied me to the shore; blows were struck, wounds were given, and blood flowed. In the interest excited by the fray, every one had left me except Marheyo, Kory-Kory and poor dear Fayaway, who clung to me, sobbing indignantly. I saw that now or never was the moment. Clasping my hands together, I looked imploringly at Marheyo, and move towards the now almost deserted beach. The tears were in the old man’s eyes, but neither he nor Kory-Kory at

cuando recordé el inmenso valor que esa gente daba a esos objetos que les ofrecían a cambio de mí, y que tan indignamente rechazaban, vi una nueva prueba de la misma determinación fija de propósito que habían manifestado siempre respecto a mí y con desesperación y sin atender a las consecuencias, reuni todas mis fuerzas, y, libertándome con una sacudida de las manos de los que me sujetaban, me puse de pie de un salto y me precipité hacia Karakoi.

Este temerario intento casi sentenció mi suerte, pues temiendo que me escapara de ellos, varios isleños gritaron a la vez, y agolpándose contra Karakoi, le amenazaron con gestos furiosos, y le obligaron efectivamente a meterse en el mar. Horrorizado de su violencia, el pobre muchacho, sumergido casi hasta la cintura en la rompiente trató de pacificarles, pero al fin, temiendo que le hicieran alguna violencia fatal, mandó a sus compañeros que se acercaran remando al momento y le metieran en la lancha.

En ese angustioso momento, cuando creí que se habían acabado todas las esperanzas, surgió una nueva disputa entre los dos partidos que me habían acompañado hasta la orilla. Se dieron golpes, se hicieron heridas y corrió la sangre. En el interés producido por la refriega, me dejaron todos, menos Marheyo, Kory-Kory y la pobre de mi querida Fayaway, que se abrazaba a mi sollozando indignada. Entonces vi que debía ser en ese momento o nunca. Apretando las manos, miré implorantemente a Marheyo, y avanzé hacia la playa, entonces casi abandonada. El viejo tenía lágrimas en los ojos, pero
Despite its roughness, with fearful rapidity. Again, and the crowd of swimmers shot through the water with fearful rapidity. Our natives pulled till their oars bent. Still the chances seemed in our favor, but when we came within a hundred yards of the point, the active Islanders already surging through the water. They were spread right across our course. Nuestros remeros se precipitaron al mar y nos lanzaron sus jabelinas. Algunas damas nos pasaron más cerca de lo deseable, pero nadie resultó herido, y aunque pronto estuvimos fuera del alcance de las jabelinas, nuestro avance era muy lento: soblaba fuerte el viento hacia la orilla, y teníamos la marea en contra. Vi a Karakoi, que gobernaba la lancha, lanzar muchas miradas contra una punta saliente de la bahía que teníamos que doblar.

Although it was dear that my movements had been noticed by several of the natives, still they had not suspended the conflict in which they were engaged, and it was not until the boat was above fifty yards from the shore that Mow-Mow and some six or seven other warriors rushed into the sea and hurled their javelins at us. Some of the warriors passed quite as close to us as was desirable, but no one was wounded, and the men pulled away gallantly. But although soon out of the reach of the spears, our progress was extremely slow; it blew strong upon the shore, and the tide was against us; and I saw Karakooie, who was steering the boat, give many a look towards a jutting point of the bay round which we had to pass.

For a minute or two after our departure, the savages, who had formed into different groups, remained perfectly motionless and silent. All at once the enraged chief showed by his gestures that he had resolved what course he would take. Shouting loudly to his companions, and pointing with his tomahawk towards the headland, he set off at full speed in that direction, and was followed by about thirty of the natives, among whom were several of the priests, all yelling out 'Roo-ne! Roo-ne!' at the very top of their voices. Their intention was evidently to swim off from the headland and intercept us in our course. The wind was freshening every minute, and was right in our teeth, and it was one of those chopping angry seas in which it is so difficult to row. Still the chances seemed in our favor, but when we came within a hundred yards of the point, the active savages were already dashing into the water, and we all feared that within five minutes' time we should have a score of the infuriated wretches around us. If so our doom was sealed, for these savages, unlike the feeble swimmer of civilized countries, are, if anything, more formidable antagonists in the water than when on the land. It was all a trial of strength; our natives pulled till their oars bent again, and the crowd of swimmers shot through the water despite its roughness, with fearful rapidity.

By the time we had reached the headland, the savages were spread right across our course. Our rowers got out their knives and held them ready between their teeth, and I seized the boat-hook. We were all aware that if they succeeded in intercepting us they would practise upon us the manœuvre which has proved so fatal to many a boat's crew in these seas. They would grapple the oars, and seizing hold of the gunwhale, capsize the boat, and then we should be entirely at their mercy.

After a few breathless moments discerned Mow-Mow. The athletic Islander, with his tomahawk between his teeth, was dashing the water before him till it foamed again. He was the nearest to ni el Kory-Kory intentaron sujetarme, y pronto alcanzé al kannaka, que había observado ansiosamente mis movimientos; los remeros se acercaron todo lo que se atrevieron al borde de la rompiente: di un abrazo de despedida a Fayaway, que parecía sin habla de tanta pena, y un momento después me encontré a salvo en la lancha, teniendo a mi lado a Karakoi, que dijo a los remeros que se alejaran en seguida. Marheyo y Kory-Kory y muchas de las mujeres me siguieron al agua, y yo decidí, como única señal de gratitud que podía mostrar, darles los objetos que se habían traído para rescatarme. Alargué el mosquete a Kory-Kory, con un rápido gesto equivalente a un contrato de donación, lancé el rollo de algodón al viejo Marheyo, señalando, al hacerlo así, a la pobre Fayaway, que se había retirado del borde del agua y se había sentado desconsolada en los guijos, y lancé las bol-sas de pólvara a las jóvenes más próximas, que estuvieron muy con-tentas de recibirlas. El reparto no duró diez segundos, y antes de que terminara la lancha estaba en plena marcha, mientras que el kannaka gritaba ruidosamente todo el tiempo contra lo que consideraba un desperdicio inútil de una propiedad valiosa.
us, and in another instant he would have seized one of the oars. Even at the moment I felt horror at the act I was about to commit; but it was no time for pity or compunction, and with a true aim, and exerting all my strength, I dashed the boat-hook at him. It struck him just below the throat, and forced him downwards. I had no time to repeat the blow, but I saw him rise to the surface in the wake of the boat, and never shall I forget the ferocious expression of his countenance.

Only one other of the savages reached the boat. He seized the gunwale, but the knives of our rowers so mauled his wrists, that he was forced to quit his hold, and the next minute we were past them all, and in safety. The strong excitement which had thus far kept me up, now left me, and I fell back fainting into the arms of Karakoee.

The circumstances connected with my most unexpected escape may be very briefly stated. The captain of an Australian vessel, being in distress for men in these remote seas, had put into Nukuheva in order to recruit his ship’s company; but not a single man was to be obtained; and the barque was about to get under weigh, when she was boarded by Karakoee, who informed the disappointed Englishman that an American sailor was detained by the savages in the neighbouring bay of Typee; and he offered, if supplied with suitable articles of traffic, to undertaken his release. The Kanaka had gained his intelligence from Marnoo, to whom, after all, I was indebted for my escape. The proposition was acceded to; and Karakoee, taking with him five tabooed natives of Nukuheva, again repaired aboard the barque, in which in a few hours sailed to that part of the island, and threw her main-top-sail aback right off the entrance to the Typee bay. The whale-boat, manned by the tabooed crew, pulled towards the head of the inlet, while the ship lay ‘off and on’ awaiting its return.

The events which ensued have already been detailed, and little more remains to be related. On reaching the ‘Julia’ I was lifted over the side, and my strange appearance and remarkable adventure occasioned the liveliest interest. Every attention was bestowed upon me that humanity could suggest. But to such a state was I reduced, that three months elapsed before I recovered my health.

The mystery which hung over the fate of my friend and companion Toby has never been cleared up. I still remain ignorant whether he succeeded in leaving the valley, or perished at the hands of the islanders.

APPENDIX

The author of this volume arrived at Tahiti the very day that the iniquitous designs of the French were consummated by inducing the subordinate chiefs, during the absence of their queen, to ratify an artfully drawn treaty, by which she was virtually deposed. Both menaces and caresses were employed on this occasion, and the 3 z-pounders which peeped out of the portholes deposed. Both menaces and caresses were employed on this occasion, and the 3 z-pounders which peeped out of the portholes of the frigate were the principal arguments adduced to quiet the scruples of the more conscientious islanders.

And yet this piratical seizure of Tahiti, with all the woe and desolation which resulted from it, created not half so great a sensation, at least in America, as was caused by the proceedings of the English at the Sandwich Islands. No transaction has ever been more grossly misrepresented than the events which occurred upon the arrival of Lord George Paulet at Oahu. During a residence of four months at Honolulu, the metropolis of the group, the author a nosotros, y un momento más tarde sujetaría uno de los remos. Aun en ese instante, sentí horror del acto que iba a cometer, pero no había tiempo para la lástima ni la compunción; apuntando bien, y aplicando todas mis fuerzas, le golpeé con el bicheiro. Le dio debajo mismo de la garganta, y le hice hundirse. No tuve ocasión de repetir el golpe, pero le vi subir a la superficie en la estela de la lancha, y jamás olvidaré la expresión feroz de su rostro.

Las circunstancias en relación con mi escatatorial inesperada pueden anotarse brevemente. El capitán de un barco australiano, teniendo falta de marineros en esos mares remotos, había entrado en Nukuheva para reclutar su tripulación, pero no se obtuvo ni un solo hombre, y la nave estaba a punto de levantar anclas, cuando llegó a bordo Karakoii, quien informó al decepcionado inglés de que había un marinero americano preso de los salvajes en la cercana bahía de Taipi; y se ofreció a intentar su liberación, si se le proveía de artículos convenientes para traficar. El kannaka había obtenido esa noticia de Marno, a quien, después de todo, debía yo mi escatatoria. Se accedió a su propuesta, y Karakoii, llevando consigo cinco indígenas [272] tabú de Nukuheva, volvió a montar en la nave, que pocas horas después zarpó hacia esa parte de la isla y puso en facha su vela de gavia a la entrada misma de la bahía de Taipi. La ballenera, tripulada por los remeros tabú, se dirigió al fondo de la ensenada, mientras el barco permanecía bordeando entre mar y tierra en espera de su regreso.

Los acontecimientos sucesivos ya se han detallado, y queda poco más que relatar. Al alcanzar el Julia, me elevaron sobre la borda, y mi EXTRAÑO aspecto y mi sorprendente aventura ocasionaron el más vivo interés. Me concedieron todas las atenciones que podía sugerir el humanitarismo. Pero estaba yo reducido a tal estado, que pasaron tres meses antes de que recuperara la salud.

Nunca se ha aclarado el misterio que se cernía sobre el destino de mi amigo y compañero Toby. Todavía sigo ignorando si logró dejar el valle, o si perdió a manos de los isleños. [273]

APÉNDICE

El autor de este libro llegó a Tahiti el mismo día en que se consumaron los inicuos designios de los franceses, induciendo a los jefes subordinados, en ausencia de su reina, a ratificar un tratado astutamente redactado por el cual ella quedaba virtualmente depuesta. Se emplearon en esta ocasión tanto amenazas como caricias, y los cañones de treinta y dos libras que se asomaban por las portas de la fragata fueron los principales argumentos aducidos para acallar los escrúpulos de los isleños más concienzudos.

Y sin embargo, esta incursión pirata de Tahiti, con todo el doler y la desolación que produjo, no creó ni la mitad de sensación, al menos en América, que la causada por el proce-der de los ingleses en las Islas Sandwich. Ninguna negociación se ha malentendido tan grosseamente como los acontecimientos que ocurrieron a la llegada de Lord George Paulet a Oahu. Durante una estancia de cuatro meses en Honolulu, capital del

(*) La bandera inglesa.
was in the confidence of an Englishman who was much employed by his lordship; and great was the author’s astonishment on his arrival at Boston, in the autumn of 1844, to read the distorted accounts and fabrications which had produced in the United States so violent an outbreak of indignation against the English. He deems it, therefore, a mere act of justice towards a gallant officer briefly to state the leading circumstances connected with the event in question.

It is needless to rehearse all the abuse that for some time previous to the spring of 1843 had been heaped upon the British residents, especially upon Captain Charlton, her Britannic Majesty’s consul general, by the native authorities of the Sandwich Islands. High in the favor of the imbecile king at this time was one Dr Judd, a sanctimonious apothecary-adventurer, who, with other kindred and influential spirits, were animated by an inveterate dislike to England. The ascendancy of a junto of ignorant and designing Methodist elders in the councils of a half-civilized king, ruling with absolute sway over a nation just poised between barbarism and civilization, and exposed by the peculiarities of its relations with foreign states to unusual difficulties, was not precisely calculated to impart a healthy tone to the policy of the government.

At last matters were brought to such an extremity, through the iniquitous maladministration of affairs, that the endurance of further insults and injuries on the part of the British consul was no longer to be borne. Captain Charlton, insultingly forbidden to leave the islands, clandestinely withdrew, and arriving at Valparaiso, conferred with Rear-Admiral Thomas, the English commander-in-chief on the Pacific station. In consequence of this communication, Lord George Paulet was despatched by the admiral in the Carysfort frigate, to enquire into and correct the alleged abuses. On arriving at his destination, he sent his first-lieutenant ashore with a letter to the king, couched in terms of the utmost courtesy, and soliciting the honor of an audience. The messenger was denied access to his Majesty, and Paulet was coolly referred to Doctor Judd, and informed that the apothecary was invested with plenary powers to treat with him. Rejecting this insolent proposition, his lordship again addressed the king by letter, and renewed his previous request; but he encountered another repulse. Justly indignant at this treatment, he demanded a third epistle, enumerating the grievances to be redressed, and demanding a compliance with his requisitions, under penalty of immediate hostilities.

The government was now obliged to act, and an artful stroke of policy was decided upon by the despicable councillors of the king to entrap the sympathies and rouse the indignation of Christendom. His Majesty was made to intimate to the British captain that he could not, as the conscientious ruler of his beloved people, comply with the arbitrary demands of his lordship, and in depredation of the horrors of war, tendered to his acceptance the ‘provisional cession’ of the islands, subject to the result of the negotiations then pending in London. Paulet, a bluff and straightforward sailor, took the king at his word, and after some preliminary arrangements, entered upon the administration of Hawaiian affairs, in the same firm and benignant spirit which marked the discipline of his frigate, and which had rendered him the idol of his ship’s company. He soon endeared himself to nearly all orders of the islanders; but the king and the chiefs, whose feudal sway over the common people is laboriously sought to be perpetuated by their missionary advisers, regarded all his proceedings with the most vigilant animosity. Jealous of this growing popularity, and unable to counteract it, they endeavored to assail his reputation abroad by ostentatiously protesting against his acts, and appealing in Oriental phrase to the wide universe to witness and compassionate their unparalleled wrongs.

archipiélago, el autor tuvo confianza con un inglés que fue muy utilizado por el Lord; y grande fue el asombro del autor al llegar a Boston, en otoño de 1844, cuando leyó los torcidos informes e invenciones que en Estados Unidos habían producido tan violento estallido de indignación contra los ingleses. Por consiguiente, considero un mero acto de justicia hacía un valiente oficial presentar las principales circunstancias del acontecimiento en cuestión.

Es superfluo repetir todas las calumnias que, durante algún tiempo antes de la primavera de 1843 se habían amontonado contra los residentes británicos, especialmente contra el capitán Charlton, consulsul general de Su Majestad Británica, por parte de las autoridades indígenas de las Islas Sandwich. Por entonces [275] tenía gran favor ante el imbecil rey un tal Doctor Judd, un santurron boliviano, uno que, con otros espíritus afines e influencias, estaba animado por un inveterado odio a Inglaterra. El ascendiente de una junta de ancianos metodistas, ignorantes y enredadores, sobre los designios de un rey medio civilizado, que gobernaba con dominio absoluto a una nación en vilo entre la barbarie y la civilización, y expuesta, por su peculiar relación con los Estados extranjeros, a dificultades desacostumbradas, no era precisamente lo más adecuado para dar un toque saludable a la política del gobierno.

Por fin, los asuntos llegaron a tal extremo, por la inicial mala administración de las cuestiones, que no se pudo soportar más que el cónsul británico hubiera de seguir aguantando insultos e injurias. El capitán Charlton, a quien injustamente se le prohibió que se marchara de las islas, se retiró clandestinamente, y al llegar a Valparaíso, conferenció con el contraalmirante Thomas, comandante en jefe inglés en la zona del Pacífico. A consecuencia de esta entrevista, Lord George Paulet fue enviado por el almirante, en la fragata Carysfort, para investigar y corregir los abusos indicados. Al llegar a su destino, envió a su primer teniente a tierra con una carta para el rey, escrita en los términos de la mayor cortesía, solicitando el honor de una audiencia. Al mensajero se le negó acceso a Su Majestad, y a Paulet se le remitió fríamente al Doctor Judd, informándole de que el boticario estaba dotado de plenos poderes para tratar con él. Rechazando esa insolente propuesta, Lord Paulet volvió a dirigirse por carta al rey, y renovó su petición anterior, pero encontró otro rechazo. Justamente indignado por ese trato, redactó una tercera epístola enumerando los agravios a enderezar, bajo pena de hostilidades inmediatas.

El gobierno entonces se vio obligado a actuar, y los desprevenidos consejeros del rey urdieron un hábil golpe político para captar las simpatías y excitar la indignación de la Cristiandad. Se hizo que Su Majestad indicara al capitán británico que él, como jefe consciente de su amado pueblo, no podía obedecer a las arbitrarias demandas de Lord Paulet, y, repudiando los errores de la guerra, proponía a su aceptación lo que en el “provisional” de las islas, sujeta a los resultados de las negociaciones entonces en curso en Londres. Paulet, un marinero honrado y sincero, aceptó la palabra del rey; y tras unos arreglos preliminares, asumió la administración de los asuntos hawaianos con el mismo espíritu firme y benigno que caracterizaba la disciplina de su fragata, y que le había hecho idol de la tripulación de su barco. [276] Pronto se hizo querer de casi todas las clases de isleños, pero el rey y los jefes, cuyo dominio feudal sobre el pueblo común trataban laboriosamente de perpetuar sus consejos misionales, observaban todos sus actos con la más vigilante animosidad. Celosos de su creciente popularidad, e incapaces de contrarrestarla, trataron de atacar su reputación universal protestando ostensiblemente contra sus actos, y apelando, en expresión oriental, al ancho universo como testigo y compadecedor de sus agravios sin par.
Heedless of their idle clamors, Lord George Paulet addressed himself to the task of reconciling the differences among the foreign residents, remedying their grievances, promoting their mercantile interests, and ameliorating as far as lay in his power the condition of the degraded natives. The iniquities he brought to light and instantly suppressed are too numerous to be here recorded; but one instance may be mentioned that will give some idea of the lamentable misrule to which these poor islanders are subjected.

It is well known that the laws at the Sandwich Islands are subject to the most capricious alterations, which, by confounding all ideas of right and wrong in the minds of the natives, produce the most pernicious effects. In no case is this mischief more plainly discernible than in the continually shifting regulations concerning licentiousness. At one time the most innocent freedoms between the sexes are punished with fine and imprisonment; at another the revocation of the statute is followed by the most open and undisguised profligacy.

It so happened that at the period of Paulet’s arrival the Connecticut blue laws had been for at least three weeks steadily enforced. In consequence of this, the fort at Honolulu was filled with a great number of young girls, who were confined there doing penance for their slips from virtue. Paulet, although at first unwilling to interfere with regulations having reference solely to the natives themselves, was eventually, by the prevalence of certain reports, induced to institute a strict inquiry into the internal administration of General Kekuanoa, governor of the island of Oahu, one of the pillars of the Hawaiian church, and captain of the fort. He soon ascertained that numbers of the young females employed during the day at work intended for the benefit of the king, were at night smuggled over the ramparts of the fort—which on one side directly overhangs the sea—and were conveyed by stealth on board such vessels as had contracted with the General to be supplied with them. Before daybreak they returned to their quarters, and their own silence with regard to these secret excursions was purchased by a small portion of those wages of iniquity which were placed in the hands of Kekuanoa.

The vigor with which the laws concerning licentiousness were at that period enforced, enabled the General to monopolize in a great measure the detestable trade in which he was engaged, and there consequently flowed into his coffers—considerable sums of money. It is indeed a lamentable fact, that the principal revenue of the Hawaiian government is derived from the fines levied upon, or rather the licences taken out by Vice, the prosperity of which is linked with that of the government. Were the people to become virtuous the government also—considerable sums of money. It is indeed a lamentable fact, that the principal revenue of the Hawaiian government is derived from the fines levied upon, or rather the licences taken out by Vice, the prosperity of which is linked with that of the government. Were the people to become virtuous the

El vigor con que entonces se sancionaron las leyes respecto a la licenciosidad, permitió al general monopolizar en buena medida el detestable comercio a que se dedicaba, y por consiguiente, considerables sumas de dinero afluían a sus cofres —y algunos dicen que también a los del gobierno—. Desde luego, es un hecho lamentable que la principal renta del gobierno hawaiano se derive de las multas obtenidas, o mejor dicho, de las licencias sacadas por el vicio, cuya prosperidad va emparejada con la del gobierno. Si la gente se volviera virtuosa, el gobierno sería pobre; pero, por los indicios actuales, hay que tener pocos temores por ese lado.

Some five months after the date of the cession, the Dublin frigate, carrying the flag of Rear-Admiral Thomas, entered the harbor of Honolulu. The excitement that her sudden appearance produced on shore was prodigious. Three days after her arrival an English sailor hauled down the red cross which had been flying from the heights of the fort, and the Hawaiian colors were again displayed upon the same staff. At the same moment the long 42-pounders upon Punchbowl Hill opened their iron throats in triumphant reply to the thunders of the five men-of-war in the harbor; and King Kammahamahana III, surrounded by a splendid group of British and American officers, unfurled the royal standard to assembled thousands of his subjects, who, attracted by the imposing military display of the foreigners, had flocked to witness the formal restoration of the islands to their ancient rulers.

Unos cinco meses después de la fecha de cesión, la fragata Dublin, ondeando la enseña del contraalmirante Thomas, entró en el puerto de Honolulu. Fue prodigiosa la excitación que produjo en tierra su repentina aparición. Tres días después de su llegada, un marinero americano arrió la cruz roja* que había ondeado en las alturas del fuerte, y volvieron a mostrarse los colores hawaianos en esa misma asta. En ese preciso instante, los largos cañones de 42 libras, de Punchbowl Hill, abrieron sus gargantas férreas en réplica triunfante a los truenos de los cinco buques de guerra del puerto; y el rey Kammahamahana III, rodeado por un espléndido grupo de oficiales británicos y americanos, desplegó el estandarte real ante millares de sus súbditos reunidos, quienes, atraídos por la imponente exhibición militar de los extranjeros, se habían agolpado para presenciar la devolución formal de las islas a sus antiguos jefes.
The Admiral, after sanctioning the proceedings of his subaltern, had brought the authorities to terms; and so removed the necessity of acting any longer under the provisional cession.

The event was made an occasion of riotous rejoicing by the king and the principal chiefs, who easily secured a display of enthusiasm from the inferior orders, by remitting for a time the accustomed severity of the laws. Royal proclamations in English and Hawaiian were placarded in the streets of Honolulu, and posted up in the more populous villages of the group, in which his Majesty announced to his loving subjects the re-establishment of his throne, and called upon them to celebrate it by breaking through all moral, legal, and religious restraint for ten consecutive days, during which time all the laws of the land were solemnly declared to be suspended.

Who that happened to be at Honolulu during those ten memorable days will ever forget them! The spectacle of universal broad-day debauchery, which was then exhibited, beggars description. The natives of the surrounding islands flocked to Honolulu by hundreds, and the crews of two frigates, opportunely let loose like so many demons to swell the heathenish uproar, gave the crowning flourish to the scene. It was a sort of Polynesian saturnalia. Deeds too atrocious to be mentioned were done at noon-day on the open street, and some of the islanders caught in the very act of stealing from the foreigners, were, on being taken to the fort by the aggrieved party, suffered immediately to go at large and to retain the stolen property - Kekuanoa informing the white men, with a sardonic grin, that the laws were 'hannapa' (tied up).

The history of these ten days reveals in their true colors the character of the Sandwich islanders, and furnishes an eloquent commentary on the results which have flowed from the labors of the missionaries. Freed from the restraints of severe penal laws, the natives almost to a man had plunged voluntarily into every species of wickedness and excess, and by their utter disregard of all decency plainly showed, that although they had been schooled into a seeming submission to the new order of things, they were in reality as depraved and vicious as ever.

Such were the events which produced in America so general an outbreak of indignation against the spirited and high-minded Paulet. He is not the first man, who, in the fearless discharge of his duty, has awakened the senseless clamors of those whose narrow-minded suspicions blind them to a proper appreciation of measures which unusual exigencies may have rendered necessary.

It is almost needless to add that the British cabinet never had any idea of appropriating the islands; and it furnishes a sufficient vindication of the acts of Lord George Paulet, that he not only received the unqualified approbation of his own government, but that to this hour the great majority of the Hawaiian people invoke blessings on his head, and look back with gratitude to the time when his liberal and paternal sway diffused peace and happiness among them.

THE END

* vicioj 1] ad-tampered, spiteful [of vicioso dog]; vicioso remarks]. 2) violent, severe [of vicioso attack]; 3) of the nature of or addicted to vice. 4) of language or reasoning etc.] faulty or unsound.

Malicious, horroso, feroz, despiadado

El almirante, después de aprobar los actos de su subalterno, había reducido a sus términos a las autoridades, suprimiendo así la necesidad de seguir actuando bajo la «cesión provisional».

El acontecimiento fue declarado, por el rey y los principales jueces, ocasión de estrepitoso regocijo, obteniéndose fácilmente una exhibición de entusiasmo por parte de las clases inferiores al disminuir por algún tiempo la acostumbrada severidad de las leyes. Proclamas reales, en inglés y hawaiano, se exhibieron en las calles de Honolulu, y se pegaron en carteles en las aldeas más populosas del archipiélago, en las que Su Majestad anunció a sus amantes súbditos la restauración de su trono, y les incitó a celebrarlo quebrantando toda sujeción moral, [278] legal y religiosa durante diez días consecutivos, en cuyo intervalo se declaraban solemnemente suspendidas todas las leyes del país.

Quien se encontrara en Honolulu durante esos diez días memorables nunca olvidará. No cabe describir el espectáculo de depravación universal y en pleno día que se observó entonces. Los indígenas de las islas circundantes, acuñados a Honolulu a centenares, y las tripulaciones de dos fragatas, a las que oportunamente se dio suelta como demonios para aumentar el tumulto pagano, die- ron el toque que coronó la escena. Fueron una especie de saturnales polinesias. Hechos demasiado horribles para ser mencionados se cometieron en pleno día y en plena calle, y algunos de los isleños, sorprendidos en el mismo acto de robar a extranjeros, cuando la parte ofendida les llevó al fuerte, fueron inmediatamente dejan dos en libertad y conservaron la propiedad robada, mientras Kekuanoa formaba a los blancos, con una mueca sardónica, de que las leyes eran hannapa (derogadas).

La historia de esos diez días revela en sus auténticos colores el carácter de los isleños de las Sandwich, y ofrece un elocuente comentario sobre los resultados producidos por los esfuerzos de los misioneros. Liberados de la coercion de severas leyes penales, los indígenas, casi como un solo hombre, se zambulleron voluntaria mente en toda clase de perversidad y exceso, y con su absoluto desprecio de toda decencia, mostraron claramente que, aunque habían sido educados en la aparente sumisión al nuevo orden de cosas, seguían en realidad tan viciosos y depravados como siempre.

Tales fueron los acontecimientos que produjeron en América un estallido tan general de indignación contra Paulet, con todo su espíritu y su elevación de ánimo. No es el primer hombre que, al realizar sin miedo su obligación, ha despertado los clamores insensatos de aquellos cuya estrechez de miras les ciega para la adecuada apreciación de las medidas que las exigencias insólitas han hecho necesarias.

Es casi superfluo añadir que el gabinete británico jamás tuvo idea de apoderarse de las islas, y ofrece suficiente vindicación de los actos de Lord George Paulet el hecho de que no sólo recibiera la aprobación sin reservas de su gobierno, sino que, hasta hoy, la gran mayoría del pueblo hawaiano siga invocando bendiciones sobre su cabeza, y recordando con gratitud el tiempo en que su dominio liberal y paternal difundió entre ellos paz y felicidad. [279]
The author was more than two years in the South Seas, after escaping from the valley, as recounted in the last chapter. Some time after returning home the foregoing narrative was published, though it was little thought at the time that this would be the means of revealing the existence of Toby, who had long been given up for lost. But so it proved.

The story of his escape supplies a natural sequel to the adventure, and as such it is now added to the volume. It was related to the author by Toby himself, not ten days since.

New York, July, 1846.

THE STORY OF TOBY

THE morning my comrade left me, as related in the narrative, he was accompanied by a large party of the natives, some of them carrying fruit and hogs for the purposes of traffic, as the report had spread that boats had touched at the bay.

As they proceeded through the settled parts of the valley, numbers joined them from every side, running with animated cries from every pathway. So excited were the whole party, that eager as Toby was to gain the beach, it was almost as much as he could do to keep up with them. Making the valley ring with their shouts, they hurried along on a swift trot, those in advance pausing now and then, and flourishing their weapons to urge the rest forward.

Presently they came to a place where the paths crossed a bend of the main stream of the valley. Here a strange sound came through the grove beyond, and the Islanders halted. It was Mow-Mow, the one-eyed chief, who had gone on before; he was striking his heavy lance against the hollow bough of a tree.

This was a signal of alarm;—for nothing was now heard but shouts of `Happar! Happar!'—the warriors tilting with their spears and brandishing them in the air, and the women and boys shouting to each other, and picking up the stones in the bed of the stream. In a moment or two Mow-Mow and two or three other chiefs ran out from the grove, and the din increased ten fold.

Now, thought Toby, for a fray; and being unarmed, he sought one of the young men domiciled with Marheyo for the loan of his spear. But he was refused; the youth malignantly telling him that the weapon was very good for him (the Typee), but that a white man could fight much better with his fists.

The merry humour of this young wag [joker] seemed to be shared by the rest, for in spite of their warlike cries and gestures, everybody was capering and laughing, as if it was one of the funniest things in the world to be awaiting the flight of a score or two of Happar javelins from an ambush in the thickets.

While my comrade was in vain trying to make out the meaning of all this, a good number of the natives separated themselves from the rest and ran off into the grove on one side, the others now keeping perfectly still, as if awaiting the meaning of all this, a good number of the natives separated themselves from the rest and ran off into the grove on one side, the others now keeping perfectly still, as if awaiting the
result. After a little while, however, Mow-Mow, who stood in advance, motioned them to come on stealthily, which they did, scarcely rustling a leaf. Thus they crept along for ten or fifteen minutes, every now and then pausing to listen.

Toby by no means relished this sort of skulking; if there was going to be a fight, he wanted it to begin at once. But all in good time,—for just then, as they went prowling [merodeando] into the thickest of the wood, terrific howls burst upon them on all sides, and volleys of darts and stones flew across the path. Not an enemy was to be seen, and what was still more surprising, not a single man dropped, though the pebbles fell among the leaves like hail.

There was a moment’s pause, when the Typees, with wild shrieks, flung themselves into the covert, spear in hand; nor was Toby behind coming. So coming near getting his skull broken by the stones, and animated by an old grudge he bore the Happars, he was among the first to dash at them. As he broke his way through the underbrush, trying, as he did so, to wrest a spear from a young chief, the shouts of battle all of a sudden ceased, and the wood was as still as death. The next moment, the party who had left them so mysteriously rushed out from behind every bush and tree, and united with the rest in long and merry peals of laughter.

It was all a sham, and Toby, who was quite out of breath with excitement, was much incensed at being made a fool of.

It afterwards turned out that the whole affair had been concerted for his particular benefit, though with what precise view it would be hard to tell. My comrade was the more enraged at this boys’ play, since it had consumed so much time, every moment of which might be precious. Perhaps, however, it was partly intended for this very purpose; and he was led to think so, because when the natives started again, he observed that they did not seem to be in so great a hurry as before. At last, after they had gone some distance, Toby, thinking all the while that they never would get to the sea, two men came running towards them, and a regular halt ensued, followed by a noisy discussion, during which Toby’s name was often repeated. All this made him more and more anxious to learn what was going on at the beach; but it was in vain that he now tried to push forward; the natives held him back.

In a few moments the conference ended, and many of them ran down the path in the direction of the water, the rest surrounding Toby, and entreatting him to ‘Moee’, or sit down and rest himself.

As an additional inducement, several calabashes of food, which had been brought along, were now placed on the ground, and opened, and pipes also were lighted. Toby bridled his impatience a while, but at last sprang to his feet and dashed forward again.

He was soon overtaken nevertheless, and again surrounded, but without further detention was then permitted to go down to the sea.

They came out upon a bright green space between the groves and the water, and close under the shadow of the Happar mountain, where a path was seen winding out of sight through a gorge.

No sign of a boat, however, was beheld, nothing but a tumultuous crowd of men and women, and some one in their midst, earnestly talking to them. As my comrade advanced, this person came forward and proved to be no stranger. He do. Sin embargo, al cabo de un rato, Mau-Mau, que iba por delante, les hizo señas de que avanzaran furtivamente, y así lo hicieron, sin mover apenas una hoja. De ese modo se deslizaron durante diez o quince minutos, deteniéndose de vez en cuando a escuchar.

A Toby no le gustó en absoluto ese modo de escondese: si iba a haber una pelea, quería que empezara en seguida. Pero cada cosa a su tiempo. Pues precisamente entonces, cuando se metían arrastrándose en lo más espeso del bosque, terribles aullidos salieron por todas partes, y salvas de dardos y piedras volaron a través del sendero. No se veía ni un enemigo, y lo que era más sorprendente, no se desplomó ni un solo hombre, aunque los guijarros cayeron entre las hojas como granizo.

Hubo un momento de pausa, y en esto los taipis, con gritos salvajes, se echaron campo abajo, lanza en mano, sin que Toby se quedara atrás. Habiendo estado tan a punto de que le partieran la cabeza con las piedras, y animado por una vieja querella que tenía contra los happars, fue de los primeros que se arrojaron contra ellos. Al abrirse paso entre la maleza, tratando al mismo tiempo de arrancarle la lanza a un joven jefe, los gritos de batalla cesaron de repente, y el bosque quedó tan callado como la muerte. Un momento después, el grupo que les había dejado con tanto misterio salió apresuradamente de detrás de los arbustos y los árboles, y se unió a los demás en jubilosas carcajadas.

Era toda una broma, y Toby, que estaba sin aliento de tanta excitación, se indignó mucho de que se hubieran burlado de él.

Luego resultó que todo el asunto se había concertado previamente para él, aunque sería difícil decir con qué determinada intención. Mi compatriota se enojó [284] sobre todo en ese juego de niños porque había consumido tanto tiempo que podía ser precioso en cada instante. Quizá, sin embargo, se había preparado en parte con esa misma intención, y se inclinó a creerlo así porque, cuando volvieron los indígenas a ponerse en marcha, observó que no parecían tener tanta prisa como antes. Por fin, después que recorrieron alguna distancia, mientras Toby pensaba durante todo el tiempo que jamás llegarían al mar, dos hombres se les acercaron corriendo, y tuvo lugar una completa detención, seguida por una discusión ruidosa, en que se repetía el nombre de Toby a menudo. Todo eso le hizo sentirse más afánoso cada vez por saber lo que pasaba en la playa, pero fue en vano que intentara entonces seguir adelante: los indígenas le retuvieron.

La discusión terminó al cabo de pocos momentos, y muchos de ellos corrieron sendero abajo, en dirección al mar, mientras que los demás rodeaban a Toby, y le invitaban a moi, o sea a sentarse y descansar.

Como atractivo adicional, pusieron en el suelo y abrieron varias calabazas de alimento, que habían llevado consigo, y también encendieron pipas. Toby refrenó su impaciencia un rato, pero por fin se puso de pie de un salto, y volvió a lanzarse hacia adelante.

Sin embargo, pronto fue alcanzado y rodeado otra vez, pero, sin detenerle más, se le permitió bajar al mar.

Salieron a un claro espacio verde entre los bosques y el agua, y a la sombra misma de la montaña Happar, donde se veía un sendero, retorciéndose por una garganta hasta perderse de vista.

Sin embargo, no se observaba señal de lancha: nada sino una multitud tumultuosa de hombres y mujeres, y alguien, en medio de ellos, que les hablaba afanosamente. Al avanzar mi compatriota, esa persona se adelantó y resultó no ser desconocido. Era un viejo ma-
Melville's Typee

J. M. Valverde

was an old grizzled sailor, whom Toby and myself had frequently seen in Nukuheva, where he lived an easy devil-may-care life in the household of Mowanna the king, going by the name of ‘Jimmy’. In fact he was the royal favourite, and had a good deal to say in his master’s councils. He wore a Manilla hat and a sort of tappa morning gown, sufficiently loose and negligent to show the verse of a song tattooed upon his chest, and a variety of spirited cuts by native artists in other parts of his body. He sported a fishing rod in his hand, and carried a sooty old pipe slung about his neck.

This old rover having retired from active life, had resided in Nukuheva some time—could speak the language, and for that reason was frequently employed by the French as an interpreter. He was an arrant old gossip too; for ever coming off in his canoe to the ships in the bay, and regaling their crews with choice little morsels of court scandal—such, for instance, as a shameful intrigue of his majesty with a Happar damsel, a public dancer at the feasts—and otherwise relating some incredible tales about the Marquesas generally. I remember in particular his telling the Dolly’s crew what proved to be literally a cock-and-bull story, about two natural prodigies which he said they were then on the island. One was an old monster of a hermit, having a marvelous reputation for sanctity, and reputed a famous sorcerer, who lived away off in a den among the mountains, where he hid from the world a great pair of horns that grew out of his temples. Notwithstanding his reputation for piety, this horrid old fellow was the terror of all the island round, being reported to come out from his retreat, and go a man-hunting every dark night. Some anonymous Paul Pry, too, coming down the mountain, once got a peep at his den, and found it full of bones. In short, he was a most unheard-of monster.

But to return to Toby. The moment he saw the old rover on the beach, he ran up to him, the natives following after, and forming a circle round them.

After welcoming him to the shore, Jimmy went on to tell him how that he knew all about our having run away from the ship, and being among the Typees. Indeed, he had been urged by Mowanna to come over to the valley, and after visiting his friends there, to bring us back with him, his royal master being exceedingly anxious to share with him the reward which had been held out for our capture. He, however, assured Toby that he had indignantly spurned the offer.

All this astonished my comrade not a little, as neither of us had entertained the least idea that any white man ever visited the Typees sociably. But Jimmy told him that such was the case nevertheless, although he seldom came into the bay, and scarcely ever went back from the beach. One of the priests of the valley, related of some manner connected with an old tattooed divine in Nukuheva, was a friend of his, and through him he was ‘taboo’.

He said, moreover, that he was sometimes employed to come round to the bay, and engage fish for ships lying in Nukuheva. In fact, he was now the fisherman, according to his own word, having just come across the mountains by the way of Happar. By noon of the next day the fruit would be heaped up in stacks on the beach, in readiness for sale, a sooty old pipe slung about his neck.

arrant being notoriously without moderation, utter, downright

Este viejo vagabundo, después de retirarse de la vida activa, había residido en Nukuheva algún tiempo: sabía hablar el idioma, y por esa razón los franceses le empleaban como intérprete. También era un picaro indiscreto: salía siempre [285] en su canoa a recibir a los barcos en la bahía, y obsequiaba a sus tripulaciones con bocados selectos de escándalos de corte—como, por ejemplo, una vergonzosa intriga de Su Majestad con una damisela haparr, bailarina pública en las fiestas—y contando otro tipo de historias increíbles sobre las Marquesas en general. Recuerdo en particular que contó a la tripulación del Dolly lo que resultó ser literalmente un cuento de «gallo y toro**, sobre dos prodigios naturales que dijo que había en la isla. Uno era un viejo ermitaño monstruoso, con maravillosa reputación de santidad, y considerado un famoso hechicero, que vivía apartado en una cueva entre las montañas, donde ocultaba al mundo un gran par de cuernos que le crecían en las sienes. A pesar de su fama de piedad, ese horrendo viejo era el terror de toda la isla, pues se decía que todas las noches oscuras salía de su retiro y se iba a cazar hombres. Algun anónimo fíggson, además, bajando de la montaña, una vez se asomó a atisbar en su cueva, y la encontró llena de huesos. En resumen, que era un monstruo inaudito.

El otro prodigio que nos contó Jimmy era que el hijo menor de un jefe, a pesar de que acababa de cumplir diez años, había entrado en órdenes sagradas porque sus supersticiosos compatriotas le creían especialmente apto para el sacerdocio por el hecho de que tenía una cresta en la cabeza parecida a la de un gallo. Pero eso no era todo, pues aún era más prodigioso de contar que el muchacho se sentía orgulloso de su extraña cresta, y estaba efectivamente dotado de voz de gallo, cantando y cacareando frecuentemente su peculiaridad.

Pero volviendo a Toby. En el momento en que vio al viejo vagabundo en la playa, corrió hacia él, y los indígenas le siguieron formando un círculo en torno a ellos.

Después de darle la bienvenida en la orilla, Jimmy procedió a contarlo que estaba enterado de que nos habíamos escapado del barco y que estábamos entre los taipis. Es más, Mowanna le había insistido en que fuera al valle, y después de visitar a sus amigos de allí nos llevara consigo, pues su real amo estaba enormemente ansioso de compartir con él la recompensa que se había ofrecido por nuestra captura. Sin embargo, aseguró a Toby que había rechazado la oferta con indignación.

Todo ello asombró no poco a mi compañero, ya que ninguno de nosotros había tenido la menor idea de que ningún hombre blanco hubiera visitado jamás a los taipis de modo sociable. Pero Jimmy le dijo que, con todo, ése era el caso, [286] aunque él raramente llegaba a la bahía, y escasamente se apartaba de la playa. Uno de los sacerdotes del valle, relacionado de algún modo con un viejo clérigo tatuado de Nukuheva era amigo suyo, y a través de éste era él tabá. Dijo, además, que a veces le empleaban para llegar hasta la bahía a comprar fruta para los barcos anclados en Nukuheva. En realidad, ahorra mismo venía a ese recodo en el propietario de la casa, pues acababa de cruzar las montañas por el lado de Happar. Al mediodía siguiente, la fruta estaría amontonada en la playa, preparada
ness for the boats which he then intended to bring into the bay.

Jimmy now asked Toby whether he wished to leave the island—if he did, there was a ship in want of men lying in the other harbour, and he would be glad to take him over, and see him on board that very day.

‘No,’ said Toby, ‘I cannot leave the island unless my comrade goes with me. I left him up the valley because they would not let him come down. Let us go now and fetch him.’

‘But how is he to cross the mountain with us,’ replied Jimmy, ‘even if we get him down to the beach? Better let him stay till tomorrow, and I will bring him round to Nukuheva in the boats.’

‘That will never do,’ said Toby, ‘but come along with me now, and let us get him down here at any rate,’ and yielding to the impulse of the moment, he started to hurry back into the valley. But hardly was his back turned, when a dozen hands were laid on him, and he learned that he could not go a step further.

It was in vain that he fought with them; they would not hear of his stirring from the beach. Cut to the heart at this unexpected repulse, Toby now conjured the sailor to go after me alone. But Jimmy replied, that in the mood the Typees then were they would not permit him so to do, though at the same time he was not afraid of their offering him any harm.

Little did Toby then think, as he afterwards had good reason to suspect, that this very Jimmy was a heartless villain, who, by his arts, had just incited the natives to restrain him as he was in the act of going after me. Well must the old sailor have known, too, that the natives would never consent to our leaving together, and he therefore wanted to get Toby off alone, for a purpose which he afterwards made plain. Of all this, however, my comrade now knew nothing.

He was still struggling with the islanders when Jimmy again came up to him, and warned him against irritating them, saying that he was only making matters worse for both of us, and if they became enraged, there was no telling what might happen. At last he made Toby sit down on a broken canoe by a pile of stones, upon which was a ruinous little shrine supported by four upright poles, and in front partially screened by a net. The fishing parties met there, when they came in from the sea, for their offerings were laid before an image, upon a smooth black stone within. This spot Jimmy said was strictly taboo, and no one would molest or come near him while he stayed by its shadow. The old sailor then went off, and began speaking very earnestly to Mow-Mow and some other chiefs, while all the rest formed a circle round the taboo place, looking intently at Toby, and talking to each other without ceasing.

Now, notwithstanding what Jimmy had just told him, there presently came up to my comrade an old woman, who seated herself beside him on the canoe.

‘Typee mortarkee?’ said she.

‘Mortarkee nuee,’ said Toby.

She then asked him whether he was going to Nukuheva; he nodded yes; and with a plaintive wail and her eyes filling with tears she rose and left him.

This old woman, the sailor afterwards said, was the wife of an aged king of a small island valley, communicating by a deep pass with the country of the Typees. The inmates of the two valleys were related for the boats which él pensaba hacer entrar en la bahía.

Jimmy preguntó entonces a Toby si deseaba abandonar la isla: en ese caso, había un barco que necesitaba marineros anclado en la otra rada, y él estaría encantado de llevarle allá y hacerle subir a bordo ese mismo día.

—No —dijo Toby—: no puedo dejar la isla mientras no venga conmigo mi compañero. Le dejé en el valle porque ellos no le permitían bajar. Vamos ahora a buscarle.

—Pero ¿cómo va a cruzar la montaña con nosotros —contestó Jimmy— aunque le bajemos hasta la playa? Mejor será que se quede hasta mañana, y yo le llevaré a Nukuheva en las lanchas.

—Eso no sirve —dijo Toby—: pero venga ahora conmigo y vamos a bajarle aquí como sea.

Y, cediendo al impulso del momento, echó a correr de vuelta al valle. Pero apenas había vuelto la espalda, una docena de manos se le echaron encima, y supo que no podía dar un paso más.

Fue inútil que pleeara con ellos: no querían ni oír hablar de que se apartara del valle. Consternado ante esa inesperada repulsión, Toby suplicó entonces al marinero que me fuera a buscar él solo. Pero Jimmy replicó que, con el ánimo que tenían entonces los taipis, no le dejarían hacerlo así, aunque al mismo tiempo no tenía miedo de que le quisieran hacer daño.

Poco imaginaba entonces Toby, como luego tuvo buenas razones para sospechar, que ese mismo Jimmy era un villano sin corazón, que con sus astucias acababa de incitar a los indígenas a sujetarle cuando iba a buscarme. Además, el viejo marinero debía saber muy bien que los indígenas jamás consentirían que nos fuéramos juntos, y por consiguiente quería hacer marchar solo a Toby, con una intención que luego dio a conocer. Sin embargo, mi camarada no sabía nada de todo esto.

Todavía luchaba con los isleños, cuando volvió a acercársele Jimmy y le aviso que no les irritara, diciendo que era sólo empeorar las cosas para nosotros [287] dos, y que si se ponían coléricos, no cabía decir qué podría ocurrir. Por fin, hizo que Toby se sentara en una canoa rota, junto a un montón de piedras, en la que había un pequeño santuario arruinado sostenido por cuatro remos verticales, y con una red delante a modo de cortina. Las excursiones de pesca se reunían allí a llegar ante el mar, pues sus ofrendas estaban puestas ante una imagen, en una piedra negra y lisa que había dentro. Este lugar dijo Jimmy que era estrictamente tabú, y que nadie le molestaría ni se le acercaría mientras permaneciera a su sombra. Entonces el viejo marinero se marchó y empezó a hablar muy alegremente a Mau-Mau y a otros jefes, mientras todos los demás formaban un círculo en torno al lugar tabú, mirando atentamente a Toby, y hablándose sin cesar.

Entonces, a pesar de que le acababa de decir Jimmy, se acercó a mi compañero una vieja, que se sentó a su lado en la canoa.

—¿Taipi mortarki? (¿taipi buenos?) —dijo.

—Mortarki nui (muy buenos) —dijo Toby.

Luego le preguntó ella si iba a Nukuheva; él asintió con la cabeza, y ella, con un gemido plañidero y los ojos llenos de lágrimas, se levantó y le dejó.

Esa vieja, según dijo luego el marinero, era la esposa de un anciano rey de un pequeño valle interior que comunicaba por un hon- do paso con el país de los taipis. Los habitantes de los dos valles (* Cock-and-bull story, "historia increíble"
As the old king’s wife left him, Jimmy again came up to Toby, and told him that he had just talked the whole matter over with the natives, and there was only one course for him to follow. They would not allow him to go back into the valley, and harm would certainly come to both him and me, if he remained much longer on the beach. ‘So,’ said he, ‘you and I had better go to Nukuheva now overland, and tomorrow I will bring Tommo, as they call him, by water; they have promised to carry him down to the sea for me early in the morning, so that there will be no delay.’

‘No, no,’ said Toby desperately, ‘I will not leave him that way; we must escape together.’

‘Then there is no hope for you,’ exclaimed the sailor, ‘for if I leave you here on the beach, as soon as I am gone you will be carried back into the valley, and then neither of you will ever look upon the sea again.’ And with many oaths he swore that if he would only go to Nukuheva with him that day, he would be sure to have me there the very next morning.

‘But how do you know they will bring him down to the beach tomorrow, when they will not do so today?’ said Toby. But the sailor had many reasons, all of which were so mixed up with the mysterious customs of the islanders, that he was none the wiser. Indeed, their conduct, especially in preventing him from returning into the valley, was absolutely unaccountable to him; and added to everything else, was the bitter reflection, that the old sailor, after all, might possibly be deceiving him. And then again he had to think of me, left alone with the natives, and by no means well. If he went with Jimmy, he might at least hope to procure some relief for me. But might not the savages who had acted so strangely, hurry me off somewhere before his return? Then, even if he remained, perhaps they would not let him go back into the valley where I was.

Thus perplexed was my poor comrade; he knew not what to do, and his courageous spirit was of no use to him now. There he was, all by himself, seated upon the broken canoe—the natives grouped around him at a distance, and eyeing him more and more fixedly. ‘It is getting late: said Jimmy, who was standing behind the rest. ‘Nukuheva is far off, and I cannot cross the Happar country by night. You see how it is,—if you come along with me, all will be well; if you do not, depend upon it, neither of you will ever escape.’

‘There is no help for it,’ said Toby, at last, with a heavy heart, ‘I will have to trust you,’ and he came out from the shadow of the little shrine, and cast a long look up the valley.

‘Now keep close to my side,’ said the sailor, ‘and let us be moving quickly.’ Tinor and Fayaway here appeared; the kindhearted old woman embracing Toby’s knees, and giving way to a flood of tears; while Fayaway, hardly less moved, spoke some few words of English she had learned, and held up three fingers before him—in so many days he would return.

At last Jimmy pulled Toby out of the crowd, and after calling to a young Typee who was standing by with a young pig in his arms, all three started for the mountains.

‘I have told them that you are coming back again,’ said the old fellow, laughing, as they began the ascent, ‘but they’ll have to wait a long time.’ Toby turned, and saw the natives all in motion—the girls waving their tappus in adieu, and the men their spears. As the

Al dejarle la vieja esposa del rey, Jimmy volvió a acercarse a Toby, y le dijo que acababa de discutir todo el asunto con los indígenas y que sólo le quedaba un camino que seguir. No le dejarían volver al valle, y sin duda sería malo para ambos que se quedara mucho más tiempo en la playa.

—Así que —dijo —será mejor que usted y yo nos vayamos ahora a Nukuheva por tierra, y mañana llevará a Tommo, como le lllama, por el mar; han prometido bajarle a la playa a primera hora de la mañana, de modo que no habrá tardanza.

—No, no —dijo Toby desesperadamente—: yo no le dejaré así, tenemos que escaparnos juntos.

—Entonces no le queda esperanza —exclamó el marinero—, pues si le dejo aquí en la playa, en cuanto me vaya, le volverán a llevar al valle, y entonces ninguno de ustedes dos volverá a ver el mar.

Y con muchos juramentos le prometió que, con tal que fuera con él a Nukuheva ese día, a la mañana siguiente él me llevaría allí con toda seguridad. [288]

—Pero ¿cómo sabe que mañana le van a bajar a la playa, si no quieren bajarle hoy? —dijo Toby.

Pero el marinero tenía muchas razones, todas las cuales estaban tan enredadas con las misteriosas costumbres de los isleños, que Toby no consiguió enterarse de nada. En efecto, la conducta de los indígenas, sobre todo al impedirle volver al valle, le resultaba absolutamente inexplicable, y a todo lo demás se añadía la amarga reflexión de que, después de todo, quizá el viejo marinero le estaría engañando. Y luego tenía que volver a pensar en mí, abandonado y solo entre los indígenas, y mal de salud. Si se iba con Jimmy, por lo menos podría tener esperanzas de obtenerme algún alivio. Pero los salvajes, que habían actuado tan extrañamente, ¿no me llevarían a toda prisa a otro sitio antes que volviera él? Además, aunque se quedará, quizá no le dejarían volver al valle donde estaba yo.

En esta perplejidad estaba mi pobre compañero: no sabía qué hacer, y su espíritu valeroso ahora no le servía de nada. Allí estaba, solo, sentado en la canoa rota, y con los indígenas agrupados a distancia alrededor de él y observándole cada vez con mayor fijeza.

—Se hace tarde —dijo Jimmy, que estaba de pie tras los demás—. Nukuheva está muy lejos, y no puedo cruzar el país happar de noche. Ya ve lo que pasa: si viene conmigo, todo irá bien; si no, puede estar seguro, ninguno de los dos escapará.

—No hay remedio —dijo por fin Toby, con el ánimo abrumado—: tendré que fiarme de usted —y dejando la sombra del pequeño santuario, lanzó una larga mirada hacia el valle.

—Ahora no se separé de mi lado —dijo el marinero— y andemos de prisa. Entonces aparecieron Tinor y Fayaway: la benévola vieja abrazó las rodillas de Toby, y dejó escapar un torrente de lágrimas, mientras que Fayaway, casi igualmente conmovida, decía unas pocas palabras en lengua inglesa que había aprendido, y levantaba ante él tres dedos: en esos días volvería.

Por fin, Jimmy sacó a Toby de la multitud, y después de llamar a un joven taipi que estaba al lado con un cochinillo en brazos, los tres se pusieron en marcha hacia las montañas.

(*) Así en el original.
last figure entered the grove with one arm raised, and the three fingers spread, his heart smote him.

As the natives had at last consented to his going, it might have been, that some of them, at least, really counted upon his speedy return; probably supposing, as indeed he had told them when they were coming down the valley, that it was quite possible for them to procure the medicines I needed. This, Jimmy also must have told them. And as they had done before, when my comrade, to oblige me, started on his perilous journey to Nukuheva, they looked upon me, in his absence, as one of two inseparable friends who was a sure guaranty for the other’s return. This is only my own supposition, however, for as to all their strange conduct, it is still a mystery.

‘You see what sort of a taboo man I am,’ said the sailor, after for some time silently following the path which led up the mountain. ‘Mow-Mow made me a present of this pig here, and, the man who carries it will go right through Happar, and down into Nukuheva with us. So long as he stays by me he is safe, and just so it will be with you, and tomorrow with Tommo. Cheer up, then, and rely upon me, you will see him in the morning.’

The ascent of the mountain was not very difficult, owing to its being near to the sea, where the island ridges are comparatively low; the path, too, was a fine one, so that in a short time all three were standing on the summit with the two valleys at their feet. The white cascade marking the green head of the Typee valley first caught Toby’s eye; Marheyo’s house could easily be traced by them.

As Jimmy led the way along the ridge, Toby observed that the valley of the Happars did not extend near so far inland as that of the Typees. This accounted for our mistake in entering the latter valley as we had.

A path leading down from the mountain was soon seen, and, following it, the party were in a short time fairly in the Happar valley.

‘Now,’ said Jimmy, as they hurried on, ‘we taboo men have wives in all the bays, and I am going to show you the two I have here.’

So, when they came to the house where he said they lived,—which was close by the base of the mountain in a shady nook among the groves—he went in, and was quite furious at finding it empty—the ladies, had gone out. However, they soon made their appearance, and to tell the truth, welcomed Jimmy quite cordially, as well as Toby, about whom they were very inquisitive. Nevertheless, as the report of their arrival spread, and the Happars began to assemble, it became evident that the appearance of a white stranger among them was not by any means deemed so wonderful an event as in the neighbouring valley.

The old sailor now bade his wives prepare something to eat, as he must be in Nukuheva before dark. A meal of fish, bread-fruit, and bananas, was accordingly served up, the party regaling themselves on the mats, in the midst of a numerous company.

The Happars put many questions to Jimmy about Toby; and Toby himself looked sharply at them, anxious to recognize the fellow who gave him the wound from which he was still suffering. But this fiery gentleman, so handy with his spear, had the delicacy, it seemed, to keep out of view. Certainly the sight of him would not have been any added inducement to making a stay in the valley,—some of the afternoon loungers in Happar having politely urged Toby to spend a few days with them,—there was a feast coming on. He, however, declined.

Como los indígenas habían consentido por fin que se marchara, quizá sería que, al menos algunos de ellos, realmente contaban con su rápido regreso; suponiendo probablemente, como se lo habfa dicho el envidiosos, que el único objeto de dejarles era buscar las medicinas que yo necesitaba. Esta también debía haberse dicho Jimmy. Y lo mismo que habían hecho cuando mi compañero, para ayudarme, emprendió su peligroso viaje a Nukuheva, me miraron en su ausencia como uno de dos amigos inseparables, que era garantía segura del regreso del otro. Sin embargo, esto es solamente mi propia hipótesis, pues en cuanto a toda su extraña conducta, sigue siendo un misterio.

—Ya ve qué clase de hombre tabú soy yo —dijo el marinero, después de seguir algún tiempo en silencio el sendero que subía a la montaña—. Mau-Mau me ha regalado este cerdo, y el hombre que lo lleva atravesará Happar con nosotros y bajará a Nukuheva con nosotros. Mientras permanezca a mi lado, estará seguro, y lo mismo usted, y mañana Tommo. Alégrese, pues, y tenga confianza en mí: le verá mañana por la mañana.

La subida de la montaña no fue muy difícil, debido a que era cerca del mar, donde las crestas de la isla son relativamente bajas: el sendero, además, era bueno, de modo que en poco tiempo estuvieron los tres en la cima, con los dos valles a sus pies. Las blancas cascadas que marcaban el fondo verde del valle de Taipi fueron lo primero que saltó a la vista de Toby: se podía distinguir fácilmente la casa de Marheyo.

Mientras Jimmy abría la marcha a lo largo de la cresta, Toby observó que el valle de los happars no se extendía tan tierra adentro como el de los taipais. Esto explicaba nuestro error de llegar al valle de Taipi, como habíamos hecho.

Pronto se vio un sendero que bajaba de la montaña, y, siguiéndolo, el grupo quedó en poco tiempo en pleno valle de Happar.

—Bueno —dijo Jimmy, mientras avanzaban de prisa, nosotros los hombres tabú tenemos mujeres en todas las bahías, y le voy a enseñar las dos que tengo aquí.

Así, cuando llegaron a la casa donde dijo que vivían, que era cerca de la base de la montaña en un rincón sombreado entre los bosques, entró y se puso muy furioso al encontrarla vacía: las señoras habían salido. No obstante, pronto hicieron su aparición, y, para decir la verdad, dieron la bienvenida a Jimmy con mucha cordialidad, así como a Toby, sobre el cual fueron muy curiosos. No [290] obstante, al difundirse la noticia de su llegada y empezar a reunirse los happars, se hizo evidente que la presencia de un forastero blanco entre ellos no se consideraba en absoluto un acontecimiento tan prodigioso como en el valle vecino.

El viejo marinero hizo entonces a sus mujeres que prepararan algo de comer, porque debía estar en Nukuheva antes del anochecer. En consecuencia, se sirvió una comida de pescado, fruto de árbol del pan y plátanos, y el grupo se regaló en las esteras en medio de una numerosa compañía.

Los happars hicieron muchas preguntas a Jimmy sobre Toby, y el propio Toby les miró atentamente, deseoso de reconocer al tipo que le había hecho la ferida que todavía le molestaba. Pero ese feroz caballero, tan diestro con la lanza, tuvo al parecer la delicadeza de mantenerse fuera de observación. Ciertamente, el verle no habría sido una nueva atracción para quedarse en el valle, aunque algunos de los sesteadores apreciaron cortésmente a Toby a que pasara unos pocos días con ellos: se acercaba una fiesta. Él, sin embargo, rehusó.
All this while the young Typee stuck to Jimmy like his shadow, and though as lively a dog as any of his tribe, he was now as meek as a lamb, never opening his mouth except to eat. Although some of the Happars looked queerly at him, others were more civil, and seemed desirous of taking him abroad and showing him the valley. But the Typee was not to be cajoled in that way. How many yards he would have to remove from Jimmy before the taboo would be powerless, it would be hard to tell, but probably he himself knew to a fraction.

On the promise of a red cotton handkerchief, and something else which he kept secret, this poor fellow had undertaken a rather ticklish journey, though, as far as Toby could ascertain, it was something that had never happened before.

The island-punch—arva—was brought in at the conclusion of the repast, and passed round in a shallow calabash.

Now my comrade, while seated in the Happar house, began to feel more troubled than ever at leaving me; indeed, so sad did he feel that he talked about going back to the valley, and wanted Jimmy to escort him as far as the mountains. But the sailor would not listen to him, and, by way of diverting his thoughts, pressed him to drink of the arva. Knowing its narcotic nature, he refused; but Jimmy said he would have something mixed with it, which would convert it into an innocent beverage that would inspire them for the rest of their journey. So at last he was induced to drink of it, and its effects were just as the sailor had predicted; his spirits rose at once, and all his gloomy thoughts left him.

The old rover now began to reveal his true character, though he was hardly suspected at the time. ‘If I get you off to a ship,’ said he, ‘you will surely give a poor fellow something for saving you.’ In short, before they left the house, he made Toby promise that he would give him five Spanish dollars if he succeeded in getting any part of his wages advanced from the vessel, aboard of which they were going; Toby, moreover, engaging to reward him still further, as soon as my deliverance was accomplished.

A little while after this they started again, accompanied by many of the natives, and going up the valley, took a steep path near its head, which led to Nukuheva. Here the Happars paused and watched them as they ascended the mountains. Jimmy said he would have something mixed with it, which would mask and casting threatening glances at the poor Typee, whose heart as well as heels seemed much the lighter when he came to look down upon them.

On gaining the heights once more, their way led for a time along several ridges covered with enormous ferns. At last they entered upon a wooded tract, and here they overtook a party of Nukuheva natives, well armed, and carrying bundles of long poles. Jimmy seemed to know them all very well, and stopped for a while, and had a talk about the ‘Wee-Wees’, as the people of Nukuheva call the Monsieurs.

The party with the poles were King Mowanna’s men, and by his orders they had been gathering them in the ravines for his allies the French.

Leaving these fellows to trudge on with their loads, Toby and his companions now pushed forward again, as the sun was already low in the west. They came upon the valleys of Nukuheva on one side of the bay, where the highlands slope off into the sea. The men-of-war were still lying in the harbour, and as Toby looked down amongst the banditti, shaking their spears and casting threatening glances at the poor Typee, whose heart, as well as his feet, seemed much the lighter.

During the whole of that evening, the young taipi was by Jimmy as his shadow, and although he was as brawny as any of his tribe, he was now as gentle as a lamb, never opening his mouth except to eat. But the Typee was not to be cajoled in that way. How many yards he would have to remove from Jimmy before the taboo would be powerless, it would be hard to tell, but probably he himself knew to a fraction.

On the promise of a red cotton handkerchief, and something else which he kept secret, this poor fellow had undertaken a rather ticklish journey, though, as far as Toby could ascertain, it was something that had never happened before.

The island-punch—arva—was brought in at the conclusion of the repast, and passed round in a shallow calabash.

Now my comrade, while seated in the Happar house, began to feel more troubled than ever at leaving me; indeed, so sad did he feel that he talked about going back to the valley, and wanted Jimmy to escort him as far as the mountains. But the sailor would not listen to him, and, by way of diverting his thoughts, pressed him to drink of the arva. Knowing its narcotic nature, he refused; but Jimmy said he would have something mixed with it, which would convert it into an innocent beverage that would inspire them for the rest of their journey. So at last he was induced to drink of it, and its effects were just as the sailor had predicted; his spirits rose at once, and all his gloomy thoughts left him.

The old rover now began to reveal his true character, though he was hardly suspected at the time. ‘If I get you off to a ship,’ said he, ‘you will surely give a poor fellow something for saving you.’ In short, before they left the house, he made Toby promise that he would give him five Spanish dollars if he succeeded in getting any part of his wages advanced from the vessel, aboard of which they were going; Toby, moreover, engaging to reward him still further, as soon as my deliverance was accomplished.

A little while after this they started again, accompanied by many of the natives, and going up the valley, took a steep path near its head, which led to Nukuheva. Here the Happars paused and watched them as they ascended the mountains. Jimmy said he would have something mixed with it, which would mask and casting threatening glances at the poor Typee, whose heart as well as heels seemed much the lighter when he came to look down upon them.

On gaining the heights once more, their way led for a time along several ridges covered with enormous ferns. At last they entered upon a wooded tract, and here they overtook a party of Nukuheva natives, well armed, and carrying bundles of long poles. Jimmy seemed to know them all very well, and stopped for a while, and had a talk about the ‘Wee-Wees’, as the people of Nukuheva call the Monsieurs.

The party with the poles were King Mowanna’s men, and by his orders they had been gathering them in the ravines for his allies the French.

Leaving these fellows to trudge on with their loads, Toby and his companions now pushed forward again, as the sun was already low in the west. They came upon the valleys of Nukuheva on one side of the bay, where the highlands slope off into the sea. The men-of-war were still lying in the harbour, and as Toby looked down amongst the banditti, shaking their spears and casting threatening glances at the poor Typee, whose heart, as well as his feet, seemed much the lighter when he came to look down upon them.

On gaining the heights once more, their way led for a time along several ridges covered with enormous ferns. At last they entered upon a wooded tract, and here they overtook a party of Nukuheva natives, well armed, and carrying bundles of long poles. Jimmy seemed to know them all very well, and stopped for a while, and had a talk about the ‘Wee-Wees’, as the people of Nukuheva call the Monsieurs.

The party with the poles were King Mowanna’s men, and by his orders they had been gathering them in the ravines for his allies the French.

Leaving these fellows to trudge on with their loads, Toby and his companions now pushed forward again, as the sun was already low in the west. They came upon the valleys of Nukuheva on one side of the bay, where the highlands slope off into the sea. The men-of-war were still lying in the harbour, and as Toby looked down amongst the banditti, shaking their spears and casting threatening glances at the poor Typee, whose heart, as well as his feet, seemed much the lighter when he came to look down upon them.

On gaining the heights once more, their way led for a time along several ridges covered with enormous ferns. At last they entered upon a wooded tract, and here they overtook a party of Nukuheva natives, well armed, and carrying bundles of long poles. Jimmy seemed to know them all very well, and stopped for a while, and had a talk about the ‘Wee-Wees’, as the people of Nukuheva call the Monsieurs.

The party with the poles were King Mowanna’s men, and by his orders they had been gathering them in the ravines for his allies the French.

Leaving these fellows to trudge on with their loads, Toby and his companions now pushed forward again, as the sun was already low in the west. They came upon the valleys of Nukuheva on one side of the bay, where the highlands slope off into the sea. The men-of-war were still lying in the harbour, and as Toby looked down amongst the banditti, shaking their spears and casting threatening glances at the poor Typee, whose heart, as well as his feet, seemed much the lighter when he came to look down upon them.

On gaining the heights once more, their way led for a time along several ridges covered with enormous ferns. At last they entered upon a wooded tract, and here they overtook a party of Nukuheva natives, well armed, and carrying bundles of long poles. Jimmy seemed to know them all very well, and stopped for a while, and had a talk about the ‘Wee-Wees’, as the people of Nukuheva call the Monsieurs.

The party with the poles were King Mowanna’s men, and by his orders they had been gathering them in the ravines for his allies the French.

Leaving these fellows to trudge on with their loads, Toby and his companions now pushed forward again, as the sun was already low in the west. They came upon the valleys of Nukuheva on one side of the bay, where the highlands slope off into the sea. The men-of-war were still lying in the harbour, and as Toby looked down amongst the banditti, shaking their spears and casting threatening glances at the poor Typee, whose heart, as well as his feet, seemed much the lighter when he came to look down upon them.

On gaining the heights once more, their way led for a time along several ridges covered with enormous ferns. At last they entered upon a wooded tract, and here they overtook a party of Nukuheva natives, well armed, and carrying bundles of long poles. Jimmy seemed to know them all very well, and stopped for a while, and had a talk about the ‘Wee-Wees’, as the people of Nukuheva call the Monsieurs.

The party with the poles were King Mowanna’s men, and by his orders they had been gathering them in the ravines for his allies the French.
Upon them, the strange events which had happened so recently, seemed all a dream.

They soon descended towards the beach, and found themselves in Jimmy’s house before it was well dark. Here he received another welcome from his Nukuheva wives, and after some refreshments in the shape of coconut milk and poe-poé, they entered a canoe (the Typee of course going along) and paddled off to a whaling ship which was anchored near the shore. This was the vessel in want of men. Our own had sailed some time before. The captain professed great pleasure at seeing Toby, but thought from his exhausted appearance that he must be unfit for duty. However, he agreed to ship him, as well as his comrade, as soon as he should arrive. Toby begged hard for an armed boat, in which to go round to Typee and rescue me, notwithstanding the promises of Jimmy. But this the captain would not hear of, and told him to have patience, for the sailor would be faithful to his word. When, too, he demanded the five silver dollars for Jimmy, the captain was unwilling to give them. But Toby insisted upon it, as he now began to think that Jimmy might be a mere mercenary, who would be sure to prove faithless if not well paid. Accordingly he not only gave him the money, but took care to assure him, over and over again, that as soon as he brought me aboard he would receive a still larger sum.

Before sun-rise the next day, Jimmy and the Typee started in two of the ship’s boats, which were manned by tabooed natives. Toby, of course, was all eagerness to go along, but the sailor told him that if he did, it would spoil all; so, hard as it was, he was obliged to remain.

Towards evening he was on the watch, and descried the boats turning the headland and entering the bay. He strained his eyes, and thought he saw me; satisfaction of seeing the French boat start with Jimmy in it. Tonight, then, I will with what the old sailor told him. The next morning, however, he had the appearance that he must be unfit for duty. However, he agreed to ship

Pronto bajaron a la playa, y se encontraron en casa de Jimmy antes que fuera noche cerrada. Allí Jimmy recibió otra bienvenida por parte de sus mujeres de Nukuheva, y tras algún refrigero en forma de leche de coco y poi-poi, se metieron en una ca-noa (con el taipi acompañándoles, por supuesto) y se acercaron remando a un barco que necesitaba hombres. El nuestro había zarpado ya hacía tiempo. El capitán manifestó gran placer al ver a Toby, pero, por su aspecto agotado, [292] pensó que debía estar incapacitado para el trabajo. Sin embargo, acordó aceptarle en el barco, así como a su compañero, tan pronto como llegara. Toby rogó e insistió que le dieran una lancha armada en que llegar a Taipi y rescatarme, a pesar de las promesas de Jimmy. Pero el capitán no quiso oír hablar de esto, y le dijo que tuviera paciencia, pues el marinero sería fiel a su palabra. Además, cuando pidió los cinco dóla-res de plata para Jimmy, el capitán no quiso dárselos. Pero Toby se empeñó en ello, pues entonces empezaba a pensar que quizá Jimmy sería un simple mercancero que sin duda resultaría infeliz si no se le pagaba bien. En consecuencia, el capitán no sólo le dio el dinero, sino que se ocupó de asegurarme, una y otra vez, que, en cuanto me llevara a mi a bordo, recibiría una suma aún mayor.

Al día siguiente, antes de salir el sol, Jimmy y el taipi marcharon en dos lanchas del barco tripuladas por indígenas tabú. Toby, desde luego, estaba empeñado en acompañarles, pero el marinero le dijo que si lo hacía así, lo estropearía todo; de modo que, sintiéndolo mucho, se vio obligado a quedarse.

Hacia el anochecer estaba de guardia y avistó las lanchas doblando el promontorio y entrando en la bahía. Esforzó los ojos, y creyó verme, pero yo no estaba allí. Bajando de la cofa casi enloquecido, agarró a Jimmy en cuanto éste puso pie en cubierta, y gritó con una voz que le asustó:

—¿Dónde está Tommo?

El viejo se desmayó, pero, recuperándose pronto, hizo todo lo que pudo por apaciguarle, asegurándole que había resultado imposible bajarle a la orilla aquella mañana e indicando muchas razones plausibles, y añadiendo que a primeras horas de la mañana siguiente él volvería a la bahía en una lancha francesa, y entonces, si no me encontraba en la playa —como esta vez esperaba con seguridad—, iría derecho al valle y me traería consigo pasara lo que pasara. Sin embargo, volvió a rehusar a Toby que le acompañara. Ahora, en la situación de Toby, su única posibilidad dependía de Jimmy, y por consiguiente trató de consolarse como pudo con lo que le dijo el viejo marinero. A la mañana siguiente, sin embargo, tuvo la satis-facción de ver la lancha francesa marchar con Jimmy. «Esta noche, entonces, le veré», pensó Toby; pero muchos largos días pasaron antes de volver a ver a Tommo. Apenas se había perdido de vista la lancha, cuando el capitán salió y mandó levantar anclas: se iba a hacer a la mar. [293]

Vanos fueron todos los delirios de Toby: no se les hizo caso, y cuando volvió en sí habían izado velas y el barco se alejaba rápidamente de la tierra.

—¡Ah —me dijo en nuestro encuentro—, qué noches insomnes tuve. Muchas veces me despertaba sobresaltado en mi hamaca soñando que estabas delante de mí y me reñías por dejarte en la isla.

Queda poco más que contar. Toby abandonó su barco en Nueva Zelanda y, tras otras aventuras, llegó a la patria menos de dos años después de dejar las Marquesas. Siempre me consideré muerto, y yo tenía todas las razones para suponer que él tampoco existía, pero nos estaba reservada una extraña reunión, que aligeró por completo el ánimo de Toby. [294]